

NEW TESTAMENT

JOHANNES RUDOLPH LAURITZEN

1917

Wipf and Stock Publishers

Bible Versions Reproduction Series: Volume #30

THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR **LORD JESUS CHRIST**

Translated out of the Original Greek by Dr. Martin Luther

Translated into English

By: Johannes Rudolph Lauritzen

1917 Original Publisher, JOHANNES RUDOLPH LAURITZEN

530 Pages

Copyright © 2000 by John S. Wipf, Jr. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a data base retrieval system, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Wipf and Stock Publishers is pleased to present to you its digital reproduction of this book. By purchasing this book and receiving ownership of this copy, you expressly agree that you and any one to whom you transfer this book to is not entitled to reproduce or to allow anyone else to reproduce all or any portion of its contents without our prior consent.

If the purchaser does not agree to the foregoing terms of this sale, promptly return this copy for a refund of the purchase price. By retaining possession of this copy, you acknowledge that you agree to be bound by the foregoing terms. If you have any questions concerning this matter, please contact Wipf and Stock Publishers at the following address:

Wipf and Stock Publishers
1396 E. Washington Blvd.
Pasadena, CA, 91104
1-626-7 97-4756

Printer: James Baden
Binder: Golden Rule Bindery

ISBN: 1-57910-379-0

Bible Versions Reproduction Series

The purpose of the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** is to make rare and out-of-print versions of the Bible readily and inexpensively available to scholars, Bible students, and Bible collectors. These reproductions are being offered especially to members of the International Society of Bible Collectors.

While still searching for hard-to-find original printings of Bible translations, many collectors have indicated what a delight it would be to have on their own shelves accurate reproductions of Bible versions currently available only in museums, libraries and private collections. Now such an opportunity is being offered by a collector who is himself a member of our Society.

It would be rare to imagine a more enthusiastic member of the ISBC than my long-time friend Jim Baden. Since joining the Society, he has amassed an extraordinary collection. Visiting his library could be a temptation to violate the tenth commandment were it not for his great generosity and eagerness to share what he has brought together.

It is essential, of course, that the reproduction process pose no threat to the integrity of the volumes being copied—no matter how fragile the precious originals may be. Such a method is now available, and Jim is demonstrating his confidence in the process by being the first to make some of his own prized volumes available.

Among the first publications in this Series is a reproduction of Isaac Leaser's 1904 *The Twenty-four Books of the Holy Scriptures*. Society members will especially enjoy knowing that the particular volume by Leaser was once the personal copy of Arnold Ehlert, the founder and first president of the ISBC. "A gift to A. D. Ehlert from Dr. H. A. Ironside, summer 1947" is handwritten on the flyleaf.

Jim Baden shares the reverence for Scripture that has moved the leaders of our Society to give so freely of their time and energy for the past thirty-five years. He has profound respect and gratitude for the heroes and heroines of Bible translation—from Wycliffe and Tyndale down to the present time—who worked so hard, even sometimes at the risk of life—to make the Bible so readily available to the world today. Like other members of the ISBC, Jim regards the Bible as more than just a great book to be collected. To use his own words, he speaks of the Scriptures as "God's method of communicating with his intelligent creatures . . . to be most carefully read and contemplated to discover its meaning and value for life in the present and future."

What is more helpful in discovering the meaning of Scripture than to have readily at hand a good collection of different versions? Some have even suggested they would rather have a variety of versions than commentaries! As the translators of the 1611 King James Version quote Saint Augustine in their memorable preface, “ ‘Variety of Translations is profitable for the finding out of the sense of the Scriptures.’ ” “Therefore blessed be they,” the preface continues, “and most honoured be their name, that break the ice, and giveth onset upon that which helpeth forward to the saving of souls. Now what can be more available thereto, than to deliver God’s book unto God’s people in a tongue which they understand?” And speaking of those who have labored to prepare translations other than the King James, the 1611 scholars urge “that we acknowledge them to have been raised up of God, for the building and furnishing of his Church, and that they deserve to be had of us and of posterity in everlasting remembrance.”

It is in this spirit and for this purpose that the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** has been inaugurated.

William E. Paul, Editor, *Bible Versions and Editions*; Don Heese, Journal Production Manager; Sid Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary; Mark Mage, Editorial Assistant; Jim Baden and this writer have each supplied several hard-to-find versions for this reproduction. *

It is hoped that purchasers of volumes from this series will loan for copying other versions and editions that will become part of this reproduction Series. Those so doing will be rewarded with a free copy of a version of their choice from the Series.

Those interested are urged to contact the Publisher or Sidney Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary of the International Society of Bible Collectors, at: Box 20695, Houston, TX. 77225.

Graham Maxwell
(Charter Member #12)

*additional versions supplied by:
Bill Chamberlain

Biographical Sketch of Johannes R. Lauritzen

Johannes Rudolph Lauritzen (18??-1923), born in Bohemia, Germany, was educated in Europe before immigrating to the USA in 1870. He received his ministerial degree in 1872 from St. Louis Practical Seminary (MO), then ordained to become pastor of St. John's Lutheran Church at New London, Wisconsin.

Lauritzen served as pastor with Trinity Lutheran in Port Huron, MI (1875), but was suspended from the Missouri Synod of Michigan in 1880, probably for his rather unorthodox ministry methods.

He moved to Knoxville, TN to become pastor of First Lutheran Church (1887). While there he lectured on temperance causes and started a rescue mission for indigents in downtown Knoxville. Because of the time spent at such ministries, he was forced to resign from First Lutheran in 1892. He then served St. Peter's Evangelical Lutheran in Knoxville, remaining there the rest of his ministerial life.

His benevolent spirit is seen in his directing of a jail ministry for thirty-five years. His work among prisoners may account for his producing a New Testament.

Lauritzen's translation was called *The New Testament of Our Lord Jesus Christ, Translated out of the Original Greek by Dr. Martin Luther . . .* (Knoxville, 1917). On the title page he acknowledged Martin Luther's Reformation beginning in 1517, 400 years earlier.

For the next three years a committee of Lutheran ministers of the American Lutheran Bible Society revised Lauritzen's work, producing *The Capitalized and Revised American Lutheran New Testament and Psalms* (Knoxville, 1918-1920). This edition contained, "All words referring to God begin with a capital letter." It was issued in segments also, with *The One-volume Edition of the Bible-workers Four Gospels According to Matthew, Mark, Luke and John* appearing in 1920.

At the close of his New Testament, Lauritzen recorded the testimony of a prisoner who had received a copy of his New Testament. From the gallows, minutes before he was to be hanged, the man claimed to have been led to salvation. A notice also explained, "During the first 24 months of existence to January, 1, 1917, the Lutheran Bible Society of Knoxville, Tennessee, has distributed, free of charge, more than 7,500 New Testaments in prisons, hospitals, war camps and the like." Another note states, "One thousand copies were sent to the English prisoners in Germany, and a very liberal number of books was sent to our American soldiers at the borders of Mexico."

It is surprising that so little is mentioned about him in the standard reference works on Bible versions. In a score of such books consulted, only Chamberlin's *Catalogue of English Bible Translations*, and Mage's *Collectors' Catalog of English Bible Versions*, give significant data. (Both are staff members of the ISBC).

— William E. Paul, Editor
Bible Editions & Versions

1517 ————— OCTOBER 31 ————— 1917

In Memoriam
Of Dr. Martin Luther's Reformation

THE NEW TESTAMENT
OF OUR
Lord Jesus Christ

Translated out of the Original Greek by

DR. MARTIN LUTHER

**1521 at the Castle "The Wartburg" and Prepared
for the English Print**



**Former Translations Diligently Compared, Revised
and Published by**

JOHANNES RUDOLPH LAURITZEN
Pastor of St. Peter's Evangelical Lutheran Church
KNOXVILLE, TENN., U. S. of N. A.

1917

This Volume of the
Holy Writ
hereby is most
cheerfully dedica-
ted to all the

**Synods and Conferences of the
Evangelical Lutheran Church**
in this blessed country of North America,
preaching the Gospel of Jesus Christ



in more than fifteen
languages and have
the **Holy Sacra-
ments** unadultera-
ted, being one in
the faith towards
salvation in Jesus
Christ alone. For
the four-hund-
reth Anniversary
of the Reforma-
tion of Dr. Martin
Luther and dedi-
cated also to the
**BIBLE STUDENTS
OF ALL OTHER CHUR-
CHES AND NATIONS
the Whole World over.**

By the Compiler and
Publisher

**Johannes Rudolph
Lauritzen**

1917.

THE 27 BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

No.	Chapters
1	MATTHEW 28
2	Mark 16
3	Luke 24
4	John 21
5	The Acts 28
6	To the Romans. 16
7	I Corinthians 16
8	II Corinthians 13
9	Galatians 6
10	Ephesians 6
11	Philippians 4
12	Colossians 4
13	I Thessalonians ... 5
14	II Thessalonians .. 3
15	I Timothy 6
16	II Timothy 4
17	Titus 3
18	Philemon 1
19	To the Hebrews . 13
20	Epistle of James. . 5
21	I Peter 5
22	II Peter 3
23	I John 5
24	II John 1
25	III John 1
26	Jude 1
27	Revelation 22

Each Book from Matthew to II Corinthians is to be had Separately, Neatly Bound by itself, 5 cents each and Postage; better bindings at higher prices.



DR. MARTIN LUTHER
Reformer of the New Testament Church.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT MATTHEW

CHAPTER 1.

The genealogy of Christ. Conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary. Names of Christ.

The book of the *genealogy of Jesus Christ †the son of David, ††the son of Abraham.

Luke 2:23. †Ps. 132:11. ††Gen. 12:3; 22:18; Gal. 3:16.

2. Abraham *begat Isaac; and Isaac †begat Jacob; and ††Jacob begat Judah and his brethren;

Gen. 21:2, 3. †Gen. 25:26. ††Gen. 29:35; Acts 7:8.

3 And *Judah begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and †Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat ††Aram;

*Gen. 38:29, 30; †1 Chron. 2:5, 8; ††Ruth 4:18, 19.

4. And Aram begat *Aminadab and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon;

*1 Chron. 2:10.

5. And Salmon begat *Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat †Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat ††Jesse;

Joshua 2:1; †Ruth 4:21, ††Ruth 4:17, 22.

6. And *Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat †Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah.

1 Chron. 2:15; †2 Sam. 12:24.

7. And *Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat †Abia; and Abia begat ††Asa;

1 Kings 11:43; †1 Chron. 3:10.

8. And Asa begat *Josaphat; and Josaphat begat

†Joram; and Joram begat ††Ozias;

1 Kings 16:24; †1 Kings 22:31; ††1 Chron. 3:11, 12.

9. And Ozias begat *Joatham; and Joatham begat †Achaz; and Achaz begat ††Ezekias;

2 Kings 15:7; †2 Kings 16:1; ††2 Kings 16:30.

10. And Ezekias begat *Manasses; and Manasses begat †Amon; and Amon begat ††Josias;

2 Kings 20:21; †2 Kings 21:18; ††1 Chron. 3:11, 12.

11. And Josias begat *Jechonias and his brethren, about the †time they were carried away into captivity at Babylon.

1 Chron. 3:15, 16; †2 Kings 24:14, 16.

12. And after they were brought to Babylon, *Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat †Zorobabel;

1 Chron. 3:17, 19; †Ezra 3:2, 5:2.

13. And Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor

14. And Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud;

15. And Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob.

16. And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called *Christ.

*Chap. 27, 17, 22.

17. So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying

away into captivity at Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto Christ fourteen generations.

¶ II.

18. Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother *Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.

*Lk. 1, 27, †34, 35.

19. But Joseph her husband, being a pious man, and not willing to make her a *public example, was minded to put her away privily.

Num. 5, 15. Deut. 24, 1.

20. But while he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is *conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. Lk. 1, 35.

21. And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call *his name Jesus; for he shall save his people from †their sins.

*Lk. 1, 21. Acts 4, 12. 5, 31, 13, 23, 38.

22. Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying:

23. *Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son. And they shall call his name Immanuel; which is, being interpreted, God with us.

*Is. 7:14 Mic. 5, 3.

24. And Joseph arose

from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto him his wife;

25. And knew her not till she had brought *forth her first son, And he called his name JESUS. *Lk. 2, 7, 21.

CHAPTER 2.

The wise men from the East Christ's flight into Egypt.

(Gospel on Epiphany Day 1-12.)

Now when *Jesus was born in †Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, Wise men from the east came to Jerusalem, saying:

*Lk. 2, 6:7. †Gen. 35:19.

2. *Where is he that is born King of the Jews †for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

*Lk. 2, 11. [Is. 60, 3. Num. 24, 17.

3. When Herod the king heard these things, he was troubled. and all Jerusalem with him.

4. And gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he *inquired of them where the Christ should be born.

Matt. 2, 7.

5. And they said unto him, in Bethlehem of Judea; for thus it is written *through the prophet:

*Mic. 5, 1, 2. John 7:42

6. And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah, Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah; For out of thee shall come forth a governor, who shall rule my people Israel.

7. Then Herod privily called the Wise-men and inquired

of them diligently what time the star appeared.

8. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again that I also may come and worship him.

¶ II.

9. And they, having heard the king, departed; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.

10. And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

11. And they came into the house and ^{*saw} the young child with Mary his mother, and they fell down, and worshipped him; and opening their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; ^{*gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.}

^{*Lk. 2, 16. †Is. 60:6, Ps. 72, 10:15}

12. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod they departed into their own country another way.

¶ III.

(Gospel 8. after New Year 13-23)

13. And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word; for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

14. And he arose, and took the young child and his

mother by night, and departed into Egypt.

15. And was there until the death of Herod; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the ^{*prophet}, saying: Out of Egypt have I called my son.

^{*Hos. 11, 1.}

¶ IV.

16. Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men.

17. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah, the prophet, saying:

^{*Jer. 31:15.}

18. In Rama was a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, ^{*Rachel} weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

^{Gen. 35, 19.}

¶ V.

19. But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20. Saying: Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead that sought the young child's life.

21. And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22. But when he heard

that Archelaus reigned in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he *turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

*Chap. 8, 18. Lk. 2:30.

23. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth; that it might be fulfilled which was* spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

*Deut. 33: 16. Is. 11. 1. Is. 52:2. Zach. 6, 12.

CHAPTER 3.

John preacheth. reprehendeth the Pharisees, baptizeth Christ with water.

In those days came *John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

*Mk. 1, 4, 15. Lk. 3, 2:3.

2. Saying, *Repent, ye! for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

*Chap. 4:17. 10:7.

3. For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, *saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, †Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight

*Is. 40:3. †Lk. 1:76. 3:4.

4. And the same John had his *raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

*2 King 1:8. Mk. 1:16.

5. Then went *out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan.

Mk. 1:5. Lk. 3:7.

6. And they were *baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

Acts 19:4.

¶ II.

7. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said unto them, *O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

*Lk. 3:7. Matt. 12:24. 1

8. Bring forth therefore *fruits meet for repentance.

*Lk. 3:9

9. And think not to say *within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father; for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

*Acts 13:26. Rom. 4:1. 11:16.

10. And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees; therefore *every tree which bringeth not forth good fruits is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

*Chap. 7:19. Lk. 3:9. John 15:2, 16.

11 I indeed *baptize you with water, unto repentance, but he that commeth after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear; he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire.

*Mk. 1:8. John 1:26. Acts 1:5

12. Whose *fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

*Mal. 3:3. †Mal. 4:1. 13:30.

¶ III.

Gospel on Christ's baptism. 13-17.

13. Then cometh *Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

*Mk. 1:9. Lk. 3:21.

14. But John forbade him,

saying, I have need to be, baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now, for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

¶ IV

16. And *Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

*Mk 1:9. †Lk. 3:22. John 1:32, 33.

17 And lo a voice from heaven, saying, *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Chap. 17:5. Mk. 1:11. Chap. 9:7.

CHAPTER 4.

Christ is tempted, calleth Peter, Andrew, James and John, healeth the diseased.
(Gospel Sunday Invocavit. 1:11.)

Then was *Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.

*Mk. 1:12. †Lk. 4:1. Acts 8:39.

2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, *he was afterward hungry.

*Ex. 34:28.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the *Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

*1. Thess. 3:5. Matt. 3:17.

4 But he answered and said, It is written, *Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

*Deut. 8:3.

5 Then the devil taketh him up *into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,

*Is. 42:2, 3. Rev. 11:2. Neh. 11:1.

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, *He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

*Ps. 91:11, 12.

7 Jesus said unto him: again it is written, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

*Deut. 6:16. Lk. 4:12.

8 Again, the devil taketh him up unto an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;

*Lk. 4:6, 7.

9 And saith unto him, *All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan; for it is written: *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

*Deut. 6:13. Lk. 4:8.

11 Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, *angels came and ministered unto him.

*Heb. 1:14.

¶ II.

12 Now when Jesus had heard that John was delivered into prison, he departed into *Galilee;

*Lk. 4:14, 31. Mk. 1:14.

13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in *Capernaum, which is the sea

coast, in the borders of Zabulun and Nephthali;

*Mk. 1:21. Lk. 4:31.

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by *Isaiah the prophet, saying:

15 The *land of Zabulun, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles;

*Is. 9:1, 2.

16 The people which sat in *darkness saw a great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up.

*Lk. 1:79. Chap. 2:32. Is. 42:7.

¶ III.

17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say: *Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

*Mk. 1:14. 15. Lk. 4:15.

¶ IV.

((Gospel for St. Andrew's Day, 18-22)

18 And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw *two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers.

*Mk. 1:16, 19. Lk. 5:2.

19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I *will make you fishers of men.

*Mk. 1:17. Lk. 5:10, 11.

20 And they *straightway left their nets, and followed him.

*Chap. 19:27. Lk. 18:28.

21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, *James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.

*Mk. 1:19. Lk. 5:10.

22 And they immediately

left the ship and their father, and followed him.

¶ V.

23 And *Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

*Lk. 4:15. 44. Mk. 1:21. 34.

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria; and they *brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.

*Mk. 6:55.

25 And there followed him great *multitudes of people from Galilee and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

*Lk. 6:17. Mk. 3:7.

CHAPTER 5.

Christ beginneth his sermon in the mount, declaring who are blessed, exhorteth to suffer wrongs, to love our enemies.

(Gospel on all Saints Day, 1-12)

And seeing the multitudes, he *went up into a mountain; and when he was set down, his disciples came unto him:

*Mk. 3:13.

2 And *he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

*Lk. 6:20.

3 Blessed are the poor in *spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

*Is. 57:15. 61:2, 3. Lk. 6:21.

4 Blessed are they that

*mourn: for they shall be comforted.

*Ps. 126:5. Is. 61:2. Lk. 6:21.

5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth:*

*Ps. 25:13. 37:11. Is. 60:21.

6 Blessed are they which *hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

*Lk. 6:21. Is. 65:13.

7 Blessed are the *merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

*Prov. 21:21. James 2:13.

8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

*Ps. 51:12. 1. John 3:2, 3.

9 Blessed are the *peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

*Heb. 12:14. James 3:18.

10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness* sake; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

1. Pet. 3:14.

11 Blessed are ye, *when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

*Lk. 6:22. 1. Pet. 4:14.

12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: *for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

*James 5:10. Rom. 5, 3.

¶ II.

13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

*Mk. 9:50. Lk. 14:34.

¶ III.

14 Ye are the light of the

world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid.

15 Neither do men *light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

*Mk. 4:21. Lk. 8:16. 11:33.

16 Even so let your light *shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

1. Pet. 2:12. †John 15:8.

¶ IV.

17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets; *I came not to destroy, but to fulfill.

*Chap. 3:15. Rom. 3:31.

18 For verily I say unto you, Till *heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

*Lk. 16:17. Chap. 21:33.

19 Whosoever therefore shall break *one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven; but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

*James 2:10.

(Gospel Sixth Sunday after Trinity. 20-24.)

20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

*Rom. 9:31. Chap. 10:3.

¶ V.

21 Ye have heard that it

was said by them of old time,
*Thou shalt not kill; and
whosoever shall kill shall be
in danger of the judgment.

*Exod. 20:13. Lev. 24:17.

22 But I say unto you, That
whosoever is angry with his
brother shall be in danger of
the *judgment; and whoso-
ever shall say to his brother.
Raca, shall be in danger of
the council; but whosoever
shall say, Thou fool, shall be
in danger of hell fire.

1. John 3:15. †Exod. 18:21.

Jas. 2:20.

23 Therefore *if thou bring
thy gift to the altar, and
there rememberest that thy
brother hath ought against
thee;

*Mk. 11:25. 22:19.

24 Leave *there thy gift
before the altar, and go thy
way; first be reconciled to thy
brother, and then come and
offer thy gift.

*Lk. 12:58, 59. Is. 55:6.

¶ VI.

25 *Agree with thine ad-
versary quickly, while thou
art in the way with him; lest
at any time the adversary de-
liver thee to the judge, and
the judge deliver thee to the
officer, and thou be cast into
prison.

*Chap. 6:14. 18:35. Lk. 12:58.

26 Verily I say unto thee,
Thou, shalt by no means come
out thence *till thou hast paid
the last farthing.

*Chap. 18:34.

¶ VII.

27 Ye have heard that it
was said by them of old time,
*Thou shalt not commit adul-
tery.

*Exod. 20:24. Lev. 20:10.

28 But I say unto you, That

whosoever *looketh on a wo-
man to lust after her hath
committed adultery with her
already in his heart.

*Job. 31:1. †Sam. 11:2.

29 *And if thy right eye of-
fend thee †pluck it out, and
cast it from thee; for it is
profitable for thee that one of
thy members should perish,
and not that thy whole body
should be cast into hell.

Chap. 18:9. †Rom. 8:13. Col. 3:5.

30 And if thy right hand
offend thee, cut it off, and
cast it from thee; for it is
profitable for thee that one
of thy members should
perish and not that thy
whole body should be cast
into hell.

Chap. 19:7. Deut. 24:1. Mk. 10:4.

Lk. 16:18. †1 Cor. 7:10.

31 It hath been said, also:
*Whosoever shall put away
his wife, let him give her a
writing of divorcement:

32 But I say unto you, That
whosoever shall put away his
wife, *saving for the cause of
fornication, causeth her to
commit adultery; and whoso-
ever shall marry her that is
divorced, committeth adul-
tery.

Chap. 19:9. Lk. 16:18. Rom. 7:3.

¶ VIII.

33 Again, ye have heard
that *it hath been said to
them of old time, Thou shalt
not forswear thyself but
shalt perform unto the Lord
thine oaths.

Exod. 20:7.

34 But I say unto you,
*Swear not at all; neither by
heaven, for it is God's throne:

Chap. 23:22. Is. 66:2. Acts 7:49.

35 Nor by the earth; for
it is his footstool, neither by

Jerusalem; for it is *the city of the great King. Ps. 48:2.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

37 *But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of the evil one.

2. Cor. 1:17. James 5:12. Col. 4:6.

¶ IX.

38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, *An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:

Exod. 21:23, 24. Lev. 24:19-20.

39 But I say unto you, That ye resist *not evil, but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also.

Rom. 12:17, 19. 1 Pet. 3:9.

40 And if *any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.

Lk. 6:29. 1. Cor. 6:7.

41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile, go with him twain.

42 Give to *him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

Lk. 6:30, 34. Deut. 15:8, 10.

¶ X.

43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, *Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

Lev. 19:18. Ps. 41:9.

44 But I say unto you, *Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and perse-

cute you.

Rom. 12:20. †Lk. 23:34. Acts 7:60.

45 That ye may be the *children of your Father which is in heaven; for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

46 For if ye love them *that love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?

Acts 7:59. Job. 25:3.

47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so?

Lk. 6:32.

48 Be ye *therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Lev. 11:44. Chap. 19:2. Lk. 6:36.

CHAPTER 6.

Christ continueth his sermon in the mount. speaking of alms. prayer, forgiving our brethren. fasting. and of serving God and exhorteth to seek God's kingdom.

Take heed that ye do not your alms before men. to be seen of them; otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

Deut. 24:13. Dan. 4:27.

2 When therefore thou *doest thine alms, cause not a trumpet to be sounded before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. Rom. 12:8.

3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth;

4 That thine alms may be in secret; and thy Father

which seeth in secret himself shall *reward thee openly.

¶ II. Lk. 14:14.

5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

6 But thou, when thou prayest enter into thy *closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. 2. Kings 4:33.

7 But when ye pray, use *not vain repetitions, as the gentiles do; for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

Is. 1:15. Eccles. 7:15.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them; for your *Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. Verse 32.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: *Our Father who art in heaven; Hallowed be thy name;

Lk. 11:2. †Exod. 20:7.

10 Thy kingdom come; *Thy will be done on earth, as it is in heaven;

Lk. 22:42. Mat. 26:39.

11 Give us this day our daily bread;

12 And *forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors.

Ps. 32:5, 6. Mat. 18:21 etc.

(And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive those who trespass against us.)

13 And *lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

Chap. 26:41. 2. Pet. 2:9. Lk. 22:40, 46.

¶ IV.

14 For if ye *forgive men their trespasses †your heavenly Father will also forgive you.

Mk. 11:25, 26. Eph. 4:32.

15 But if ye forgive *not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Chap. 18:35. Jas. 2:13.

¶ V.

16 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance; for they disfigure their faces, that they may be seen of men to fast. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, *anoint thine head, and wash thy face;

Is. 58:5, 6.

18 That thou be not seen of men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

Ruth 3:3. Dan. 10:3.

¶ VI.

19 Lay *not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal.

1. Tim. 6:17. Heb. 13:5.

20 But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where

thieves do not break through nor steal;

Lk. 12:33. 1. Tim. 6:19. 1. Pet. 1:4.

21 For where your *treasure is there will your heart be also. Lk. 12:34.

¶ VII.

22 The light of the body is the eye, if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body *shall be full of light.

Lk. 11:34, 36.

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

¶ VIII.

(Gospel on Fifteenth Sunday after Trinity, 24-34.)

24 No man can serve *two masters; for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

1. Kings 18:21. 2. Cor. 6:15.

†Gal. 1:10.

25 Therefore I say unto you, take no undue thoughts for your *life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body more than raiment?

Ps. 37:5. Prov. 16:18. 1. Pet. 5:7.

26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; *yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

Lk. 12:24. Ps. 147:9.

27 Which of you by taking

thoughts can add one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thoughts for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin.

29 And yet I say unto you, That even *Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 1. Kings 4:21.

30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O *ye of little faith?

Chap. 8:25. 16:8.

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?

32 For after all *these things do the Gentiles seek; for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. Lk. 12:30.

33 But seek ye *first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

1. Kings 3:13. Ps. 37:4, 25.

34 Take therefore *no undue thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

Exod. 16:18.

CHAPTER 7.

Christ ending His sermon in the mount. Beware of false prophets.

Judge not, that ye be not judged.

Lk. 6:37. Rom. 2:1. 1. Cor. 4:5.

2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged *and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

Mk. 4:24. Lk. 6:38.

3 And why *beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

Lk. 6:41, 42.

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first *cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly how to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

Eccles. 18:21. Lk. 6:42.

¶ II.

6 Give not that *which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

Chap. 10:11. Acts 13:45, 46.

¶ III.

7 Ask, *and it shall be given you! seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:

Mk. 11:24. Lk. 11:9, 10, 18:1.

8 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that *seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Prov. 8:17. Jer. 29:22.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts

unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give *good things to them that ask him?

Lk. 11:13. 18:7. Jas. 1:17.

12 Therefore all things *whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye so unto them: for †this is the law and the prophets.

Lk. 8:31. †Rom. 13:8, 9. 1. Tim. 8.

¶ IV.

13 Enter ye in at the *strait gate for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many be there which go in thereat.

Lk. 13:24.

14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few be there that find it.

Acts 14:22.

¶ V.

(Gospel on Eighth Sunday after Trin. 15-23.)

15 Beware of false *prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but †inwardly they are ravening wolves.

Jer. 14:14. †Acts 20:29. Eph. 5:6.

16 Ye shall know them by their *fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

Lk. 6:44. Jas. 3:12. 1. Tim. 5:24, 25.

17 Even so *every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

Jer. 11:19. 12:33.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

Chap. 12:33. Jer. 11:19.

19 Every tree that bringeth *not forth good fruit is

hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Chap. 8:10. Lk. 8:9. John 15:2, 6.

20 Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

¶ VI.

21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Rom. 2:13. Jas. 1:22, 25.

22 *Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

Lk. 6:46. †Lk 13:26, 27.

23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you, *depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Chap. 25:41. Ps. 6:3. Lk. 13:25, 27.

¶ VII.

24 Therefore *whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock.

Lk. 6:47.

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not; for it was founded upon the rock.

Chap. 16:28.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain *descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat up-

on that house; and it fell; and great was the fall of it.

Heb. 13:11.

28 And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were *astonished at his doctrine.

*Chap. 13:54. Mk. 1:22. Lk. 4:32.

29 For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes. John 7:46.

CHAPTER 8.

Christ healeth many. Stilleth the tempest on the sea. Driveth out devils.

(Gospel third Sunday after Trinity, 1-13.)

And when he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

Chap. 5:1.

2 Behold, there came a *leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

Mk. 1:40. Lk. 5:12. etc.

3 And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will! be thou clean! And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

Lk. 4:18.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that *Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

*Chap. 9:30. Lk. 17:14. †Lev. 14:2.

¶ II.

5 And when Jesus was *entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him,

Lk. 7:2.

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof, but speak the *word only, and my servant shall be healed.

Ps. 107:20. Lk. 15:19. 21.

9 For I am a man also under authority, having soldiers under me; and if I say to one man, Go, he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, That many shall come from the *east and west, and shall sit down with †Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven, Is. 49:12. †Lk. 13:28, 29. Eph. 3:6.

12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into *outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Chap. 22:13, 25:30. Pet. 2:17.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, *Go thy way, as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self-same hour.

Chap. 9:29. 15:28. 25:30

¶ III.

14 And when Jesus was *come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother lying sick of a fever.

Mk. 1:29. 31. Lk. 4:38. 39.

15 And he *touched her hand, and the fever left her, and she arose, and ministered unto them. Chap. 9:25.

16 When the even was come, they *brought unto him many that were possessed with devils, and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick.

Mk. 1:32. Lk. 4:40. 41.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, *Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

Is. 53: 4, 5. 1. Pet. 2:24.

¶ IV.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 And a certain scribe came, *and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

Lk. 9:57. 58.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. 2. Cor 8:9.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, *suffer me first to go and bury my father.

Lk. 9:59. 60. 1 Kings 19:20.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead *bury their dead.

1. Tim. 5:6. Eph. 2:1.

¶ V.

(Gospel fourth Sunday after Trinity. 23-27.)

23 And when he was entered into a ship; his disciples followed him.

Mk. 4:36. Lk. 8:22.

24 And, behold, *there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves, †but he was asleep.

Mk. 4:38. †Jonas 1:4, 5. Lk. 8:23.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us, we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful *O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.

Chap. 6:30. Ps. 65:7. 89:10.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, *What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!

Prov. 30:4.

¶ VI.

28 And when he was come to the *other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. Mk. 5:1. Lk. 8:28.

29 And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, *thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? Lk. 4:41.

30 And there was a far off from them an herd of many swine feeding.

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, *Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine, and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran

violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. Lk. 8:32, 33.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their way into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus, and when they saw him, *they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

Mk. 5:17. Lk. 8:37. Acts 16:39.

CHAPTER 9.

Christ curing one sick of the palsy. Defendeth his disciples. Cureth the bloody issue. Raiseth from the death Jarius' daughter. Giveth to blind men sight, healeth a dumb man.

(Gospel nineteenth Sunday after Trinity, 1-8.)

And he entered into a ship, and passed over, *and came into his own city. Chap. 4:13.

¶ II.

2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed; *and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy: Son, be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee.

Mk. 2:1. 3. Lk. 5:18. Lk. 8:10.

3 And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus *knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

Ps. 139:2. Mk. 12:15. Lk. 5:22.

5 For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say Arise, and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

¶ III.

(Gospel St. Matthews Day 9-13.)

9 And *as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom, and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

Mk. 2:14. Lk. 5:27.

10 *And it came to pass, as he sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples.

Mk. 2:15, etc. Lk. 5:29, etc.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, *why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners?

Chap. 11:19. Lk. 5:30, 15:2.
Gal. 2:15. &c.

12 But when Jesus heard it, he said unto them, *They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

Lk. 5:31.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth; I will have *mercy, and not sacrifice; for I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

1. Sam. 5:22, &c. Hos. 6:6, 8.

¶ IV.

14 Then *came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

Mk 2:18, etc. Lk. 5:33, etc. 18:12

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be *taken from them, and then will they fast.

John 3:29. Acts 13:2. 14:23.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment; for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old wine skins; else the skins break, and the wine runneth out, and the skins perish; but they put new wine into new skins, and both are preserved.

¶ V.

(Gospel twenty-fourth Sunday after Trinity 18-26.)

18 While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a *certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead; but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

Mk. 5:22. Lk. 8:41.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

¶ VI.

20 And, behold, *a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched

the hem of his garment:

Mk. 5:25. Lk. 8:43.

21 For she said within herself, If I may but *touch his garment, I shall be whole.

Chap. 14:36.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said: Daughter, be of good cheer; *thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.

Lk. 7:50. 8:48. 17:19. 18:42.

23 And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw *the minstrels and the people making a noise,

Mk. 5:38. Lk. 8:51.

24 He said unto them, *Give place; for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

Acts 20:10.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And the *fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

Lk. 7:17

¶ VII.

27 And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou Son of David, *have mercy on us.

Chap. 15:22. 20:30.31. Mk. 10:47,48.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him, and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying; According to your faith be it done unto you.

Chap. 8:13. 12:16. 17:9. Lk. 6:14.

30 And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly *charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

Mk. 1:43 7:30 Lk. 5:14.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

¶ VIII.

32 As they went out, behold, they brought *to him a man dumb, possessed with a devil.

Chap. 12:22. Lk. 11:14.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake; and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, *He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

Chap. 12:24. Lk. 11:15.

35 And Jesus *went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.

Lk. 4:23. Mr. 6:6.

¶ IX.

36 But when he saw *the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

Mk. 6:34.

37 Then saith *he unto his disciples: The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few;

Lk. 10:2. John 4:35.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

Mk. 3:13. 14. 2. Thess. 3:1.

CHAPTER 10.

Christ sendeth out his twelve apostles to preach; gives them power to do miracles. How to overcome persecution.

And he *called unto him his twelve disciples, and gave them power over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

Mk. 6:7. Lk. 9:1.

¶ II.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, *Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother;

Mk. 3:16, etc. Acts 1:13. Jno. 1:42

3 Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus;

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

¶ III.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, *Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans.

Chap. 4:15. John 4:9. 20.

6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the *house of Israel. ch. 15:24. Acts 13:16. Is. 53:6.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The *kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Chap. 3:2. Acts 4:17. Lk. 10:9.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils, *freely ye have received, freely give.

Acts 8:18. 20.

9 Provide neither *gold,

nor silver, nor brass in your purses;

Mk. 6:8. Lk. 9:3. 1. Sam. 9:7.

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet a stave; *for the workman is worthy of his meat.

11 And *into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence.

Mk. 6:10. Lk. 10:8, 10.

12 And when ye enter into a house, salute it.

Lk. 10:5, 6.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it, but if it be not worthy, *let your peace return to you. Ps. 35:13. Lk. 10:5

14 And *whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, †shake off the dust of your feet.

Mk. 6:11. Lk. 9:5. †Acts 13:51.

15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.

¶ IV.

16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves, be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

Lk. 10:3. †Rom. 16:19. Eph. 5:15.

17 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to their councils, and †they will scourge you in their synagogues; Chap. 24:9. †Lk. 21:12.

18 And *ye shall be

brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

Mk. 13:9. Acts 12:1. 24:10.

19 But when they *deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for fit shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

Mk. 13:4. Lk. 21:14. †Acts 6:10.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you.

21 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child, and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And *ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake, but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

Lk. 21:17. Mk 13:13.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another; for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

24 The *disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

John 13:16. 15:20.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his Lord. If *they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

Chap. 12:24. Mk. 3:22. Lk. 11:15.

26 Fear them not therefore; for there is nothing *covered, that shall not be re-

vealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

*Mk. 4:22. Lk. 8:17.

27 What *I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light, and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the house tops.

*Lk. 12:3.

28 *And be not afraid of them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul, but rather be afraid of him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

*Is. 8:12, 13. 1 Pet. 2, 14.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 But the very *hairs of your head are all numbered.

*1. Sam. 14:45. 2. Sam. 14:11.

Lk. 21:18.

31 Fear not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, *him will I confess before my Father which is in heaven.

Mk. 8:38. Rev. 3:5.

33 But *whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

Lk. 9:26. 2. Tim. 2:12.

¶ V.

34 Think not *that I came to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword. Lk. 12:49. 51. 52. 53.

35 For *I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

Mic. 7:6. Lk. 14:28.

36 And a man's *foes shall be they of his own household.

Pa. 41:9. 55:13. Mic. 7:6.

37 He that loveth *father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

Deut. 33:9. Lk. 14:26.

38 And he that *taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

Chap. 16:24. Lk. 9:23. 14:27.

39 He that *findeth his life shall lose it, and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

Chap. 16:25. Lk. 17:33. John 12:25.

¶ VI.

40 He that *receiveth you receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

Chap. 18:5. Lk. 10:16. John 12:44.

41 He that *receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward. 1. Kings 17:10. Chap. 18:4.

42 And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of *these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

Chap. 25:40. Mk. 9:41. John 13:20.

CHAPTER 11.

John sendeth his disciples to Christ. Christ upbraideth Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum. He invites all to come to Him.

(Gospel third Sunday in Advent 2-10.)

And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of

commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

¶ II.

2 Now when *John heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

Lk. 7:18. 19. 14:3.

3 And said unto him, *Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

Deut. 18:15. Dan. 9:24.

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go your way and tell John those things which ye do hear and see:

5 The *blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

Chap. 15:30. Is. 35:3. Lk. 7:22.

†Is. 61:1.

6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be *offended in me.

Is. 13:57. Is. 8:14. 1. Pet. 2:3.

¶ III.

7 And as they *departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

Lk. 7:24. Eph. 4:14.

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft raiment are in kings' houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? *A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.

Lk. 1:76. Chap. 7:26.

10 This is he, of whom *it is written: Behold, I send my

messenger before thy face,
which shall prepare thy way
before thee.

Mal. 3:1. Mk. 1:2

11 Verily I say unto you,
*Among them that are born
of women there hath not
risen a greater than John
the Baptist, notwithstanding,
he that is least in the king-
dom of heaven is greater
than he. Lk. 7:28.

12 And *from the days of
John the Baptist until now
the kingdom of heaven suf-
fereth violence, and the vio-
lent take it by force.

Lk. 16:16.

13 For all the prophets and
the law prophesied until
John.

14 And if ye will receive it,
*this is Elias, who was to
come. Matt. 17:12. Mal. 4:5.

15 He that hath ears to
hear, let him hear.
Mk. 7:16. Lk. 8:8. Rev. 2:7, 11:17.

¶ IV.

16 But whereunto shall I
liken this generation? *It is
like unto children sitting in
the markets, and calling unto
their fellows, Lk. 7:31.

17 And saying, We have
piped unto you, and ye have
not danced; we have mourn-
ed unto you, and ye have not
lamented.

18 For John came *neither
eating nor drinking, and they
say, He hath a devil.

Chap. 3:4. Lk. 7:33.

19 The Son of man came
*eating and drinking, and
they say, Behold a gluttonous
man, and winebibber, a friend
of publicans and sinners. But

wisdom is justified of her
children. Chap. 9:10. Lk. 7:35

¶ V.

20 *Then began he to up-
braid the cities wherein most
of his mighty works were
done, because they repented
not. Lk. 7:35. Lk. 10:13, &c.

21 Woe *unto thee, Chora-
zin! woe unto thee, Bethsa-
ida! for if the mighty works,
which were done in you, had
been done in Tyre and Sidon,
they would have repented
long tago in sackcloth and
ashes.

*Lk. 10:13. †Jonah 3:7, 8.

22 But I say unto you, It
shall be more tolerable for
Tyre and Sidon at the day of
judgment, than for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum,
*which art exalted unto heav-
en, shalt be brought down to
hell; for if the mighty works,
which have been done in thee,
had been done in Sodom, it
would have remained until
this day. Is. 14:13. Lam. 2:1.

24 But I say unto you,
*That it shall be more toler-
able for the land of Sodom
in the day of judgment than
for thee. Chap. 10:15.

¶ VI.

(Gospel Matthew's Day, 23-30.)

25 At that time Jesus an-
swered and said, *I thank
thee, O Father, Lord of heav-
en and earth, because thou
hast hid these things from
†the wise and prudent, and
has revealed them unto babes.

Lk. 10:21. 1. Cor. 1:27.

*26 Even so, Father, for so
it was well pleasing in thy
sight.

27 *All things are delivered unto me of my Father, and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

Chap.8:17. John 3:35.17:2. Heb.2:8.

¶ VII.

28 Come *unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

Is. 55: 1. &c. Jer. 31:25.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart, and ye shall find rest unto your souls. Jer. 6:16. Jer. 13:15.

30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

John 5:3.

CHAPTER 12.

Christ reproveth the Pharisees. Healeth the blind and dumb. Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost. He rebuketh the unfaithful.

At that time *Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were hungry, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. Mk. 2:23. Lk. 6:1.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do *upon the sabbath day.

Exod. 20:10.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read *what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him:

1. Sam. 21:6. Lk. 6:3.

4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the

shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, *but only for the priests?

Exod. 25:30. 29:33. Mk. 2:26.

5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are guiltless?

6 But I say unto you, That in this place is one greater than the temple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, *I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.

Mic. 9:13. 1 Sam. 15:22.

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day.

¶ II.

9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue.

10 And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked him, saying, *Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day? that they might accuse him.

Lk. 13:14. 14:3. John 9:16.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

¶ III.

14 Then *the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him.

Ps. 2:2. Mk. 3:6. Lk. 6:11

15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence; and great many multitudes followed him, and he healed them all;

16 And *charged them that they should not make him known.

Chap. 9:30.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah, the prophet, saying:

Is. 42:1.

18 Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; *my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased; I will put †my Spirit upon him, and he shall declare judgment to the Gentiles.

Chap. 3:17. †Is. 11:2.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and *smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory.

Is. 61:1. Hez. 34:16.

21 And in his name shall the Gentile hope.

¶ IV.

22 Then was brought unto him one *possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb; and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

Chap. 9:32. Mk. 3:11. Lk. 11:14.

Chap. 9:38.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the Son of David?

24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, *This man doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

Chap. 9:34. Mk. 3:22. Lk. 11:15.

25 And Jesus *knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand;

26 And if Satan casteth out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

Chap. 9:4. Rev. 2:23. Lk. 11:17.

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

28 But if *I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

1 John 3:8. Lk. 1:33. 11:20. 17:20.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong man's house, and *spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

Is. 49:24. Lk. 11:21-23.

30 *He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

Lk. 11:23.

¶ V.

31 Wherefore I say unto you, All *manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men, but the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit shall †not be forgiven unto men.

Mk. 3:28. †Heb. 6:4. & 10:24.

32 And *whosoever speak-

eth a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him, but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come.

Lk. 12:10. John 7, 12, 52.

33 Either make *the tree good and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt, for the tree is known by his fruit.

Chap. 7:17. Lk. 6:43, 44.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the *abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

Lk. 6:45. Mt. 3:7, 23.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things, and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth evil things.

36 And I say unto you, That every *idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. Eph. 4:29.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and *by thy words thou shalt be condemned. Job. 15:6.

¶ VI.

38 Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered, saying, Master, *we would see a sign from thee. ch. 16:1. Mk. 8:11. Lk. 11:16, 29.

39 But he answered and said unto them, An *evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

Chap. 16:4. Lk. 11:29, 30. Is. 57:3.

40 For as *Jonas was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale, so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

Jonas 1:17. 2:1, 2.

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it; because they *repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold a greater than Jonas is here.

Jonas 8:5. Lk. 11:32. Rom. 2:27.

42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it; for she *came from the uttermost ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

1. Kings 10:1. &c. Lk. 11:31.

¶ VIII.

43 When the *unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth it not. Lk. 11:24. 1. Pet. 5:8.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there; and the last state of that man is *worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation. 2. Pet. 2:10, 20-22.

¶ IX.

46 While he yet talked to

the people, behold, *his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

Mk. 3:31. Lk. 8:19. Gal. 1:19.

47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

50 For *whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister and mother.

Chap. 7:21. John 6:40. 15:14.

CHAPTER 13.

The parables of the sower. The Tares, The Mustard Seed, the Leaven, the Pearl.

The same *day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. Mark 4:1.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that *he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. Lk. 8:4. 5:3.

¶ II.

3 And he *spake many things unto them in parables, saying: "Behold, a sower went forth to sow;

Lk. 8:4. 5.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them.

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not

much earth, and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth;

6 And when the sun was risen, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them.

8 But others fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Gen. 26, 12.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Chap. 11:15. Mk. 4:9.

10 And the *disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? Lk. 8:9.

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

Chap. 11:25. 16:17. Mk. 4:11.

12 For whosoever *hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.

Chap. 25:29. Mk. 4:25. Lk. 8:18, 19.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables, because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which *saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive; Is. 6:9, 10. Lk. 8:10. Rom. 11:8.

15 For this people's heart is waxed gross and their ears are dull of hearing and their eyes they have closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Heb. 5:11.

16 But *blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear.

Luke 10:23. John 20:29.

17 For verily I say unto you, That *many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

Lk. 10:24. Heb. 11:13. 1 Pet. 1:10.

18 Hear *ye therefore the parable of the sower.

Mk. 4:14. Lk. 8:11.

¶ IV.

19 When any one heareth the word *of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the evil one, and snatcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. Chap. 4:23.

20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, *and anon with joy receiveth it;

Is. 58:2. John 5:35.

21 Yet hath he not *root in himself, but dureth for a while, for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

Eph. 3:17. 2 Tim. 1:15.

22 He also that received

seed *among the thorns is he that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

Chap. 19:23. Lk. 18:24. Jer. 4:3.

23 But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

¶ V.

(Gospel fifth Sunday after Trinity, 24-30.)

24 Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the *householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

Chap. 10:25.

28 And he said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest; and in the time of harvest I will say to

the reapers, Gather first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them; but gather *the wheat into my barn.

¶ V. Chap. 3:12.

31 Another parable put he forth unto them, saying The *kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field;

Mk. 4:31. Lk. 13:14. Is. 2:2, 3.

32 Which indeed is the smallest of all seeds; but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

¶ VI.

33 Another parable spake he unto them; *The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

Lk. 13:20, 21.

34 All these things *spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them;

Mk. 4:33, 34.

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, *I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

Ps. 78:2. Rom. 16:25, 26.

¶ VII.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house, and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 And he answered and said unto them, He that sow-

eth the good seed is the Son of man;

38 The field is the world; *the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

Chap. 24:14. 1. Cor. 3:9. Rom. 10:18.

39 The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

Joel 3:13. Rev. 14:15.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall *gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them that do iniquity;

Chap. 25:32. 2. Pet. 2:1, 2.

42 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire; there shall be *wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Chap. 8:12. 22:13.

43 Then shall *the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Dan. 12:13. 1. Cor. 15:42, 43, 53.

¶ VIII.

44 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field, the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and *selles all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

Chap. 13:44. Phil. 3:7. Rev. 3:18.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchantman, seeking goodly pearls.

46 Who, when he had found one *pearl of great price,

went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Prov. 8:10, 11.

¶ IX.

47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like *unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind,

48 Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world, the angels shall come forth, and *sever the wicked from among the just,

Chap. 25:32.

50 And shall *cast them into the furnace of fire, there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Verse 42. Chap. 25:41.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

Cant. 7:13.

¶ X.

53 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

Lk. 4:18.

54 *And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

Chap. 2:23. Lk. 4:16, 23.

55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph and Simon and Judas?

Lk. 4:22. John 6:42.

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, *A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

John 4:44. Lk. 4:24.

58 And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.

CHAPTER 14.

John the Baptist beheaded. Jesus feedeth five thousand men. Walketh on the sea. Healeth the sick.

At that time *Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus.

Mk. 6:14. Lk. 9:7.

2 And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works are wrought by him.

¶ II.

3 *For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife.

Mk. 9:17. Lk. 3:19, 20.

4 For John said unto him, *It is not lawful for thee to have her.

Lev. 18:16, 20, 21.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, *because they counted him as a prophet.

Chap. 21:26. Lk. 20:6.

6 But when Herod's birth-

day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced *before them and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an *oath to give her whatsoever she should ask.

Gen. 24:8, 9.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here, in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

9 And the king was sorry, nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel, and she brought it to her mother.

12 And *his disciples came, and took up the body and buried it and went and told Jesus.

Mk. 6:29.

¶ III.

13 *When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart, and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

Mk. 6:23, 32. Lk. 9:10.

14 And Jesus *went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

John 6:3. Mk. 6:34.

¶ IV.

15 And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past, send the multitude away, that they may go into the vil-

lages, and buy *themselves food.

John 6:5. Lk. 9:12.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, *give ye them to eat.

Lk. 9:13.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitudes to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven *he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes.

Chap. 15:36.

20 And they *did all eat, and were filled, and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.

Mk. 6:42, 43.

21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

¶ V.

22 And *straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

Mk. 6:45. John 6:17.

23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray; *and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

John 6:16.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves; for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

Lk. 24:37. John 9:8.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee upon the waters.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the waters, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the wind strong, he was afraid and beginning to sink, he cried, saying Lord save me.

31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

Chap. 6:30. 8:26. James 1:6.

32 And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

Ps. 2:7. John 1:49.

¶ VI.

34 And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

Mk. 6:53.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about,

and brought unto him all that were diseased;

36 And they besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment, and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

Chap. 9:21. Lk. 6:19. Acts 19:12.

CHAPTER 15.

Christ reproveth scribes and Pharisees. Healeth the daughter of the woman of Canaan and others, and feedeth four thousand men.

Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Mk. 7:1.

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. Mk. 7:5. Col. 2:8.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother, and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

Ex. 20:12. 21:17. Lev. 19:3.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift to God, by what thou mightest be profited by me:

Prov. 28:24. Mk. 7:11. 12.

6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be guiltless. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, Is. 19:13. Mk. 7:6.

8 This people draweth nigh

unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Ezek. 33:31.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

Acts 14:15. Is. 29:13. Titus 1:14.

¶ II.

10 And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand:

Mk. 7:14.

11 *Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man, but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

Acts 10:15. Rom. 14:14. Titus 1:15

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, when they heard this saying?

13 But he answered and said, *Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

John 15:2. 1. Cor. 3:12, &c.

14 Let them alone, *they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

Lk. 6:39. Rom. 2:19. Is. 9:16.

15 Then *answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

Mk. 7:17.

16 And Jesus said, *Are ye also yet without understanding?

Chap. 16:9. Mk. 7:18.

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But *those things which

proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

James 3:6.

19 For out of the *heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies,

Gen. 6:5. Chap. 8:21. Mk. 7:21.

20 These are the things which defile a man, but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

¶ III.

(Gospel Reminiscere, 21-28.)

21 Then Jesus *went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. Mk. 7:24.

22 And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, *Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

Chap. 20:30.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, *Send her away, for she crieth after us. Ps. 34:6

24 But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the *lost sheep of the house of Israel.

Chap. 10:5. 6, &c. Acts 3:25. Rom. 15:8.

25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said, It is *not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs.

Mk. 7:27. Phil. 3:2.

27 But she said, Truth, Lord, yet the dogs eat of the

crumbs which fall from their masters' tables.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith; be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

Chap. 8:10, 13.

¶ IV.

29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. Mk. 7:31.

30 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet, and he healed them:

Chap. 11:5. Is. 35:5. Lk. 7:22.

31 Inasmuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk and the blind to see, and they glorified the God of Israel.

¶ V.

32 Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat, and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. Mk. 8:1.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes. Lk. 12:1. Mk. 8:6.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled, and they took of the broken meat that was left seven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the region of Magdala. Mk. 8:10.

CHAPTER 16.

The Pharisees require a sign Jesus warneth his disciples. Peter's confession. Admonisheth to bear the cross.

The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven.

Mk. 8:11. Lk. 11:16. 12:54, 56.

2 But he answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather; for the sky is red. Lk. 12:54.

3 And in the morning, It will be stormy weather today: for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, but can ye not discern the signs of the times? Chap. 11:4.

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jo-

nas†. And he left them, and departed. Chap. 12:39. †Jon. 2:1.

6 And when his disciples came to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

¶ II.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and *beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Mk. 8:15. Lk. 12:1. †Gal. 5:9.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little *faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?

Chap. 6:11.

9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the *five loaves, of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

Chap. 14:17. John 6:9.

10 Neither the *seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

Chap. 15:34, 37.

11 How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it no. to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the *doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Gal. 5:9.

¶ III.

(Gospel on St. Peter's and Paul's 13-20.)

13 When *Jesus came into the regions of Cesarea Phil-

ippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man, am?

Mk. 8:27. Lk. 9:18.

14 And they said, Some say that thou art *John the Baptist, some, †Elijah, and others ††Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.

Lk. 1:13. †Lk. 1:17.

††2 Kings 23:31.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that *I am?

Exod. 3:14.

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

John 1:49. 6:69. Mk. 8:29.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona, *for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

1. Cor. 2:10. Gal. 1:16.

18 And I also say unto thee, That *thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

John 1:42. Eph. 2:20. Rev. 21:14.

19 And I will give unto thee the *keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Chap. 18:18. John 20:23.

20 Then *charged Jesus his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

Chap. 17:9. Mk. 8:30. Lk. 9:21.

¶ IV

21 From *that time forth

began Jesus †to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

Chap. 17:22. 20:17. †Mk. 8:31.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord, this shall never be unto thee.

23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, *Satan, thou art an offence unto me, for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. 2. Sam. 19:22. Rom. 8:7.

¶ V.

24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man *will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

Chap. 10:38. Mk. 8:34. Lk. 8:23.

25 For *whosoever would save his life shall lose it, and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.

Lk. 17:33. John 12:20.

26 For *what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or †what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

Mk. 8:36. Lk. 9:25. †Ps. 49:9.

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father *with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

Rom. 2:6. Rev. 2:23. 22:12.

28 Verily I say unto you, *There are some standing here, which shall not taste of

death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

Mk. 9:1. Lk. 9:27.

CHAPTER 17.

The transfiguration. Christ healeth the lunatic: foretelleth his passion; payeth tribute.

(Gospel sixth Sunday after Epiphany 1-9.)

And after *six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

Mk. 16:2. Lk. 9:28.

2 And was *transfigured before them and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

2. Pet. 1:16, 17.

3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias *talking with him.

Lk. 9:31.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here; if thou wilt, let us make here three *tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

Gen. 4:20.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased, †hear ye him.

Chap. 3:17. Is. 42:1. †Deut. 18:15.

6 *And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

2. Pet. 1:18.

7 And Jesus came and *touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

Dan. 8:18. 9:21. 10:10. 12.

8 And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

¶ II.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, *Jesus charged them, saying Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

Chap. 16:20. Mk. 8:30. 9:9.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that *Elias must first come?

Chap. 11:14. Mk. 9:11, 13.

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

12 But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but *have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

Chap. 3:10, 14:9. Mk. 9:12, 13.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

¶ III.

14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, Lk. 9:37. †Phil. 3:10.

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is a lunatic, and sore vexed; for often he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered, and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the

devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour:

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief, for verily I say unto you, *If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

Chap. 21:21. Mk. 11:23. Lk. 17:6.

21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

¶ IV.

22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men. Chap. 20:17, 18. Mk. 9:31. Lk. 24:6, 7.

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised up again. And they were exceeding sorry.

¶ V.

24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received *tribute money came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

Exod. 30:13. Mk. 9:33.

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith un-

to him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, *lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money, that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

Lk. 23:2.

CHAPTER 18.

Christ warneth to be humble: to avoid offences; how to deal with our brethren. Parable of the King.

(Gospel on St. Michael's Day 1-11.)

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the *greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

Mk. 9:34. Lk. 9:41.

2 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be *converted, and become ~~tas~~ little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Chap. 19:14. †Mk.10:15. 1.Cor.14:20.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this *little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

1 Pet. 5:6.

5 And *whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me.

Chap. 10:40, 42. Lk. 9:8.

6 But *whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

Lk. 17:1, 2. Rom. 14:13.

¶ II.

7 Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must need be that offences come, but woe *to that man by whom the offence cometh!

Lk. 17:1. 1. Cor. 11:19. 26:24.

8 Wherefore if *thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee, it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into ~~feverlasting~~ fire.

Chap. 5:30. Mk. 9:48. †Matt. 5:22.

9 And if thine *eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee, it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

Mk. 5:28.

¶ VI.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

Mk. 9:42. Ps. 34:7.

11 For the Son of man *is come to save that which was lost.

Chap. 9:13. Lk. 19:20. 1. Tim. 1:15.

12 How think ye? If a *man have a hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the wilderness, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

Lk. 15:4. †Jer. 50:6. Ez. 34:11, 12.

13 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoice more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so *it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

2. Pet. 3:9.

¶ III.

15 Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault *between thee and him alone, if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

Lev. 19:17. Lk. 17:3.

16 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth *of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

John 8:17. 2 Cor. 13:1. Heb. 10:28

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the *church; but if he †neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee a heathen man and a publican.

Chap. 16:18.

18 Verily I say unto you, *Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Chap. 16:19. John 20:23.

¶ IV.

19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask; *it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

1. John 3:22. 5:14.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

¶ V.

21 Then came *Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against

me, and I †forgive him? till seven times?

Matt. 16:18. Chap. 13:32.

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but, Until seventy times seven.

(Gospel twenty-second Sunday after Trinity 23-35.)

23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take an account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had nought to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

2 Kings 4:1. Neb. 5:8.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant being moved with compassion, loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, that owed him an hundred *pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me what thou owest.

Chap. 20:2.

29 So his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not, but went and cast him into pris-

on, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me;

33 Shouldest not thou also have had mercy on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee? James 2:13.

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay that was due unto him. -

35 *So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses. Matt. 6:12. Prov. 21:12. Jas. 2:13.

CHAPTER 19.

Christ about marriage and divorce. Receiveth little children. Telleth how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

And it came to pass, *that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the borders of Judea beyond Jordan; Mk. 10:1. Jhn 10:40.

2 And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

¶ II.

3 The Pharisees also came unto him *tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

Chap. 22:18.

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female,

Gen. 1:27. Mal. 2:15.

5 And said, *For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife, and they twain shall be one flesh?

Gen. 2:24. Mk. 10:7. 1. Cor. 6:16.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, *let not man put asunder. 1. Cor. 7:10.

7 They say unto him, *Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorce-ment, and to put her away?

Chap. 5:31. Deut. 24:1.

8 He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives, but from the beginning it was not so.

9 And I say unto you, whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery, and he who marrieth her, which is put away doth commit adultery.

Chap. 5:31, 32. 1. Cor. 7:10, 11.

¶ III.

10 His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. 1. Cor. 7:2. 17.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born

and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men, and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

¶ IV.

13 Then were there *brought unto him little children, that he should lay his hands on them, and pray and the disciples rebuked them.

Lk. 18:15. Mk. 10:13.

14 But Jesus said, *Suffer the little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me for of such is the kingdom of heaven. Chap. 18:2.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed hereafter.

¶ V.

16 *And, behold *one came unto him and said, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?

Lk. 18:18. Chap. 10:25.

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God, But if thou wilt enter into life *keep the commandments.

Lk. 10:26. 28.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy *father and thy mother, and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

Chap. 15:14. Rom. 13:9.

20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up, what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have *treasure in heaven, and come and follow me.

Chap. 6:20. Lk. 16:9.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful, for he *had great possessions.

Ps. 62:10.

¶ VI.

23 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily *I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Mk. 10:23. 1 Cor. 1:26.

24 And again I say unto you, It is *easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

Lk. 18:25.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them: With men this is impossible, *but with God all things are possible.

Gen. 18:14. Per. 32:17.

¶ VII.

(Gospel St. Paul. Conversion 27:30.)

27 Then answered Peter and said unto him, *Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

Mk. 10:28. Lk. 18:28.

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you,

That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit upon the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, *judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Wisdom of Sol. 3:8. Rev. 2:26.

29 And *every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

Mk. 10:29. 30. Lk. 18:29. 30.

30 But many *that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first.

Chap. 20:16. Mk. 10:31. Lk. 13:30.

CHAPTER 20.

Christ's parable of the labourers in the vineyard. Fortelleth his passion; he answers the mother of Zebedee's children. Giveth two blind men sight.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers *into his vineyard.

Chap. 21:33.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. Chap. 18:28.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace,

4 And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh

hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they would have received more, and they likewise received every man a penny.

11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house,

12 Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong, didst not thou agree with me for a penny?

14 Take that thine is, and go thy way; I will give unto this last even as unto thee.

15 Is it not *lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good?

Rom. 9:21. Deut. 15:9.

16 So the *last shall be

first, and the first last, for many be called, but few chosen.

Chap. 19:30.

¶ II.

17 And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and he *said unto them,

Chap. 17:22.

18 *Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

Chap. 16:21.

19 And shall *deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him, and the third day he shall rise again.

Lk. 18:32. Mt. 27:2. John 18:28.

¶ III.

(Gospel St. James Day 20-23.)

20 Then *came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

Mk. 10:35.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons *may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left, in thy kingdom.

Chap. 19:28.

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with *the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

John 18:11. †Lk. 12:50

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my

cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with; but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to *give, but it shall be given to them for whom has been prepared of my Father.

Chap. 25:34.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

Mk. 10:41.

25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princess of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

26 But *it shall not be so among you, but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;

1. Pet. 5:3.

27 *And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant,

Chap. 18:4.

28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to *minister, and †to give his life a ransom for many.

John 13:4. Phil. 2:7. †Is. 53:10. 11

29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

¶ IV.

30 And, behold, *two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

Mk. 10:46. Lk. 18:35

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace, but they cried the more, saying.

Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you? Eccles. 11:17.

33 They say unto him, *Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion on them and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

CHAPTER 21.

Christ entereth Jerusalem. driveth out the buyers and sellers, and rebuketh scribes. Parable of the two sons and the husbandmen.

(Gospel first Sunday Advent and Palm Sunday 1-9.)

And when they *drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

Mk. 11. 1. Lk. 19:22. John 12:12.

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them, and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the *daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

Is. 62:11. Zach 9:9. †Ps. 24:8.

6 *And the disciples went,

and did as Jesus commanded them. Mk. 11:14.

7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them, their clothes, and they set him thereon. 2. Kings 9:13.

8 And a very great multitude spread *their garments in the way others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed them in the way.

John 12:13.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying: *Hosanna to the son of David, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

Ps. 118:25. 26. John 12:13

10 *And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying. Who is this?

11 And the multitudes said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee. John 1:45.

¶ II.

12 And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

Mk. 11:15. Lk. 19:45

13 And he said unto them, It is written, *My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

*Is. 56:7 †Jer 7:11.

14 And the *blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them.

Is. 35: 5. 8. Matt. 15:34.

15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did,

and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, *Hosanna to the Son of David, they were sore displeased.

Chap. 21:9.

16 And said unto him, Heardest thou what these are saying? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea, have ye never read, *Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise? Ps. 8:2.

¶ III.

17 And he left them, and went out of the city into *Bethany, and he lodged there. Chap. 26:6. John 11:18.

18 Now *in the morning, as he returned to the city, he hungered. Mk. 11:12

19 And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and *found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And at once the fig tree withered away.

Lk. 13:6, 7. Mk. 11:13.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How, soon is the fig tree withered away!

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, *but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, it shall be done. James 1:16.

22 And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer *believing, ye shall receive. Mk. 11:24, 25, Lk. 19:9. Jas. 5:16.

¶ IV.

23 And when he was come *into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

Mk. 11:27. Lk. 20:1. Acts 4:7.

24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one question, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The *baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, why did ye not then believe him? Mk. 3:11.

26 But if we shall say, Of men we fear the people, *for all hold John as a prophet.

Chap. 14:5. Mk. 6:20. Lk. 20:6.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

¶ V.

28 But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not, but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the *will of his father? They say unto him, The first.

Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

Lk. 3:12, 13.

32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not, *but the publicans and the harlots believed him; and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

Chap. 3:1, &c. Lk. 3:12, 13.

¶ VI.

33 Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which *planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.

Mk. 12:1. &c. Lk. 20:9.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and *killed another, and stoned another.

Acts. 7:52. Heb. 11:36, 37.

36 Again, he sent other servants more than the first, and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will *reverence my son.

Lev. 19:30.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir, come, *let us kill him,

and let us seize on his inheritance.

Chap. 26:3, 4. Ps. 2:2. Acts 4:27.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

40 When therefore the lord of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably *destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

Lk. 21:24. Heb. 2:3.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never *read in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner, this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

Ps. 118:22. Is. 8:14. 28:16. Acts 4:11. Rom. 9:33. 1 Pet. 2:6.

43 Therefore say I unto you, The *kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

Chap. 8:12.

44 And whosoever *shall fall on this stone shall be broken, but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

Is. 8:14, 15. Zech. 12:3

¶ VII.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they *feared the multitudes, because

they took him for a prophet.

Lk. 7:16. John 7:40.

CHAPTER 22.

The parable of the marriage. Tribute. Christ confuteth the Sadducees. First and great commandment.

(Gospel 20 S. after Trin. 1-14.)

And Jesus answered *and spake again in parables, unto them, and said,

Lk. 14:16. Rev. 19: 7, 9.

2 The kingdom of heaven is liken unto a certain king, *which made a marriage for his son,

Chap. 25:10.

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding, and they would not come.

4 Again, *he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner, my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready; †come to the marriage. Chap. 21:36. †Matt. 11:28.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise,

6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them shamefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth, and he sent forth his armies, and *destroyed those †murderers, and burned up their city. Dent. 7:23. †1 Cor. 6:10. Lk. 19:27

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were *not worthy.

Chap. 10:3, 11, 13. Acts 13:46.

9 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye

shall find, bid to the marriage.

Chap. 13:47. 21:43.

10 So those servants went out into the highways, and *gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good, and the wedding was furnished with guests.

Chap. 13:38, 47.

¶ II.

11 And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a *wedding garment:

Zach. 3:3. 2 Cor. 5:3. Col. 3:10.

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him *into outer darkness; †there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Chap. 8:12. 25:30. †Chap. 24:51.

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

Chap. 19:30. 20:16. Mk. 10:31.

¶ III.

(Gospel 23 S. after Trin. 15-22.)

15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in his talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man; for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful

to give tribute unto Cesar, or not? Lk. 2:1.

18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said: *Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

†Job. 8:18.

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

21 They say unto him, Cesar's. Then saith he unto them, *Render therefore unto Cesar the things which are Cesar's and unto God the things that are God's.

Mk. 12:17. Rom. 13:7.

22 When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

¶ IV.

23 The same day came to him the *Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

Chap. 3:7. Mk. 12:18. Lk. 20:27.

24 Saying, Master, *Moses said, If a man die, having no children his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

Deut. 25:5. Mk. 12:19. Lk. 20:28.

25 Now there were with us seven brethren; The first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother,

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 In the resurrection,

therefore, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 But Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, *not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

John 20:9.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as *the angels of God in heaven.

Lk. 20:36. 1 John 3:2.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying:

32 *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

Ex. 3:6. 14. Mk. 12:26. Lk. 20:37.

33 And when the multitudes heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

¶ V.

(Gospel 18 S. after Trin. 34-46.)

34 But when the Pharisees had heard, that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 And *one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

Mk. 12:28. Lk. 10:25.

36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

37 Jesus said unto him, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

Mk. 12:30 &c. Deut. 6:5.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

Mk. 12:31. Rom. 13:9.

40 On these two commandments hangeth all the law and the prophets.

¶ VI.

41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, The son of David.

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying:

44 *The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

Ps. 110: 1. Lk. 20:42. Acts 2:24.

Heb. 1:13. 1. Cor. 15:25.

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word, *neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.

Lk. 14:6. Mk. 12:34. Lk. 20:40.

CHAPTER 23.

Christ rebukes the scribes and Pharisees. Beware of their ambition.

Then spake Jesus to the multitudes, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit on Moses' seat.

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that observe and do; but do not ye after their works; for they say, and do not.

Mal. 2:7. Rom. 2:19.

4 For they bind heavy *burdens and grievous to be

borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.

Lk. 11:46. Gal. 6:13.

5 But all their works they do *for to be seen of men, they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

Chap. 6:1. †Num. 15:38

6 *And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

Lk. 11:43. 20:46.

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, *Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 But be not ye called Rabbi, for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren.

2. Cor. 1:24. 1. Pet. 5:3.

9 And call no man your father on the earth, for *one is your Father, which is in heaven.

Mal. 1:6.

10 Neither be ye called masters, for one is your Master, even Christ.

11 But he that is *greatest among you shall be your servant.

Chap. 20: 26, 27.

12 And whosoever shall *exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

Prov. 29:23. Job. 22:29. Hcz. 17:24. Lk. 14:41. 18:14. 1

1. Pet. 5:5.

¶ II.

13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men, for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that *are entering to go in.

Lk. 11:52.

14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! *for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

Mk. 12:40. Lk. 20:47.

15 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves.

16 Woe unto you, *ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!

Ver. 24.

17 Ye fools and blind; for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing, but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is a debtor.

19 Ye fools and *blind, for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

2. Pet. 1:9.

20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall swear *by heaven, sweareth by the

throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

Chap. 5:34. Ps. 11:4. Acts 7:40.

23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! *for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy and faith, these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

Lk. 11:42.

24 Ye blind guides, which strain out a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of *the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

Lk. 11:39. Mk. 7:4.

26 Thou blind Pharisee, *cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

Titus 1:15.

27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! *for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.

Lk. 11:39, 44. Acts 23:3.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Woe *unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

Lk. 11:47

30 And say, If we had been

in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them *which killed the prophets.

*Acts 7:52. 1. Thess. 2:15.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

¶ III.

(Gospel 25 S. after Trin. 25-28)

34 Wherefore, behold, *I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes, and some of them ye shall kill and crucify, and some of them shall ye †scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city.

Lk. 11:49. †Acts 5:40.

35 That on you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous *Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

Gen. 4:8. †2. Chron. 24:21, 22.

36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

¶ IV.

37 O Jerusalem, *Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Lk. 13:34.

38 Behold, *your house is left unto you desolate.

1. Kings 9:7.

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, *Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. John 12:13 &c.

CHAPTER 24.

Destruction of Jerusalem. End of the world.

And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple; and his disciples came to him for *to shew him the build-ings of the temple. Mk. 13:1.

2 But Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

¶ II.

3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, *Take heed that no man deceive you.

Eph. 5:6

5 For *many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. Chap. 7:22. †John 5:43.

6 And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, see that ye be not troubled, for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there

shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.

9 Then *shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

Mk. 13:9. Lk. 21:12. John 16:2 &c

10 And then shall many be *offended, and shall betray one another and shall hate one another.

Chap. 11:6.

11 And many *false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

Chap. 7:15.

12 And *because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

2. Tim. 3:1.

13 But he that shall *endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

Chap. 10:22.

14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in *all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

Rom. 10:18.

§ III.

(Gospel 25 S. after Trin. 25-28.)

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand,)

Mk. 13:14. Lk. 21:30. †Dan 9:26,27

16 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains,

17 Let him which is on the *house top not come down to take any thing out of his house.

Mk. 13:15, 16.

18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

19 But *woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

Lk. 23:29.

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on *the sabbath day.

Exod. 16:29.

21 For *then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no nor ever shall be.

Mk. 13:19. Joel 2:2.

22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved, *but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

Is. 63:8, 9. Zech 14:2, 3.

§ IV.

23 Then if *any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, believe it not.

Mk. 12:21. Lk. 17:23, 21:8.

24 For there shall *arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders, inso-much that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

Mk. 13:22. Is. 42:1.

25 Behold, I have told you before hand.

26 If therefore they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth, behold, he is in the secret chambers, *believe it not.

Deut. 18:1. &c.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west, so shall the coming of the Son of man be.

28 For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.
Job 38:30. 1:8. Lk. 17:37.

¶ V.

29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall *the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

Is. 13:10. Ezech. 32:7.

30 *And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man on heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. Mk. 13:26. Rev. 1:7.

31 And he shall send forth his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

1. Cor. 15:52. 1. Thess. 4:16.

¶ VI.

32 Now learn a parable of the *fig tree; When its branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh.

Mk. 13:38. Lk. 21:29.

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that he is nigh, *even at the doors. James 5:9.

34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away *till all these things be fulfilled.

Lk. 21:32. Mk. 13:30.

35 *Heaven and earth shall

pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

Mk. 13:31. Lk. 21:33.

¶ VII.

36 But of that *day and hour knoweth no man, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

Mk. 13:32. Acts 1:7.

37 But as the *days of Noe were, so shall the coming of the Son of man be.

Gen. 7:7. Lk. 17:26. 1. Pet. 3:20.

38 *For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark,

Gen. 6:3, 4:5, 7:5.

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away, so shall the coming of the Son of man be.

¶ VIII.

40 Then shall *two men be in the field, one shall be taken, and the other left.

Lk. 17:35. 36.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill; one shall be taken, and the other left.

42 Watch *therefore; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

Mk. 13:33, 35. Lk. 21:36.

43 But know this, that *if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

1. Thess. 5:2. Lk. 12:39.

44 Therefore be ye also ready, for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.

45 Who then is a faithful

and wise servant, who his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?

Chap. 25:21. Lk. 12:42. Heb. 3:5.

46 *Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

Rev. 10:15.

47 Verily I say unto you, That *he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

Chap. 25:21, 23. Lk. 22:29.

48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming,

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken,

50 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,

51 And shall cut him off and appoint his portion with the hypocrites, *there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Chap. 8:12. 13:42. 25:30.

CHAPTER 25.

The parable of the ten virgins. of the talents. description of the last judgment.

(Gospel 27 S. after Trin. 1-13.)

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto *ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

Rev. 14:4. 19:7. 21:2. 9.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were *foolish.

Ps. 14:1. Mk. 13:47. 22:10.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them.

4 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, *they all slumbered and slept.

James 3:2. Ps. 121:3, 4.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins *arose, and trimmed their lamps.

Lk. 12:35. 36.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil, for our lamps are going out.

9 But the wise answered, saying: Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you; but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came. And they that were ready *went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

Rev. 19:7. Rev. 19:7.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, *saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

Lk. 13:25. &c.

12 But he answered and said, *Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

Chap. 7:23. Ps. 1:6. 5:5.

13 *Watch therefore; for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

Chap. 24:42. Mk. 13:33. Lk. 21:36.

¶ II.

14 For the kingdom of heaven is as a *man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

Lk. 19:12. &c. 21:33.

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every man according to his several ability, and straightway took his journey.

16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them

20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord thou deliveredst unto me five talents, behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

21 His lord said unto him, *Well done, thou good and faithful servant: Thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

Chap. 24: 45. 47. Lk. 12:44.

22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents; behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.

23 His lord said unto him, *Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over

many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

Ver. 21.

24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed.

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth, lo, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, *Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed Chap. 18:32.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with interest.

28 Take ye therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

Chap. 13:12. Mk. 4:25. Lk. 8:18.

30 And cast ye the *unprofitable servant into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Chap. 8:12. 24:51.

¶ III.

(Gospel S. 28 p. Trin. 31-40.)

31 But when the *Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory.

Chap. 16:17. 1. Thess. 4:16.

32 And before him shall be *gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats.

Rom. 14:10. Rev. 20:12.

33 And he shall *set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Hez. 34:17.

34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, *inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

Rom. 8:17. 1. Pet. 1:4, 9. Rev. 21:7.

35 For *I was hungry, and ye gave me meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me in,

Is. 58:17. Ezeek. 18:7. Job. 4:17.

36 Naked, and ye clothed me, I was sick, and ye visited me, *I was in prison and ye came unto me.

2. Tim. 1:16.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink?

38 And when saw we thee a stranger and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 And when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, *Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

Prov. 19:17. Heb. 6:10.

¶ IV.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand,

*Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, which is prepared for the devil and his angels.

Chap. 7:23. Lk. 13:27. Ps. 6:3. Rev. 20:10, 15.

42 For I was hungry, and ye gave me no meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink.

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in, naked, and ye clothed me not, sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say *unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not unto one of the least of these, ye did it not unto me.

Acts 9:5.

46 And *these shall go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into life eternal.

John 5:29. Rom. 2:7 &c.

CHAPTER 26.

The rulers conspire against Christ. Christ, being betrayed with a kiss, is carried to Calaphas. and denied of Peter.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2 Ye know *that after two days is the feast of the pass-over, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

Chap. 14:1. Lk. 22:1. John 13:1.

¶ II.

3 Then assembled together *the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the

people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

John 11:47. Ps. 2:2.

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.

5 But they said, *Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

Chap. 27:15.

¶ III.

6 Now when Jesus was in *Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

Mk. 14:3 &c. John 11:1, 2. 12:3.

7 There came *unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

John 12:3.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

11 For ye have the *poor always with you; but me ye have not always.

Deut. 15:11. Mk. 14:7. John 12:8.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

13 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

¶ III.

14 *Then one of the twelve, called *Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests,

Mk. 14:10. Lk. 23:3.

15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for *thirty pieces of silver.

Zach. 10:12, 11:12, 27, 3.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

Mk. 14:12. Lk. 22:7, 8.

¶ IV.

17 Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, *saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?

18 And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them, and they made ready the passover.

20 Now when the *even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

Mk. 14:17, 18. Lk. 22:14.

21 And as they did eat, he said *Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

John 13:21.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered and said, He that dippeth *his

hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

Mk. 14:20. Ps. 41:9.

24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him, but *woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.

Lk. 53. Mk. 9:12.

25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

¶ VI.

26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

Mk. 14:22. Lk. 22:19. 1. Cor. 11:23.

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, *Drink ye all of it.

Mk. 14:23.

28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

29 But I say unto you, I *will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

Mk. 14:25. Lk. 22:18.

¶ VI.

30 And *when they had sung a Psalm of praise, they went out into the mount of Olives.

Mk. 14:26.

31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me *this night, for it is written, I †will smite the Shepherd, and

the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

Mk. 14:27. †Zach 13:7.

32 But after I am risen again, *I will go before you into Galilee.

Chap. 28:7. 10. Mk. 14:28.

33 But Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That *this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

Mk. 14:30. Lk. 22:34. John 13:34.

35 Peter saith unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

¶ VIII

36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called *Geth-semane, and saith unto the disciples, †Sit ye here, while I go yonder and pray.

Mk. 14:32. Lk. 22:39. John 18:1. †Gen. 22:5.

37 And he took with him Peter and the *two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

Chap. 4:21.

38 Then saith he unto them, *My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death; tarry ye here, and watch with me.

Mk. 14:34. John 12:27.

39 And he *went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

Lk. 22:41. Mk. 14:36

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

41 Watch *and pray, that ye enter not into temptation; the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

Mk. 14:38. Lk. 22:40.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, *Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Mk. 14:41.

46 Arise, let us be going; behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

¶ IX.

47 And while he yet spake, lo *Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

Mk. 14:43. Lk. 22:47.

48 Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came

to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master; *and kissed him.

2. Sam. 30:9.

50 And Jesus said unto him, *Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him. Ps. 41:9. 55:13.

51 And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and *drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest, and smote off his ear.

Mk. 14:47. Lk. 22:50. John 18:10.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place, for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.

53 Or thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently send me *more than twelve legions of angels?

Dan. 7:10. 2. Kings 6:17.

54 But how then should the scriptures *be fulfilled, that thus it must be? Ps. 22:7.

55 In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then *all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

Ver. 31. 54.

¶ X.

57 *And they that had laid hold on Jesus led him away to †Caiaphas the high priest.

where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

John 18:33. †Ver. 3.

58 But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end.

59 Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death:

60 But found none; yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came †two false witnesses.

Ps. 27:12. 35:11. Acts 6:13.

61 And said, This man said, *I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

John 2:19. 21.

62 And *the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what is it that these witness against thee?

Mk. 14:60.

63 But *Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, †I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.

Is. 53:7. 27, 12, 14. †1. Kings 22:16.

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: Nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man *sitting on the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.

Chap. 16:27. Mk. 14:62. Ps. 110:1.

65 Then *the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy, what further need have we of

witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

2 Kings 18:37. 19:1.

66 What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

Jer. 26:11.

67 Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with *the palms of their hands,

Is. 50:6. Lk. 22:63.

68 Saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?

¶XL.

69 Now *Peter sat without in the court; and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

Mk. 14, 66. Lk. 22:56. John 18:16.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This man was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech betrayeth thee.

74 Then *began he to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

Mk. 14:71.

75 And Peter remembered the words which Jesus had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny

me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

Ver. 34. Mk. 14:30. John 13:38.

CHAPTER 27.

Christ is delivered to Pilate. Judas hangeth himself. Pilate washeth his hands. Christ is crowned with thorns, crucified, dieth and is buried.

When the *morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

Mk. 15:1. Lk. 22:66. John 18:28.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and *delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

Chap. 20:10. Acts 3:13.

¶ II.

3 Then *Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

Chap. 26:14, 15.

4 Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and *went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the pieces of silver, and said, it is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

Acts 1:18. 2. Sam. 17:3.

7 And they took counsel, and *bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in.

Acts 1:19

8 Wherefore that field was

called, The field of blood, unto this day.

9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by *Zechariah the prophet, saying: And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they bought of the children of Israel.

Jer. 32:6 &c. Zec. 11:12, 13.

10 And they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

¶ III.

11 Now Jesus stood before the governor, and the governor asked him, saying, *Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

Mk. 15:2. Lk. 23:3. John 18:33.

12 And when he was accused by the chief priests and elders, he *answered nothing.

13 Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee?

Chap. 26:63. John 19:2.

14 And he answered him to never a word, insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

¶ IV.

15 Now at that *feast the governor was wont to release unto the people one prisoner, whom they would.

Mk. 15:6. Lk. 23:17.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

¶ V.

19 And while he was sitting on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man, for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

20 Now the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitudes that they should ask **Barabbas*, and destroy Jesus.

Mk. 15:11. Lk. 23:18. John 18:40.

21 But the governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, *Barabbas*.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus who is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governor said, **Why*, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be *†*crucified.

Mk. 15:14. *†*Heb. 12:2.

¶ VI.

24 So when Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and **washed* his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person; see ye to it.

Deut. 21:6.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, **His* blood be on us, and on our children.

Josh. 2:19. 2. Sam. 1:16. Acts 5:28.

¶ VII.

26 Then **released* he *Barabbas* unto them. And when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

Mk. 15:15.

27 Then the **soldiers* of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers.

Mk. 15:16. John 19:2.

28 And they stripped him, and **put* on him a scarlet robe.

Lk. 23:11.

¶ VIII.

29 And **when* they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand, and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!

Ps. 69:10. Is. 53:3.

30 And they **spat* upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

Is. 50:6.

31 And after they had **mocked* him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify him.

Mk. 15:20.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name, him they compelled to bear his cross.

33 And when they were come unto a **place* called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

Mk. 15:22. Lk. 23:33. John 19:17.

¶ IX.

34 They gave him **vinegar* to drink mingled with gall,

and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

Ps. 69:21.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet: They *parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

Ps. 22:18, &c. Mk. 15:24.

36 And sitting down they watched him there.

37 And they set *up over his head his accusation written, **THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.**

Is. 53:12. Mk. 15:26. Lk. 23:38.

38 Then were there *two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

Lk. 22:33. John 19:18. Is. 22:7.

¶ X.

39 And they that passed by *reviled him, †wagging their heads,

Mk. 15:29. Ps. 22:7.

40 And saying, *Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross.

John 2:19, 26:63.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him with the scribes and elders, said,

42 He saved others himself he cannot save. If he is the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him.

43 He *trusted in God, let him deliver him now, if he will have him, for he said, I am the Son of God.

Ps. 22:8. Eccl. 2:18.

44 The thieves also, which

were crucified with him, *cast the same in his teeth.

Lk. 23:39. Mk. 15:32.

45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying: Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

Ps. 22:1. Heb. 5:7.

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, *and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.

49 And the rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

Ps. 69:21. Mk. 13:36

¶ XI.

50 Jesus, when he had *cried again with a loud voice, yielded up his spirit.

Mk. 15:37.

51 And, behold, the *vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,

Exod. 26:32. Lk. 23:45.

52 And the graves were opened and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

54 Now when the *centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things

that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

Mk. 15:39. Lk. 23:47.

¶ XII.

55 And many women were there beholding from afar which had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the Mother of James and Josés, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

¶ XIII.

57 When the *even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple.

Mk. 15:42. 43. Lk. 23:50. 51.

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

60 And *laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock, and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

Is. 53:9.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

62 And the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said,

while he was yet alive, After *three days I will rise again.

Chap. 16:21. 17:23. 20:19. 26:61.

64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead, so the last error shall be worse than the first.

65 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can.

66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, *sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

Dan. 6:17.

CHAPTER 28.

Christ's resurrection declared by an angel. He himself appeareth unto them and sendeth his disciples to baptize and teach all nations.

In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, *came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

Mk. 16:1. Lk. 24:1. John 20:1.

2 And, behold, there was a *great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

Mk. 16:5. Lk. 24:4.

3 His *countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

Mk. 16:5. Dan. 10:6.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women:

*Fear not ye; for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. Mk. 10:6. Lk. 24:5.

6 He is not here! for he is risen, even *as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. Chap. 12:40. 16:21.

7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into *Galilee; there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

Chap. 26:32. Mk. 16:7.

8 And they *departed quickly from the sepulchre with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

Mk. 16:8.

¶ II.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, *Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

Mk. 16:9 John 20:14.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid! *go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

John 20:17.

¶ III.

11 Now when they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught, and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

¶ IV.

16 Then the *eleven disciples went away into Galilee, unto the mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

Chap. 26:32.

17 And when they saw him, *they worshipped him, but some doubted.

Lk. 24:52.

18 But Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, *All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth.

Chap. 11:27. Lk. 1:32. 10:22.

¶ V.

19 Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost;

Mk. 16:15. Acts 2:38, 39.

20 Teach'ng them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you, and, lo, *I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.

Chap. 18:20. Acts 2:42; 3:22



THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT MARK

CHAPTER 1.

John, the forerunner of Christ, baptizeth with water. Christ baptized with water, calls disciples, heals the sick.

The *beginning of the †gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.††

Gen. 1:1; †Chap. 14:15; ††Chap. 9:7; John 3:16.

2 As it is written in the prophets: *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee.

Mal. 3:1, &c.

3 The *voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

Isa. 40:3; Matt. 3:3; Luke 3:4; John 1:23.

4 John baptized in the wilderness, and *preached the baptism of repentance unto the remission of sins.

Matt. 3:1, &c.

5 And there went out unto him all the *land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river Jordan, †confessing their sins.

Acts 10:39; †1 John 1:9.

6 Now John was *clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins, and did eat †locusts and wild honey;

Matt. 3:4; †Levi 11:22.

7 And preached, saying: *There cometh after me one mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

Matt. 3:11; John 1:27.

8 I indeed *baptize you with water; but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

Matt. 3:11.

9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and *was baptized of John in Jordan.

Matt. 3:16; Luke 3:21; John 1:32.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying: *Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

Matt. 3:17; Luke 9:35; 2 Peter 1:17.

¶II

12 And immediately the Spirit driveth him forth into the *wilderness.

Matt. 4:1; Luke 4:1.

13 And he was in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan *and he was with the wild beasts. And the angels ministered unto him.

Gen. 19:16.

¶III

14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, *preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,

Matt. 4:17; Luke 4:15.

15 Saying: *The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand. Repent ye, and believe in the gospel.

Gal. 4:4; Ezek. 18:30; Acts 12:7.

16 Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw *Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers.

Matt. 4:18, &c; Luke 5:2.

17 And Jesus said unto them: Come ye after me, and *I will make you to become fishers of men. Luke 5:10.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 Now when *he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets. Matt. 4:21.

20 And straightway he called them; and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 And they went into *Capernaum. And straightway on the Sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. Matt. 11:23.

22 But all were *astonished at his doctrine; for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes. Matt. 7:28; Luke 4:32.

23 And there was in their synagogue a man *with an unclean spirit who cried out, Luke 4:33.

24 Saying: *Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. Chap. 5:7.

25 But Jesus rebuked him, saying: *Hold thy peace, and come out of him. Chap. 9:25.

26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying: What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority *commandeth he the unclean spirits, and they obey him.

Luke 9:42; Chap. 8:29.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

IV

29 And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, *they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

Matt. 8:14.

30 Now Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and at once they told him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up, *and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them. Matt. 8:15.

32 Now at even, when the sun did set, they *brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils.

Matt. 8:16; Luke 4:40.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.

34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils *and suffered not the

devils to speak, because they knew him.

Acts 16:17-18; Luke 4:44.

35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, *and departed into a desert place, and there prayed. Luke 4:42.

36 But Simon and they that were with him followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him: All are seeking for thee.

38 But he said unto them: *Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also, for therefore came I forth. Luke 4:43.

IV

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

40 And *there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him: If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

Luke 5:12; Ps. 51:7; Matt. 8:2.

41 But Jesus being moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, *and said unto him: I will; be thou clean. Exod. 4:6.

42 And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he charged him strictly and *forthwith sent him away; Chap. 3:12.

44 And said unto him: See thou say nothing to any man, but go thy way, shew thy-

self to the priest, and *offer for thy cleansing the things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

Lev. 14:1-4, 12, &c.

45 But he went out, *and began to publish it much, and to spread abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places, and they came to him from every quarter.

Luke 5:15.

CHAPTER 2.

Christ heals the sick of the palsy, calleth Matthew, answereth the Pharisees.

And again he *entered into Capernaum after some days, and it was noised that he was in the house.

Matt. 9:1; Luke 5:18.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as about the door. And he preached the word unto them.

3 And they came unto him, *bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four.

Matt. 9:2.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the multitude, they uncovered the roof where he was; and when they had uncovered it, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay.

5 But Jesus seeing their faith, saith unto the sick of the palsy; Son, *thy sins are forgiven thee. Matt. 26:28.

6 But there were certain of

the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus *speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

Matt. 9:3; Isa. 43:25.

8 And immediately, when Jesus *perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them: Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

John 2:24; Matt. 9:5.

9 Whether is it easier, to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to *forgive sins, (he said to the sick of the palsy:)

Luke 7:49.

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way unto thine house.

12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, *and glorified God, saying: We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And Jesus, went forth again by the sea side and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

Numb. 14:21.

¶II

14 And as he *passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him: Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

Luke 5:27, &c; Matt. 9:9.

15 And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, *many publicans and sinners sat together with Jesus and his disciples, for there were many, and they followed him.

Luke 15:1; Matt. 9:10.

16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eating with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?

17 When Jesus heard it, he said unto them: They that are whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick, I came not to call the righteous, *but sinners to repentance.

Matt. 9:12, 13, &c; Luke 5:31.

¶III

18 And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees were fasting, and they came and said unto him: *Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

Matt. 9:14; Luke 5:33.

19 And Jesus said unto them: Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? *as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.

John 3:29.

20 But the day will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

21 No man also seweth a piece of new cloth *on an old

garment, else the new piece that filled it up taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

Matt. 9:16; Luke 5:36.

22 And no man putteth *new wine into old bottles of skin; else the new wine doth burst the skins, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles of skin will be marred, but new wine must be put into new bottles of skin. Matt. 26:29.

IIIV

23 And it *came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the Sabbath day, and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the fears of corn.

Luke 6:1, &c; †Deut. 23:25.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him: Behold, why do thy disciples on the Sabbath day that which is *not lawful?

Exod. 35:1-3.

25 And he said unto them, Did ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was hungry, he, and they that were with him?

26 How *he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat †but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

1 Sam. 21:6; †Exod. 29:32;

Lev. 24:9.

27 And he said unto them: The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath;

Deut. 6:14.

28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord even *of the Sabbath. Luke 6:5; Matt. 12:8.

CHAPTER 3.

Christ healeth the withered hand, calleth disciples. The scribes are blaspheming.

And he entered again into the synagogue. And *there was a man there who had a withered hand.

Matt. 12:9, 10; Luke 6:6.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day, that they might accuse him. Matt. 22:29.

3 But he said unto the man which had the *withered hand, Stand forth. Matt. 4:24.

4 And he said unto them: Is it lawful to do good on the Sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he said unto the man: Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out; and his hand *was restored whole as the other.

1 King 13:6.

6 And the *Pharisees went out, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

Matt. 12:14, 22, 10.

IIII

7 But *Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea; and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,

John 6:1.

8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan and from about Tyre and Sidon, a great mul-

titude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small boat should wait on him because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying: *Thou art the Son of God.

Luke 4:41; Matt. 11:33.

12 And he charged them much that they should not make him known. Matt. 16:20.

¶III

13 Now he went up into a mountain, and called unto him whom he would, and they came unto him.

14 And he *ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach.

Matt. 10:1; Luke 6:13.

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

16 Simon he *surnamed Peter, Matt. 10:2; John 1:42.

17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James, he surnamed Boanerges, which is *The sons of thunder.

Ps. 29:3; Ps. 68:33.

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and

Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

¶IV

20 And they went into a house and the multitude came together again, so that they *could not so much as eat bread.

Chap. 6:31.

21 And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

¶V

22 And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, *He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casts he out devils.

Luke 11:5; Matt. 9:34; Chap. 12:24.

23 And *he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables: How can Satan cast out Satan? Matt. 12:26.

24 If a *kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. Luke 11:17.

25 And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.

26 If Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.

28 Verily I say unto you: All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and *blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme;

Heb. 6:4-5; Eph. 4:30.

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the *Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation.

Heb. 10:26, 29.

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

Luke 12:10.

¶VI

31 There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

32 And a multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, *thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

Luke 8:20.

33 And he answered them, saying: Who is my mother, and my brethren?

34 And he looked on them which sat round about him, and said: Behold my mother and my brethren!

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is *my brother, and sister, and mother.

Luke 11:28.

CHAPTER 4.

A number of parables. Christ stilleth the tempestuous sea.

And he began again to *teach by the sea side, and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land.

Matt. 13:1; Luke 8:4.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his *doctrine:

Matt. 13:9.

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow.

4 And it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns *grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

Ps. 1:4-5.

8 And others fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang *up and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

Ps. 1:6.

9 And he said unto them: He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

John 6:37.

¶II

10 But when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked him about this parable.

11 And he said unto them, *Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God, but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables;

Matt. 11:25.

12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, *and not understand, lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

Isa. 6:9-12.

¶III

13 And he said unto them: Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables?

14 The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; *but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

Job 1:6-7.

16 Now these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness;

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time; afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown *among thorns, such as hear the word,

Chap. 10:23.

19 And the cares of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other *things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. Matt. 13:22.

20 But these are they which were sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixtyfold, and some an hundredfold.

¶IV

21 And he said unto them: Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a

bed? and not to be set on a candlestick?

22 For there is *nothing hid, which shall not be manifested, neither was anything kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

Matt. 10:26; Luke 8:17.

23 If *any man hath ears to hear, †let him hear.

John 6:37; Rev. 2:7.

24 And he said unto them: Take heed what ye hear. *With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you, and unto you that hear shall more be given.

Matt. 7:2; Luke 6:38.

25 For he that hath, to him shall be given; and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

¶V

26 And he said: So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground;

27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

30 And he said: Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is 'like a grain of mustard seed', *which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth,

Matt. 13:31; Luke 13:12.

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

33 And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear it.

34 But without a parable spake he not unto them. And when they were alone, he *expounded all things to his disciples.

Matt. 5:1.

¶VI

35 And the same day, when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side.

36 Now when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even *as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships.

Matt. 13:23.

37 And there *arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now filling.

Jon. 1:4-5.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow, and they awoke him, and said unto him: Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, *and rebuked the wind, and said unto

the sea: Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. Matt. 8:26.

40 But he said unto them: *Why are ye so fearful? how is it that ye have no faith?

Luke 24:38.

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another: *What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him? Ps. 107:25.

CHAPTER 5.

Christ drives out a devil, healeth a woman, raiseth Jairus' daughter.

And *they came unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

Matt. 8:28; Luke 8:26.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling in the tombs, and no man could bind him, no, not with chains;

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces, neither could any man tame him.

5 And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice, and said: What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou

Son of the most high God? I †adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

Ps. 18:22; Josh. 6:26.

8 For he said unto him: Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion; for we are many.

10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying: Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits *went out, and entered into the swine; and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand,) and were choked in the sea.

Chap. 6:13.

¶II

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they came to Jesus, and saw him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind; and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it told them, how it befell to

him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.

17 And *they began to pray him to depart out of their borders.

Matt. 8:34; Acts 16:39.

18 And when he was come into the ship, *he that had been possessed with the devil prayed him that he might be with him.

Luke 8:38.

19 Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but said unto him: Go home to thy friends, and tell them what great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis what great things Jesus had done for him, and all men marveled.

¶III

21 And when Jesus was passed over again in a ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him; and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 And, behold, there cometh one of the *rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

Matt. 9:18; Luke 8:41.

23 And besought him greatly, saying: My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and live.

24 Now Jesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

¶IV

25 And * a certain woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years,

Lev. 15:25; Matt. 9:20; Luke 8:43.

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, *and touched his garment.

Luke 6:19; 8:44.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up, and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 But Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that *power had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said: Who touched my clothes?

Luke 6:19; 8:46.

31 And his disciples said unto him: Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done to her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her: Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace, and be free of thy plague.

¶V

35 While he yet spake, *there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house certain which said: Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

Luke 7:49.

36 As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he said unto the ruler of the synagogue: *Be not afraid, only believe.

Luke 8:50.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and *wailed greatly.

Gen. 50:10.

39 Now when he was come in, he said unto them: Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is *not dead, but sleepeth.

John 11:11.

40 And they laughed him to scorn. *But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

Acts 9:40.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her: Talitha cumi! which is, being interpreted: Damsel, *I say unto thee, arise!

Luke 7:16.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked, for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were

astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And *he charged them straitly that no man should know it, and he commanded that something should be given her to eat.

Matt. 8:4; Luke 5:14.

CHAPTER 6.

Christ despised. John beheaded. Feeding five thousand; walking on the sea.

And he went out from thence, and came into his own country, and his disciples followed him.

¶II

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue, and many hearing him were astonished, saying: *From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

John 6:42.

3 Is not this the *carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

Luke 4:22; Matt. 11:6.

4 But Jesus said unto them: *A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. John 4:44, &c; Matt. 15:57.

5 And *he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

Matt. 13:57-58.

6 And he *marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching. Isa. 59:18.

¶III

7 And he *called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits;

Matt. 10:1; Luke 9:1.

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only, no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse;

9 But be shod with sandals, and put not on two coats.

10 And he said unto them: *In what place soever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

Matt. 10:11; Luke 9:4.

11 Now whosoever shall *not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, †shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city.

Gen. 19:24-25; †Matt. 10:14.

12 And they *went out, and preached that †men should repent.

Matt. 10:14; Luke 9:5; †Acts 13:51.

13 And they cast out many devils, and *anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them. James 5:14.

¶IV

14 And king Herod heard of him, (for his fame was spread abroad;) and he said,

*That John the Baptist is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

Luke 1:13; Mark 14:1.

15 Others said: It is Elijah. Again others said: It is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 But when Herod heard thereof, he said: It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead. Matt. 14:2.

17 For *Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife, for he had married her.

Matt. 14:3; Luke 3:19-20.

18 For John had said unto Herod: It is not lawful for thee to have *thy brother's wife.

Lev. 18:16; 20:21.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not;

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and a holy, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, *that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee;

Matt. 14:6.

22 And when the daughter of Herodias came in, and danced, she pleased Herod and them that sat with him, and the king said unto the damsel: Ask of me whatso-

ever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he sware unto her: Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

24 So she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And her mother said: The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying: I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger the head of John the Baptist.

26 Now the king was exceeding sorry, yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought. And he went and beheaded him in the prison.

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard thereof, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

¶V

30 And the *apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

Luke 6:13.

31 And he said unto them, *Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest

a while; for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. Matt. 11:28; Chap. 8:23.

32 And they departed into a desert place in a ship privately.

33 But the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

34 And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a *shepherd. And he began to teach them many things. Ps. 23:1; Luke 9:11.

¶VI

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said: *This is a desert place, and now the day is far spent;

Matt. 14:15; Luke 9:12.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread, for they have nothing to eat.

37 But he answered and said unto them: Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him: Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 And he saith unto them: How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, *and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them, and the two fishes divided he among them all.

1 Sam. 9:12, 13.

42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves were five thousand men.

¶VII

45 Now straightway he constrained his disciples to get *into the ship, and to go to the other side to †Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

Matt. 14:22; John 6:17; †Matt. 11:21.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 And when *even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. Matt. 14:23, 24.

48 And he saw them *toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary unto them; and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea,

and would have passed by them. Gen. 5:29.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out:

50 For they all saw him, and were afraid. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them: *Be of good cheer! It is I! be not afraid. Matt. 9:2.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the *wind ceased. And they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered. Chap. 4:39.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was *hardened. Ps. 95:8.

¶VIII

53 And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might *touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

Chap. 5:27, 28; Matt. 9:21.

CHAPTER 7.

The Pharisees' hypocrisy. The heathen woman's daughter, the deaf and the dumb.

Then *came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, who came from Jerusalem.

Matt. 15:1.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with *defiled, that is to say, with unwashed hands, they found fault. Luke 11:39.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding *the tradition of the elders. Matt. 15:2.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brazen vessels, and of tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him: Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?

6 He answered and said unto them: Well hath Isaiah prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, *This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Isa. 29:13-15.

7 Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for *doctrines the commandments of men. Matt. 15:9.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the

washing of pots and cups, and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them: Full well ye reject the *commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

Exod. 20:1-17; Rev. 22:19.

10 For Moses said: Honour thy father and thy mother; and: *Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

Deut. 5:16; Lev. 20:9; Exod. 20:12.

11 But ye say: If a man shall say to his father or mother, *It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, he shall be free.

Prov. 28:24.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or his mother,

13 Making the word of God of *none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered; and many such like things do ye.

Matt. 15:6.

¶III

14 And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them: Hearken unto me every one of you, and *understand,

Matt. 15:10.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile him; but the things which come out of the man, those are the things that defile him.

16 If any man have ears to hear, *let him hear.

John 6:37; Matt. 11:15.

17 And when he was entered into the house from the

multitude, his disciples asked him *concerning the parable.

Matt. 15:15.

18 And he saith unto them: Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him?

19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said: *That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

Gen. 6:5; Prov. 6:18; Matt. 15:18, 19.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness;

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

¶III

24 And from thence he arose, *and went away into the regions of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house, and would have no man know it; but he could not be hid.

Matt. 15:21; Chap. 11:21.

25 For a certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell down at his feet.

26 The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation, and she besought him

that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her: *Let the children first be filled, for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to the dogs.

Matt. 15:26.

28 But she answered and said unto him: Yea, Lord, yet even the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.

29 And he said unto her: For this saying go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

IV

(Gospel 12. S. post Trin. 31-37)

31 And again, departing from the regions of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of *Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

Matt. 15:29, &c.

32 And *they brought unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech, and they besought him to lay his hand upon him.

Matt. 9:32; Luke 11:14.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, *and touched his tongue.

Chap. 8:23.

34 And *looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him: Ephphatha, that is, Be opened!

John 11:41.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the

string of his *tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

John 11:44.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man; but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it.

37 But they were astonished beyond measure, saying, *He hath done all things well, he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

Gen. 1:31.

CHAPTER 8.

Christ feedeth four thousand, heals the blind. Confessing Christ. Tells of his sufferings and death.

(Gospel 7. S. post Trin. 1-9)

In those *days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said unto them:

Matt. 15:32.

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat,

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way; for divers of them came from far.

4 And his *disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these men with bread here in the wilderness?

Matt. 5:1.

5 And he asked them: How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground. And he took the

seven loaves, *and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them, and they did set them before the people. Lev. 7:12.

7 And they had a few small fishes. And he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they *did eat, and were filled. And they took up of the broken meat that was left seven baskets.

2 Kings 4:44, &c.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand. And he sent them away.

¶II

10 And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 And the *Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

Matt. 12:38; 16:1.

12 But he sighed deeply in his spirit, and said: Why does this generation seek after a *sign? Verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entering into the ship again departed to the other side.

·¶III

14 Now the disciples *had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf.

Matt. 16:5-6.

15 And he charged them, saying: Take heed, beware of

the *leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.

Matt. 16:16.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying: It is because we have no bread.

17 And when Jesus perceived it, he said unto them: Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? *perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened? Chap. 6:52; Luke 24:25.

18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the *five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

Matt. 14:19; Luke 9:13;

John 6:9, 13.

20 And when the *seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.

Matt. 15:34.

21 And he said unto them: How is it that ye do not understand?

¶IV

22 And he cometh to Bethsaida, *and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

Chap. 6:56.

23 And he *took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town. And when he †had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw aught. Chap. 7:32-33; †John 9:6.

24 And he looked up, and

said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up, and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying: Neither go into the town, *nor tell it to any in the town.

Chap. 7:36.

¶V

27 And *Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cesarea Philippi, and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them: Whom do men say that I am?

Matt. 16:13.

28 And they answered, John the Baptist, but some say, Elijah, and others, One of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answered and said unto him, *Thou art the Christ.

John 1:49.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But he turning about looked on his disciples, rebuked Peter, saying: *Get

thee behind me, Satan, for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men. 2 Sam. 19:22.

¶VI

34 And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them: Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. Matt. 16:24, &c.

35 For *whosoever would save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it.

Matt. 10:39.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man *give in exchange for his soul? Matt. 16:24-26; Isa. 1:18.

38 Whosoever, therefore, shall be ashamed of me and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, *when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

Matt. 25:31.

CHAPTER 9.

Transfiguration of Christ. Concerning Elijah; casts out a devil; foretells his death.

And he said unto them: *Verily I say unto you, there be some of them that stand here, who shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

Matt. 16:28; Luke 9:27; Dan. 2:44.

¶III

2 Now after six days *Jesus takes with him Peter, and James, and John, and leads them up into a high mountain apart by themselves; and he was transfigured before them.

Luke 9:28, &c.

3 And his raiment became shining, *exceeding white as snow, so as no fuller on earth can white them.

Matt. 28:3; Dan. 7:9.

4 And there appeared unto them Elijah with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus: Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them, and a voice came out of the cloud, saying: *This is my beloved Son! Hear him!

Matt. 3:17, &c.

8 And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no one any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

¶III

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, ques-

tioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

¶IV

11 Now they asked Jesus, saying: Why say the scribes that Elijah must first come?

12 And he answering told them: Elijah verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But *I say unto you, That Elijah is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

Matt. 11:14; Mal. 4: 5, 6.

¶V

14 And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him.

16 But he asked the scribes, What question ye with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered and said: Master, *I have brought unto thee my son, who has a dumb spirit. Matt. 17: 14; Luke 9:38.

18 And wheresoever it takes him, it tears him; and he foams, and gnashes with his teeth, and pines away: and I spake to thy disciples

that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 And he answered him, and said: O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him. And when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father: How long ago is it since this came unto him? And he said, From childhood.

22 And often it has cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him; but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him: If thou canst believe, *all things are possible to him that believes.

Luke 17:6; Mark 16:16.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears: Lord, I believe! help *thou mine unbelief.

Luke 17:5.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him: Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I command thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as

one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately: *Why could not we cast him out?

Matt. 17:19.

29 And Jesus said unto them: This kind can come forth by nothing, save by prayer and fasting.

¶VI

30 And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

31 And Jesus taught his disciples, and said unto them: *The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day. Matt. 17:22, &c.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

¶VII

33 And he came to Capernaum. And being in the house he asked them: What was it that ye disputed among yourselves in the way?

34 But they held their peace, for in the way they had disputed among themselves, *who should be the greatest. Matt. 18:1; Luke 9:46.

35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and said unto them: If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a little child, and set him in the midst of them. And when he had taken him *in his arms, he said unto them:

Matt. 19:13.

37 Whosoever shall receive one such little child in my name, receives me, and whosoever shall receive me, receives not me, but him that sent me.

¶VIII

38 And John answered him, saying: *Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he follows not us, and we forbade him, because he follows not us.

Luke 9:40; Numb. 21:27-29.

39 But Jesus said: Forbid him not, for there is no man *who shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. 1 Cor. 12:3.

40 For he *that is not against us is for us.

Matt. 12:30.

41 For whosoever shall give *you a cup of water to drink in my name because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

Matt. 10:42. &c

42 And *whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

Matt. 18:6.

43 And if thy hand *offend thee, cut it off. It is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the

†fire that never shall be quenched;

Matt. 5:30; Chap. 18:8; †Levi. 1:8.

44 Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.

Isa. 66:24.

45 And if thy foot *offend thee, cut it off. It is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched;

Matt. 18:8.

46 Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if *thine eye offend thee, pluck it out. It is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: Matt. 5:29.

48 Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, and every *sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

Lev. 2:13.

50 Salt is *good; but if the salt have lost its saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

Matt. 5:13; Luke 14:34.

CHAPTER 10.

Concerning divorcement; little children; Christ's sufferings; strife of disciples; blind Bartimeus.

Jesus arose from thence, and comes into the regions of Judea by *the farther side of Jordan, and the people resorted unto him and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

Matt. 19:1.

¶III

2 And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him: Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them: What did Moses command you?

4 And they said: *Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

Deut. 24:14; Matt. 5: 31, &c.

5 But Jesus answered and said unto them: For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation *God made them male and female.

Gen. 1:27, &c.

7 For this cause shall a *man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife,

Matt. 19:5.

8 And they twain *shall become one flesh, so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

1 Cor. 6:16.

9 What therefore *God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

Matt. 19:6.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

11 And he said unto them: Whosoever shall *put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

Matt. 5:32.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

Rom. 7:2, 3.

¶III

13 And *they brought little

children to him, that he should touch them. And his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

Matt. 19:13, 14; Luke 18:15.

14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them: Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, *Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

Matt. 18:3, &c.

16 And he took *them up in his arms, laying his hands upon them, and blessed them.

Chap. 6:39; †Matt. 19:15.

¶IV

17 And as he was gone forth into the way, there came *one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

Matt. 19:16; Luke 18:18; Acts 21:5.

18 And Jesus said unto him: Why callest thou me good? there is none good save one, that is, God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments: *Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

Exod. 20:12; Deut. 5:16, &c.

20 And he answered and said unto him: Master, all these things have I observed from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him: One thing thou lackest; go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt *have treasure in heaven, and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

Matt. 6:20; Luke 12:33.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved, for he had great possessions.

¶V

23 And *Jesus looked round about, and said unto his disciples: How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

Matt. 19:23; Mark 5:18-19;

Luke 18:24.

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answered again, and said unto them: Children, how hard is it for them that *trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

Ps. 62:10; 1 Tim. 6:17; Job 31:24.

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them said: With men it is impossible, but not with God, for *with God all things are possible.

Luke 1:37, &c.

¶VI

28 Then Peter began to say unto him: Lo, *we have

left all, and have followed thee.

Matt. 19:27; Luke 5:11; Chap. 18:28.

29 And Jesus answered and said: Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, *and the gospel's,

Rev. 14:6.

30 But he shall receive a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.

31 But *many that are first shall be last, and the last first.

Matt. 19:30; Chap. 20:16; Luke 13:30.

¶VII

32 And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before the Apostles, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them *what things should happen unto him,

Matt. 17:22, &c.

33 Saying: Behold, *we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles.

Matt. 16:21.

34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again.

¶VIII

35 And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, *came unto him, saying: Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall desire.

Matt. 20:20.

36 And he said unto them: What would ye that I should do for you?

37 They said unto him: Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them: *Ye know not what ye ask; can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? †and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

Matt. 20:22; †Luke 12:50.

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them: *Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of, and with the baptism that I am baptized with shall ye be baptized;

Acts 12:2.

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but it shall be given to them for whom it is *prepared.

Matt. 25:34.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

42 But Jesus called them to him, and said unto them: *Ye know that they which are appointed to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

Matt. 20:25; Luke 22:25, &c

43 But so shall it not be among you; but *whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister.

Chap. 9:35.

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, *shall be servant of all.

1 Peter 5:3.

45 For even the *Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

Matt. 20:28.

¶IX

46 Now they *came to Jericho. And as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the highway side begging.

Matt. 20:29, 30; Luke 18:35.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say: Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many rebuked him that he should hold his peace; but he cried the more saying: Jesus, Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they called the blind man, saying unto him: Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he, casting away his garment, rose, *and came to Jesus.

John 21:7.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him: What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blind man said unto him: Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him: Go thy way, *thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way. Heb. 11:17.

CHAPTER 11.

Christ's entry into Jerusalem; speaks to the fig tree; cleanseth the Temple.

And *when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sends forth two of his disciples.

Matt. 21:1; Luke 19:29; John 12:12.

2 And said unto them: Go your way into the village over against you; and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whercon never man sat; *loose him, and bring him. John 11:44.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without in a place where two ways met, and they loose him.

5 But certain of them that stood there said unto them: What do ye, loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded; and they let them go.

7 Then *they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sat upon him.

John 12:14; Zech. 3:3.

8 And many spread their garments upon the way, and

others cut down branches off the trees, and strewed them on the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying: Hosanna; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord;

John 12:13; Ps. 118:26; Ps. 148:1-4.

10 Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

11 And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple. And when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the *twelve.

Rev. 21:12, 14.

¶II

12 And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon, and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it: No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

Matt. 21:19.

¶III

15 And they came to Jerusalem: And Jesus *went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that sold doves;

Matt. 21:12; Jer. 7:11, &c

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

17 But he taught, saying unto them: Is it not written, *My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves. Isa. 56:7, &c.

18 And the scribes and chief priests *heard it, and sought how they might destroy him; for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine. Luke 19: 47, 48.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

§IV

20 But in the morning, as they passed by, they *saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. Matt. 21:20.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him: Rabbi, behold, the fig tree which *thou cursedst is withered away. Heb. 6:8.

22 And Jesus answering said unto them: Have faith in God.

23 For verily I say unto you, That *whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Matt. 17:20.

24 Therefore I say unto you, All things whatsoever ye desire, when ye pray, believe

that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

Matt. 7:7; Chap. 21:22; Luke 11:9.

25 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any; *that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. Ps. 32:1.

26 But if ye do *not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses. Matt. 6:15.

§V

27 And they came again to Jerusalem. And as Jesus was walking in the temple, *there came to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders. Matt. 21:28; Luke 20:1.

28 And they said unto him: *By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things? Exod. 2:14.

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them: I will also ask of you one question, answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptism of John, *was it from heaven, or of men? answer me. Matt. 3:11.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, *Why then did ye not believe him? Luke 7:30.

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people; for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot

tell. And Jesus answering said unto them: Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAPTER 12.

Parable of the vineyard; paying tribute. Resurrection; The greatest commandment: The scribes; the poor widow's mite.

And Jesus began to speak unto them in parables. *A certain man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.

Ps. 80:9; Isa. 5:1; Matt. 21:33.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruits of the vineyard.

3 But they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one son, his well beloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying: They will reverence my son.

Lev. 19:30.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves: *This is the heir, come let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

Ps. 2:2, 7; Matt. 26:3.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and *cast him out of the vineyard.

Heb. 13:12.

9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 Have ye not read this Scripture: *The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner;

Matt. 21:42, &c.; Eph. 2:20.

11 This was the *Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes?

Ps. 118:22, 23.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but *feared the people, for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them, and they left him, and went their way.

Matt. 14:5.

¶II

13 And they *sent unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

Matt. 22:5; Luke 20:20.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him: Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man; for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them: Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see it.

16 And they brought it. And he said unto them:

Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Caesar's.

17 And Jesus answering said unto them: Render unto Caesar the things *that are Caesar's, and unto God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him.

Rom. 13:7.

III

18..Then came unto him the Sadducees, which say *there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying:

Matt. 22:28; Luke 20:27.

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave a wife behind him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

Deut. 25:5-10; Matt. 22:24; Luke 20:28.

20 Now there were seven brethren. The first took a wife, and dying left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed; last of all the woman also died.

23 In the resurrection, therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering said unto them: Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For *when they shall rise from the dead, they

neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven.

Matt. 22:30.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

Exod. 3:6.

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living; ye therefore do greatly err.

IV

28 And one *of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him: Which is the first commandment of all?

Matt. 22:35; Luke 10:25.

29 And Jesus answered him: The first of all the commandments is, *Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord;

Deut. 6:4-9.

30 And *thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength; this is the first commandment.

Matt. 22:37; Luke 10:27.

31 And the second is like, namely this: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.

Lev. 19:18; Matt. 22:39; John 13:14. Rom. 13:9; Eph. 5:2; 1 Peter 1:22.

32 The scribe said unto him: Well, Master, thou hast said the truth, for there is

one God; *and there is none other but he. Isa. 45:5.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is much more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

1 Sam. 15:22, 23.

34 But when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him: Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

¶V

35 And Jesus answered and said, as he taught in the temple: *How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David? Matt. 22:42; Luke 20:41.

36 For David himself said' by the Holy Ghost, *The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

Ps. 110:1; Matt. 22:44.

37 David therefore himself called him Lord; and how is he then his son? And the common people heard him gladly.

¶VI

38 And he said unto them in his teachings: *Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market-places.

Matt. 23:8; Luke 11:43; 20:46.

39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the chief places at feasts,

40 Who *devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation.

Matt. 23:14; Exod. 22:22-24.

¶VII

41 And Jesus *sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury. And many that were rich cast in much. 2 Kings 12:9; Luke 21:1; 2 Kings 12:9.

42 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called unto him his *disciples, and said unto them: Verily I say unto you: This poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury; Matt. 5:1.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance, but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

CHAPTER 13.

Destruction of Jerusalem. The gospel to all nations. End of the world.

And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples said unto him: Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here!

2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? *there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

Luke 19:44, &c.

III

3 And *as he sat on the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, Luke 21:7.

4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them began to say: Take heed lest any man deceive you.

6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; *and shall deceive many. Jer. 14:14.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled, for these things must needs be; but the end shall not be yet.

8 For *nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines and troubles; these are the beginnings of sorrows. Matt. 24:7.

III

9 But take heed to yourselves, for they shall *deliver you up to councils, and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten. And ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

Matt. 24:9; Luke 21:12; John 8:2.

10 And the gospel must first be preached among all nations. Rom. 1:16.

11 But *when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand

what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate, but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye; for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.

Matt. 10:19; Luke 12:11.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake, but he that shall *endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. Matt. 24:13.

IV

14 But when ye shall *see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth understand,) then let them that be in Judea flee to the mountains,

Matt. 24:15; Dan. 9:27.

15 And let him *that is on the housetop not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house, Luke 17:31.

16 And let him that is in the field not return back again for to take up his garment.

17 But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those days shall be affliction, *such as was not from the beginning of the

creation which God created unto this time, neither shall be.

Dan. 12:1; Joel 2:2.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved; but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.

21 And then if *any man shall say unto you: Lo, here is Christ; or: lo, he is there; believe him not.

Matt. 24:23; Luke 17:23.

22 For false Christs and false prophets shall *arise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

Deut. 18:1; Matt. 24:24.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

¶V

24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

Joel. 2:31, 32.

26 And then shall they *see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

Dan. 7:13.

27 And then shall he *send forth his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

Matt. 13:41; Mark 16:14-16.

28 Now learn a parable of the *fig tree: When her

branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near.

Matt. 24:32.

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall *see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even at the doors.

Verse 14.

30 Verily I say unto you: this generation shall not pass, *till all these things be done.

Rev. 14:6.

31 *Heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words shall not pass away.

Matt. 24:36; Isa. 40:8.

¶VI

32 But of *that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not even the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

Matt. 24:36.

33 Take ye heed, watch and pray; for ye know not when the time is.

Matt. 25:13; Luke 12:40.

34 For the Son of man is as a *man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

Luke 19:12.

35 Watch ye therefore, for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrow, or in the morning,

36 Lest coming *suddenly he find you sleeping.

Rev. 22:7.

37 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch!

CHAPTER 14.

Christ anointed. The holy supper. Judas' betrayal. Peter's denial. Christ falsely accused, condemned by council.

Now after *two days was the feast of the passover, and of unleavened bread. And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

Matt. 26:2; Luke 22:1; John 13:1.

2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

¶II

3 And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, *as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard very precious; and she brake the box, and poured the ointment on his head.

Matt. 26:6; Luke 7:38; John 12:3.

4 And there were *some that had indignation within themselves, and said: Why was this waste of the ointment made?

Matt. 26:8.

5 For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

6 But Jesus said, Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye *have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good; but me ye have not always.

Deut. 15:11.

8 She hath done what she could, she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you: Wheresoever this *gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

Rev. 14:6, 7.

¶III

10 But *Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.

Matt. 26:14; Luke 22:3, 4.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

¶IV

12 On *the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover?

Matt. 26:17; Luke 22: 7, 8; Exod. 12: 14, 15.

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and said unto them: *Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water, follow him. Luke 22:8.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 So his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them, and they made ready the passover.

17 And *in the evening he came with the twelve.

Matt. 26:20; Rev. 21:12, 14.

18 But as they sat and did eat, Jesus said: *Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me.

Luke 22:21.

19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said unto them: It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.

¶V

22 And as they did eat, *Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said: Take, eat, this is my body.

Matt. 26:26;
Luke 22:19; 1. Cor. 11:23.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them, and they all drank of it.

24 And he said unto them: This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will *drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

1 Cor. 10:4.

¶VI

26 And when they had sung a hymn, they *went out unto the mount of Olives.

Matt. 26:30; Luke 22:39;
John 18:1.

27 And Jesus said unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night, for it is written, *I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

Zech. 13:7; Matt. 26:31; John 16:32.

28 But *after that I am risen I will go before you into Galilee.

Chap. 16:7; Matt. 26:32;
Chap. 28:10, 16.

29 But Peter said unto him: Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

30 And *Jesus said unto him: Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

Matt. 26:34; Luke 22:34;
John 13:38.

31 But Peter spake the more vehemently: If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 And they *came to a place which was named Gethsemane. And he said to his disciples: Sit ye here, while I shall pray.

Matt. 26:36; Luke 22:39;
John 18:1.

33 And he took with him Peter and James and John,

and began to be sore dismayed, and to be very heavy.

34 And said unto them: *My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death, abide ye here, and watch.

Matt. 26:38; John 12:27.

35 But he went forward a little, *and fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.

Luke 22:41.

36 And he said: Abba, Father, *all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me, nevertheless, †not what I will, but what thou wilt.

Luke 37:1; Rom. 8:15;

†Matt. 26:39; John 6:38.

37 And he came, and found them sleeping, and said unto Peter: Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one hour?

38 *Watch and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

Matt. 26:41; Chap. 24:41.

39 Again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy,) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he came the third time, and said unto them, *Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Matt. 26:45.

42 Arise, *let us go; lo, he that betrays me is at hand.

John 14:31.

¶VII

43 And immediately, while he yet spake, *came Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.

Matt. 26:47; Luke 22:47;

John 18:3.

44 Now he that betrayed him had given them *a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

Gen. 9:12, 13.

45 And as soon as he was come, he went straightway to him, and said: Master, Master; *and kissed him.

2 Sam. 20:9.

¶VIII

46 And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 But one of them that stood by drew a *sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

Matt. 26:51; Luke 22:50.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them: Are ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and with staves to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not, *but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

Ps. 69:10.

50 And they *all forsook him, and fled.

Job 19:13.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young men laid hold on him.

52 But he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

¶IX

53 And they *led Jesus away to the high priest. And with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.

Matt. 26:57; Luke 22:45;
John 18:13.

54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest, and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

55 And the *chief priests and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found none.

Matt. 26:59; Acts 6:13.

56 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.

57 Now there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, *I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.

John 2:19-22.

59 But neither so did their witness agree together.

60 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying: Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?

61 But *he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him: Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?

Isa. 53:7.

62 And Jesus said: I am! And *ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and ¶coming in the clouds of heaven.

Matt. 24:30; 26:64; ¶1 Thess. 4:16.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and said: What need we any further witnesses?

64 Ye have heard the blasphemy; what think ye? *And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

Jer. 26:11.

65 And some began *to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophecy. And the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

Matt. 26:67.

¶X

66 And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there came one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said: And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, saying: I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cock crew.

69 And the *maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

Matt. 26:71.

70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter: Surely thou art one of them; for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agrees thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying: I know not this man of whom ye speak.

72 And the second time the cock crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said unto him, *Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

Matt. 26:34; Luke 22:34.

CHAPTER 15.

Christ before Pilate; The crown of thorns, crucifixion, death and burial.

And *straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate. Matt. 27:1; Luke 22:66; John 18:28.

2 And Pilate asked him, *Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him: Thou sayest.

John 18:38; Ps. 2:23.

3 But the chief priests accused him of many things; but he answered nothing.

4 And Pilate asked him again, saying: *Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee. Matt. 27:18.

5 But Jesus yet answered *nothing, so that Pilate marvelled.

Isa. 53:7.

6 Now at that feast he *released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

Job 18:39; Deut. 15:1-15.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay

bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying: Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

10 For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate *answered and said again unto them: What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews?

John 18:38.

13 And they cried out again, Crucify him!

14 Then Pilate said unto them: Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more exceedingly: Crucify him!

15 And so Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

¶II

16 And the *soldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band.

Matt. 27:27.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and *platted a

crown of thorns, and put it about his head. John 19:2.

18 And began to salute him: Hail, King of the Jews!

19 And they *smote him on his head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees worshipped him. Matt. 26:67.

20 But *when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him. Matt. 27:31.

¶III

21 And they *compelled one Simon, a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross. Matt. 27:32; Luke 23:26.

22 And they brought him *unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. Matt. 27:33.

23 And they *gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received it not. Ps. 69:21.

24 Now when they had crucified him, *they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take. Ps. 22:18; Luke 23:34.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the *superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS. Matt. 27:37.

¶IV

27 But with him they crucify two thieves; the one on

his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which says: *And he was numbered with the transgressors. Isa. 53:12.

29 And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying: Ha! thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, John 2:19, &c.

30 *Save thyself, and come down from the cross. Luke 23:35.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified with him reviled him.

¶V

33 And when the sixth hour was come, *there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. Matt. 27:45; Luke 23:44.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying: *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Ps. 22:1; Matt. 27:46.

35 But some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said: Behold, he calleth Elijah.

36 And one ran and filled a sponge full of *vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave

him to drink, saying: Let alone, let us see whether Elijah will come to take him down. Pa. 69:21.

37 But Jesus cried with a *loud voice, and gave up the ghost. John 19:30.

38 And the *vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom. Matt. 27:51; Exod. 26:33.

¶VI

39 And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said: Truly this man was the Son of God. Matt. 27:54.

40 There *were also women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less, and of Joses, and Salome; Matt. 27:55.

41 Who also, *when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem. Luke 8:2.

¶VII

42 And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath,

43 Joseph of Arimathea, *an honourable counsellor, who also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus. Matt. 27:57; Luke 23:50; John 19:38.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead. And calling unto him the centur-

ion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 But when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he *bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre. Matt. 27:60.

47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses *beheld where he was laid. Matt. 27:61.

CHAPTER 16.

Christ's Resurrection and Ascension. His command to preach the gospel and to baptize. His ascension.

(Gospel on Easter Sunday 1-8.)

And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, bought spices, *that they might come and anoint him. Matt. 28:1; Luke 24:1.

2 And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4 Now when they looked up, they saw that the stone was rolled away, for it was very great.

5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw *a young man sitting on the

right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

Matt. 28:2, 3; Luke 24:4.

6 And he said unto them: Be not affrighted, ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified, *he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

Matt. 28:5.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter that he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him, *as he said unto you. Matt. 26:32.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled and were amazed, neither said they anything to any man, for they were afraid.

III

9 Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven devils.

10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

III

12 After that *he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

Luke 24:13.

13 And they went and told it unto the rest; neither believed they them.

IV

(Gospel on Ascension day 14-20.)

14 Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, *and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

Luke 24:36; 1 Cor. 15:5, 7.

15 And he said unto them: Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

Matt. 28:19; †Col. 1:28.

16 He that believeth *and is baptized shall be saved; †but he that believeth not shall be damned.

Acts 2:38; †John 3:18; Chap. 12:48.

17 And these signs shall follow them that *believe: In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with †new tongues;

Acts 16:18; †Chap. 2:8, 11;

Chap. 10:46; 1. Cor. 14:6.

18 They shall take up serpents; and if they *drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

Luke 10:19; Acts 28:5, 8.

IV

19 So then, after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was *received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

Luke 24:51; Acts 1:9.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, *and confirming the word with signs following.

Acts 3:16; 14:3; Heb. 2:4.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT LUKE

CHAPTER 1

John's Birth and Childhood. Visitation of Mary.

Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which have been most surely fulfilled among us.

2 Even as they *delivered them unto us, who from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;

Heb. 2:3; John 15:27.

3 It *seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

Acts 1:1; Chap. 17:4.

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

¶II

5 There was in the days of *Herod, king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the †course of Abia; and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

Matt. 2:1; †1 Chron. 24:10.

6 And they were both *pious before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

Job 1:1-3; 1 Kings 9:4; 2 Kings 20:3.

7 And they had no child, because that Elizabeth was barren; and they both were now well stricken in years.

¶III

8 Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest's office before God in the *order of his course,

1 Chron. 24:19.

9 According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to *burn incense, he went into the temple of the Lord.

Exod. 30:7; 1 Sam. 2:28.

10 The whole multitude of the people were praying *without at the hour of incense.

Lev. 16:17; 1 Kings 7:12.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the *altar of incense.

Exod. 30:1.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear *fell upon him.

Judges 18:6, 20; Dan. 10:7, 8.

13 But the angel said unto him: Fear not, Zacharias; for *thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

Acts 10:31.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and *many shall rejoice at his birth.

Verse 58.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither *wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his †very birth.

Judges 18:4; †Jer. 1:5; Gal. 1:15.

16 And *many of the chil-

dren of Israel shall he turn unto the Lord their God.

Mal. 4:5, 6.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the *hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. Mal. 4:5; Matt. 11:14.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel: Whereby shall I know this? for *I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. Gen. 17:17.

19 And the angel answering said unto him: I am *Gabriel, that stand in the presence of †God; and was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these glad tidings. Dan. 8:16; Chap. 9:21; †1 Kings 17:1; Ps. 103:20; Rev. 7:11.

IV

20 And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them. And they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

23 And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of

his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his *own house.

Verses 39:40; 2 Sam. 11:10, 11.

24 And after those days his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying:

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

IV

(Gospel on the day of Annunciation, 26-38.)

26 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin *betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David. The virgin's name was Mary. Chap. 2:5; Matt. 1:18;

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said: Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee; blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this could be.

30 And the angel said unto her: Fear not, Mary; for thou hast found favour with God.

31 Behold, thou shalt *conceive, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name †Jesus. Isa. 7:14, &c.; †Matt. 1:21.

Verse 24.

32 He shall be great, and shall be *called the Son of

the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him †the throne of his father David;

Isa. 9:7; †2 Sam. 7:12.

33 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his *kingdom there shall be no end.

Dan. 4:34; Chap. 7:14; Micha 4:7.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel: How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered and said unto her: The *Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee; therefore also that †Holy One who shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.

Matt. 1:18; †Dan. 9:24.

36 And, behold, thy kinswoman Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her, *who was called barren.

Isa. 54:6.

37 For with *God nothing shall be impossible.

Gen. 18:14; Job. 42:2; Ps. 135:5, 6; Jer. 32:16, 17; Zech. 8:6; Luke 18:27; Rom. 4:21.

38 And Mary said: Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

¶VI

(Gospel on the day of Visitation, 39-56.)

39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the *hill country with haste, into a city of Judah, Jos. 21:11.

40 And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to pass, when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped *within her; and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost;

Verse 15.

42 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said: *Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy body.

Verse 28. Judges 5:24.

43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come unto me?

44 For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped within me for joy.

45 And *blessed art thou who hast believed that there shall be a fulfillment of those things which were told unto thee from the Lord.

Chap. 11:28; John 20:29.

¶VII

46 And Mary said: My soul doth magnify the Lord,

Exod. 15:2; 1 Sam. 2:1.

47 And *my spirit hath rejoiced in God †my Saviour.

1 Sam. 2:1; †Hab. 3:18.

48 For he hath *looked upon the low estate of his handmaiden; for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me †blessed.

Ps. 113: 5, 6; *Gen. 30:13.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to me *great things; and holy is his name.

Ps. 126:2, 3; Ps. 71:19.

50 And *his mercy is on them that fear him from generation to generation.

Exod. 20:6; Chap. 34:6, 7; Ps. 25:6. Ps. 100:5; Ps. 103:13, 17.

51 He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

52 He hath put *down the †mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

Ps. 147:6; †1 Sam. 2:7, 8; 2 Sam. 8:21, 22; Job. 5:11.

53 He hath filled the *hungry with †good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away.

Ps. 34:11; Ps. 107:9; Matt. 5:3, 6; †John 10:11; Eph. 1:3.

54 He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy;

55 As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, *and to his seed forever.

Gen. 17:7, 19; Chap. 18:18.

¶VIII

56 And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

¶IX

(Gospel on St. John's day, 57-80.)

57 Now Elizabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son.

58 And her neighbours and her kinfolks heard that the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to pass, that on the *eighth day they came to circumcise the child. And they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

Gen. 17:12; Lev. 12:3.

60 And his mother answered and said: Not so, *but he shall be called John.

Verse 13.

61 And they said unto her: There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signs to his father, what he would have him called.

63 And he asked for a writing tablet and wrote, saying: *His name is John. And they marvelled all. Verse 13.

64 And his mouth was opened *immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

Mark 7:35; Luke 1:20.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them; and all these things were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judea.

66 And all they that heard them *laid them up in their hearts saying, What manner of child shall this be? And the †hand of the Lord was with him.

Ezek. 1:3; Chap. 3:22; †Gen. 39:2; Acts 11:21.

¶X

67 And his father Zacharias was *filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying:

2 Peter 1:21.

68 Blessed *be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed †his people,

Ps. 72:18; Ps. 41:13;

†Matt. 1:21; Ps. 111:9.

69 And hath raised up a horn *of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;

Ps. 132:17.

70 As he *spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began.

Isa. 35:4; Jer. 23:6; Acts 3:21.

71 That we **should* be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; Ps. 106:10.

72 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy **covenant*, Gen. 17:7; Lev. 26:42.

73 The **oath* which he sware to our father Abraham, Gen. 22:16; Micha. 7:20.

74 That he would grant unto us, that we, being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, might **serve* him without fear, all the days of our life.

Gal. 1:4; Titus 2:12, 14; Heb. 9:14.

75 In **holiness* and righteousness before him.

Col. 1:22; Jer. 32:39.

76 And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest, for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to **prepare* his ways;

Matt. 3:3; 11:10; Isa. 40:3.

77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people for the **remission* of their sins,

Jer. 31:34; Mark 1:4.

78 Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the **dayspring* from on high hath visited us, Numb. 24:17;

Mal. 4:2; Isa. 11:1.

79 To give light to them **that* sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

Isa. 9:2; Matt. 4:16.

¶XI

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

CHAPTER 2

Birth of Christ. Circumcision, Presentation. First visit in Temple. (Gospel on Christmas day, 1-14.)

Now it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

2 **And* this taxing was the very first, made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.

Acts 5:37.

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is **called* Bethlehem, because he was of the house and lineage of David.

Micha. 5:2;

1 Sam. 16:1, 4; Matt. 1:16; Chap. 1:27.

5 To be taxed with Mary, **his* betrothed wife, being great with child.

Chap. 1:27; Matt. 1:18; Chap. 1:27.

6 And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.

7 And she **brought* forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

Matt. 1:25.

¶II

8 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

9 And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone

round about them; *and they were sore afraid. Chap. 1:12.

10 And the angel said unto them: Fear not; for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy *which shall be for all people.

Verse 31, 32. Gen. 12:3; Matt. 28:19

11 For *unto you is born this day in the city of David a †Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

Isa. 9:8; †Matt. 1:21; Acts 2:36.

12 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the *heavenly host praising God, and saying:

Dan. 7:10; Gen. 28:12; Ps. 103:20.

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth *peace, good will toward men.

Isa. 57:19; Luke 19:38;

Eph. 2:14:17.

(Gospel 2. On Christmas day, 15-20.)

15 And it came to pass, as the angels went away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing *which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

Exod. 3:3.

16 And they came with haste, *and found both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. Matt. 2:11.

17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying *which was told them concerning this child.

Verses 10, 11.

18 And all they that heard it wondered at those things

which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary *kept all these sayings, and pondered them in her heart.

Verse 51, Chap. 1:66; Gen. 37:11.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

III

(Gospel on New Year's day, verse 21.)

21 And when *eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, †who was so named by the angel before he was conceived. Gen. 17:12; †Chap. 1:31.

(Gospel on day of Mary's purification, 22-32.)

22 And when the days of her purification according to the *law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord;

Lev. 12:2, &c.

23 As it is written in the law of the Lord: *Every male that is first-born shall be called holy to the Lord;

Ex. 13:2; Ex. 22:29; Ex. 34:19.

24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the *law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons. Lev. 12:8.

IV

25 And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the *consolation of Israel; and the Holy Ghost was upon him.

Gen. 5:29; Isa. 40:1.

26 And it had been revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should *not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ.

Ps. 89:48; Heb. 11:9.

27 And he came *by the Spirit into the temple; and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,

Matt. 4:1.

28 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said:

29 Lord, *now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word;

Gen. 46:30; Phil. 1:23.

30 For mine eyes have seen *thy salvation,

Chap. 8:6; Isa. 52:10.

31 Which thou hast prepared *before the face of all people;

Isa. 11:10; Chap. 41:6.

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

Isa. 9:2;

Chap. 46:6; Chap. 60:1. 2.

(Gospel Sunday after Christmas, 33-40.)

33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken concerning him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother: Behold, this child is *set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against,

Isa. 8:14; 28:16;

Matt. 21:42; Rom. 9:33.

35 Yea, *a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also; that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

Ps. 42:10; John 10:25.

¶V

36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, and had lived with a husband seven years from her virginity:

37 And she was a *widow for about fourscore and four years, who †departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day;

1 Tim. 5:5; †1 Sam. 1:22.

38 She, coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that *looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

Verse 25. Matt. 15:43; 24:21.

¶VI

39 And when they had accomplished all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

40 And the child *grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

Verse 52. Chap. 1:80.

¶VII

(Gospel 1. Sunday after Epiphany, 41-52.)

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem *every year at the feast of the passover.

Exod. 23: 15, 17.

42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom *of the feast.

Exod. 34:24; Deut. 16:16.

43 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Jo-

seph and his mother knew it not.

44 But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to pass, after three days, they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And *all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

Matt. 22:33; Chap. 7:28;
Mark 1:22.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed. And his mother said unto him: Son, *why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

Gen. 12:18.

49 And he said unto them: How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?

John 4:34.

50 And they *understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

Chap. 9:45; 18:34.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them; but his mother *kept all these sayings in her heart.

Verse 19. Gen. 37:11; Dan. 7:28.

52 And Jesus *increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

Verse 40. 1 Sam. 2:26.

CHAPTER 3

John preaches repentance. His testimony of Christ. Baptism of Christ. Genealogy.

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being Governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene,

2 *Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

John 11:49, 51; Acts 4:6.

3 And he came into all the *country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance unto remission of sins;

Matt. 3:1-2; Mark 1:4.

4 As it is written in the book of the words of *Isaiah the prophet, saying: The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

Isa. 40:3; Matt. 3:3; Mark 1:3.

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth;

6 And all flesh shall see the *salvation of God.

Isa. 52:10; Ps. 98:2.

¶II

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him; *O generation of vipers, who hath

warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Matt. 3:7.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father; for I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9 And even *now the ax is laid unto the root of the trees; every tree, therefore, which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Matt. 3:10, &c.; Matt. 7:19.

10 And the people asked him, saying: *What shall we do then? Acts 2:37.

11 He answered and said unto them: He that hath *two coats, let him give to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

1 John 3:17; 2 Cor. 8:14.

12 Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him: Master, what shall we do?

13 And *he said unto them: Exact no more than that which is appointed you.

Matt. 21:31; Chap. 7:29.

14 And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying: And what shall we do? And he said unto them: Do *violence to no man, neither accuse any one falsely; and be content with your wages.

Lev. 19:13; Exod. 23:1.

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not,

16 John answered, saying unto them all: I indeed *baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose; he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire,

Matt. 3:11.

17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and *will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

Micah 4:12; Matt. 13:30.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 But *Herod the tetrarch, being reprov'd by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

Mark 6:17, &c.; Matt. 14:3.

20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up *John in prison.

Matt. 11:12.

¶III

21 Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized; while he was praying, *the heaven was opened, Matt. 3:16; Mark 1:10; John 1:32.

22 And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said: *Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased.

Chap. 9:35;

Matt. 3:17; Mark 1:11.

¶IV

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being as was sup-

posed, the son of Joseph, who was the son of Heli,

24 Who was the son of Matthat, who was the son of Levi, who was the son of Melchi, who was the son of Janna, who was the son of Joseph.

25 Who was the son of Mattathias, who was the son of Amos, who was the son of Nahum, who was the son of Esli, who was the son of Nagge,

26 Who was the son of Maath, who was the son of Mattathias, who was the son of Semei, who was the son of Joseph, who was the son of Judah.

27 Who was the son of Joanna, who was the son of Rhesa, who was the son of Zerobabel, who was the son of Salathiel, who was the son of Neri,

28 Who was the son of Melchi, who was the son of Addi, who was the son of Cosam, who was the son of Elmodam, who was the son of Er,

29 Who was the son of Jose, who was the son of Eliezer, who was the son of Jorim, who was the son of Matthat, who was the son of Levi,

30 Who was the son of Simeon, who was the son of Judah, who was the son of Joseph, who was the son of Jonan, who was the son of Eliakim,

31 Who was the son of Melea, who was the son of

Menan, who was the son of Mattatha, who was the son of *Nathan, who was the son of David, 2 Sam. 5:14; Zech. 12:12.

32 Who was the son of *Jesse, who was the son of Obed, who was the son of Boaz, who was the son of Salmon, who was the son of Nahshon,

Ruth 4:22; 1 Chron. 2:10, &c.

33 Who was the son of Aminadab, who was the son of Aram, who was the son of Esrom, who was the son of Phares, who was the son of *Judah,

Gen. 29:35.

34 Who was the son of Jacob, who was the son of Isaac, who was the *son of Abraham, who was the †son of Thara, who was the son of Nahor.

Gen. 21:2, 8;

†Gen. 11:26; 1 Chron. 1:26, 27.

35 Who was the son of Serug, who was the son of Reu, who was the son of Peleg, who was the son of Eber, who was the son of Sala.

36 Who was the son of Cainan, who was the son of Arphaxad, who was the *son of Shem, who was the son of Noah, who was the †son of Lamech.

Gen. 11:11; †Gen. 5:25.

37 Who was the son of Mathusala, who was the son of Enoch, who was the son of Jared, who was the son of Mahaleel, who was the son of Cainan.

38 Who was the son of Enos, who was the *son of Seth, who was the son of Adam, who was of God.

Gen. 5:3.

CHAPTER 4

Temptation of Christ. His preaching and his miracles.

And *Jesus full of the Holy Ghost, returned from the Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Matt. 4:1, &c.; Mark 1:12.

2 Being *forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing; and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

Exod. 34:28; 1 Kings 19:3.

3 And the devil said unto him: If thou art the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, saying: It is *written, man does not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

Deut. 8:3.

5 And the devil, taking him up into a high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said unto him: All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them; for *that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will, I give it.

John 12:31; 14:30; Rev. 18:2, 7.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

8 Jesus answered and said unto him: Get thee behind me, Satan, for it is *written; thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

Deut. 6:13; Chap. 10:12, 20.

9 And he *brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him: If thou art

the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence; Matt. 4:5.

10 For it is *written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee;

Ps. 91:11.

11 And in their *hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Ps. 91:12.

12 And Jesus answering said unto him: It is said, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Deut. 6:16.

13 And when the devil had completed all the temptations, he departed from him for a *season.

John 14:30; Heb. 4:15.

¶II

14 And *Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

Matt. 4:12; John 4:43.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

¶III

16 And *he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up; and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and †stood up to read.

Matt. 13:54; Mark. 6:1;

†Neh. 8:4, 5; Acts 13:14.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written:

18 The *Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the

gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,

Isa. 61:1.

19 To preach the *acceptable year of the Lord.

Lev. 25:10.

20 And he closed the book, and gave it to the attendant, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them: This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.

22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said: *Is not this Joseph's son?

Matt. 13:35;

Mark 6:3; John 6:41.

23 And he said unto them: Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself; whatsoever we have heard done in *Capernaum, do also here in thine own country.

Matt. 4:13.

24 And he said: Verily, I say unto you, *No prophet is accepted in his own country.

25 But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the *days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land;

1 Kings 17:1, 9; James 5:17.

26 But unto none of them was Elijah sent, save unto

Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, *saving Naaman the Syrian.

2 Kings 5:14.

III

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the edge of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong.

30 But *he, passing through the midst of them, went his way,

John 8:59; 10:39.

31 And *came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbath day.

Matt. 4:13;

Mark 1:21; John 2:12.

32 And they were *astonished at his doctrine; for his word was with power.

Matt. 7:28, 29; Chap. 22:33;

John 7:46.

IV

33 And in the *synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean devil, which cried out with a loud voice,

Mark 1:23.

34 Saying: Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God.

Mark 1:24; Luke 1:35;

Ps. 16:10.

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying: Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying: What a word is this! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

¶VI

38 And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into *Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother was taken with a great fever; and they besought him for her.

Matt. 8:14, &c.; Mark 1:29.

39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministered unto them.

¶VII

40 Now when the sun was setting, all they that had *any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

Matt. 8:16; Mark 1:32.

41 And *devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying: Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak, for they knew that he was Christ.

Mark 1:34; †Verse 34:35.

42 And *when it was day, he departed and went into a

desert place; and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

Mark 1:35.

43 And he said unto them: I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore was I sent.

44 And he *preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

Mark 1:39.

CHAPTER 5

Peter's draught of fishes. Christ heals a leper and one sick of the palsy. Matthew called.

(Gospel 5. Sunday after Trinity, 1-11.)

Now it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the *lake of Gennesaret,

Mark 1:16; Matt. 4:18.

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake, but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people from the ship.

¶II

4 And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, *Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

John 21:6.

5 And Simon answering said unto him: Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing; never-

theless at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes in their net.

7 And they beckoned unto their partners, who were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 But when Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying: *Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.

2 Sam. 6:9; 1 Kings 17:18.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken,

10 And so was also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon: Fear not; *from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

Matt. 4:19; Mark 1:17.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they *forsook all, and followed him.

Matt. 19:27; Mark 1:18.

¶III

12 And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, *behold a man full of leprosy; who seeing Jesus fell on his face, and besought him, saying: Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

Matt. 8:2; Mark 1:40.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, say-

ing: I will, be thou clean! And immediately the leprosy departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man, but go, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as *Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

Lev. 14:2, &c.; 10:21, 23.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him. And great *multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities. Matt. 4:25; John 6:2.

16 And he withdrew himself into the *wilderness, and prayed. Mark 1:35; Mark 6:46.

¶IV

17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, who were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem, and the power of the Lord was present to heal every one.

¶V

18 And, behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with *paralysis, and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

Matt. 9:2; Mark 2:3; Acts 9:33.

19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went up to the housetop, and let him down through the tiling with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw *their faith, he said unto him: Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

Luke 7:48.

21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, Saying: Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who *can forgive sins, but God alone?

Matt. 9:3; Isa. 43:25.

22 But Jesus perceived their thoughts, answered, and said unto them: What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier, to say: *Thy sins are forgiven thee, or to say: Rise up and walk?

Matt. 9:5.

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, he said unto the sick man: I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house.

25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying: We have seen strange things today.

¶VI

27 And after these things he went forth, and *saw a publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom; and he said unto him: Follow me.

Matt. 9:9; Mark 2:14.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And *Levi made him a

great feast in his house: And there was a great company of publicans and of others that sat at meat with them.

Matt. 9:10; Mark 2:16.

30 But the Scribes and Pharisees *murmured against his disciples, saying: Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners?

Chap. 7:39.

31 And Jesus answering said unto them: They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick.

32 I came *not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Matt. 9:13; 1 Tim. 1:15.

¶VII

33 And they said unto him: *Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees, but thine eat and drink?

Matt. 9:14; Mark 2:18.

34 And Jesus said unto them: Can ye make the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, then shall they fast in those days.

¶VIII

36 And he spake also a parable unto them: No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old garment, otherwise the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth

new wine into old bottles of skins; else the new wine will burst the skins, and be spilled, and the skins shall perish. Matt. 9:17; Mark 2:22.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles of skin; and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new; for he saith, the old is better.

CHAPTER 6

Christ teaches concerning the Sabbath. Heals the man with the withered hand. The apostles called. Christ's sermon on the mount.

And it came to pass on and after Sabbath, that he went through the grain fields; and his disciples plucked the ears of grain, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

Matt. 12:1; Mark 2:23.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them: Why do ye that *which is not lawful to do on the Sabbath days?

Exod. 20:10.

3 And Jesus answering them said: Have ye not read even so much as this, what *David did, when he himself was hungry, and they which were with him? 1 Sam. 21:6.

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the *shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him; †which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests alone? 1 Sam. 21:6; †Exod. 29:33; Lev. 24:9.

5 And he said unto them: The *Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath. Matt. 12:18.

¶II

6 And it came to pass on another Sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught. And there was a *man whose right hand was withered.

Mark 3:1, &c.; John 9:16.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the Sabbath; that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man that had the withered hand: Rise, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them: I will ask you one thing: Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man: Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 But they were filled with madness, and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

¶III

12 *And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

Matt. 14:23.

13 And when it was day, he *called unto him his disciples; and of them he chose

twelve, whom also he named apostles:

Chap. 9:1; Mark 3:13, 14.

14 Simon, *whom he named Peter, and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

John 1:42.

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes,

16 And Judas the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, who was the traitor.

¶IV

17 And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great *multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases, Matt. 4:25; Mark 3:7.

18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits came, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude *sought to touch him, for †there went power out of him, and healed them all.

Matt. 14:26; †Mark 5:30.

20 And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said: *Blessed are ye poor, for yours, is the kingdom of

†poor Matt. 5:3, &c.; James 2:5.

21 Blessed are ye that *hunger now; for ye shall be filled. †Blessed are ye that weep now; for ye shall laugh. Rev. 7:16; †Ps. 126:5, 6; Isa. 61:3.

22 Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from

their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.

23 *Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy; for, behold, your reward is great in heaven; †for in like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. Acts 5:41; Col. 1:24.

†Acts 7:51.

¶V

24 But woe *unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. Amos 6:1;

James 5:1; Matt. 6:2, 5.

25 Woe unto you that *are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. Isa. 10:16; 66:13.

26 Woe unto you, *when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

John 15:19; 1. John 4:3.

¶VI

27 But I say unto you that hear, Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you,

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them *that despitefully use you.

Chap. 23:34; Acts 7:60.

29 And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and from him that taketh away thy cloak withhold not thy coat also. Matt. 5:39; 1 Cor. 6:7.

30 Give to the one *that asketh thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.

Deut. 15:7, 8, 10; Matt. 5:42.

31 And *as ye would that

men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

Matt. 7:12.

32 For if ye love *them that love you, what thanks have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.

Matt. 5:46.

33 And if ye do good to them that do good to you, what thanks have ye? for sinners also do even the same.

34 And if ye *lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thanks have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.

Lev. 25:35; Matt. 5:42.

35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, *and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest; for he is kind even also unto the unthankful and to the evil.

Ps. 37:26; Matt. 5:45.

(Gospel 4. Sunday after Trin.
36-42.)

36 Be ye *therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

Matt. 5:48.

37 Judge not, *and ye shall not be judged; condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned; forgive, and ye shall be forgiven;

Matt. 7:1.

38 Give, *and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same †measure that ye mete with it shall be measured to you again.

Prov. 19:17; Ps.
97:12; †Mark 4:24, &c.

¶VII

39 And he spake a parable unto them: *Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

Matt. 15:14.

40 The disciple is *not above his master; but every one when he has been perfected shall be as his master. John 15:20, &c.; Matt. 10:24.

41 And *why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

Matt. 7:3.

42 Or how canst thou say to thy brother: Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? *Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

Matt. 7:3; Prov. 18:17.

43 For a *good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

Matt. 7:16, 17; 12:33.

44 For every tree is known by its own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

45 A *good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil; for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh, Matt. 12:35.

¶VIII

46 And *why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

Matt. 7:21; Mal. 1:6.

47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my words, *and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like;

Rom. 2:13; James 1:22, &c.

48 He is like a man which built a house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock; and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it; for it was founded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built a house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.

CHAPTER 7

The Centurion's servant healed; Young man at Nain raised; John answered; Jesus anointed by Mary Magdalene.

Now when he had ended all his sayings in the hearing of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

2 And *a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.

Matt. 8:5.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying: That he was

worthy for whom he should do this;

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him: Lord, trouble not thyself, *for I am not worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof,

Matt. 8:8.

7 Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee; but say the word, and my servant shall be healed.

8 For I am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and if I say unto this man: Go, he goeth; and to another, Come, he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, he doeth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him: I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

¶III

(Gospel 16. Sunday after Trin. 11-17.)

11 And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, be-

hold, there was a dead man carried out, *the only son of his mother, and she was a widow. And much people of the city was with her.

1 Kings 17:17.

13 And when the Lord saw her, *he had compassion on her, and said unto her: †Weep not.

Matt. 9:36; †Jer. 31:16.

14 And he came nigh, and touched the bier; and they that bare him stood still. And he said: *Young man, I say unto thee, Arise! Chap. 8:54; Mark 5:41; Acts 9:40.

15 And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. *And he gave him to his mother.

2 Kings 4:36.

16 *And there came a fear on all; and they glorified God, saying: †A great prophet is risen up among us; and, God hath visited his people. Chap. 1:68; †Chap. 24:19.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

¶III

18 And *the disciples of John told him of all these things.

Matt. 11:2, &c.

19 And John calling unto him two of his disciples sent them to Jesus, saying: Art thou he that should come? or look we for another?

20 And when the men were come unto him, they said: John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying: Art thou he that should come? or look we for another?

21 And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight.

22 Then Jesus answering said unto them: Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard: *The blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised and to the poor the gospel is preached. Matt. 11:5; Isa. 35:5.

23 And *blessed is he, who-soever shall not be offended in me.

Matt. 11:6.

24 And when the *messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John: What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind?

Matt. 11:7.

25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts.

26 But what went ye out to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.

27 This is he, of whom it is written: *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee.

Mal. 3:1; Matt. 11:10; Mark 1:2.

28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women there is not a greater *prophet than John the Baptist, but he that is

least in the kingdom of God is greater than he. Chap. 1:15.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, *being baptized with the baptism of John.

Matt. 3:5, 16.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers *despised the counsel of God within themselves, being not baptized of him.

Acts 13:46; 20:27.

III

31 And the Lord said: *Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

Mat. 11:16.

32 They are like unto children sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another, and saying: We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For *John the Baptist came, neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say: He hath a devil.

Matt. 3:4; Mark 1:6.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say: Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners!

35 *But wisdom is justified of all her children. Matt. 11:19.

IV

(Gospel on Day of Mary Magdalene, 36-50.)

36 *And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. Matt. 26:6 Mark 14:3: John 11:2.

37 And, behold, a woman in the city, who was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 And standing at his feet behind him weeping, she began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying: *This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him, for she is a sinner.

Chap. 15:2.

40 And Jesus answering said unto him: Simon, I have something to say unto thee. And he saith: Master, say on.

41 And he said: There was a certain creditor which had two debtors, the one owed five hundred *pence, and the other fifty.

Matt. 18:28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he freely forgave them *both. Tell me, therefore, which of them will love him most?

Col. 2:13.

43 Simon answered and said: I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon: Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, *thou gavest me no water for

my feet; but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

Gen. 18:4.

45 Thou gavest me *no kiss; but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet.

Rom. 16:16.

46 *My head with oil thou didst not anoint; but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

Ps. 23:5.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, *Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much; but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

1 Tim. 1:14.

48 And he said unto her: *Thy sins are forgiven.

Matt. 9:2.

49 And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves: *Who is this man that forgiveth sins also?

Matt. 9:3; Mark 2:7.

50 And Jesus said unto the woman: *Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

Chap. 8:48; 17:19; Mark 5:34.

CHAPTER 8

The seed of the Word. Fury of the sea; the sick woman and the daughter of Jairus.

And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout the cities and villages, preaching and showing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God. And the twelve were with him.

2 And *certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, Mary 15:40; 16:9; Matt. 27:55, 56.

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who ministered unto him of their substance.

III

(Gospel Sunday. Sexagesimac. 4-15.)

4 And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake *by a parable: Matt. 13:3; Mark 4:2.

5 A sower went out to sow his seed; and as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit *a hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried: He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Gen. 26:12.

9 And his *disciples asked him, saying: What might this parable be?

Matt. 13:10; Mark 4:10.

10 And he said: Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; but to others in parables; *that seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand.

Isa. 6:9, 10; Matt. 13:14; Mark 4:12; John 12:40; Acts 28:26.

11 Now the parable is this: *The seed is the word of God. Matt. 13:18; Mark 4:14.

12 Those by the way side are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, that they may not believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock are they, who, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, who for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns are they, who, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground are they, who in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, *keep it, and bring †forth fruit with patience.

Acts 16:14; †Heb. 10:36.

¶III

16 No man, when he hath *lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

Matt. 5:15;
Mark 4:21; Chap. 11:33.

17 For nothing *is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.

Matt. 10:26; Mark 4:22.

18 Take heed, therefore, how ye hear, for whosoever hath, *to him shall be given;

and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he seemeth to have.

Matt. 13:12, &c.; 25:29; 19:26.

¶IV

19 Then came to him *his mother and his brethren, and could not come to him for the people. Matt. 12:46; Mark 3:31.

20 And it was told him by certain ones who said: *Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

Mark 3:32.

21 But Jesus answered and said unto them: My *mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

John 15:14.

¶V

22 Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went *into a ship with his disciples; and he said unto them: Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth.

Matt. 8:23; Mark 4:36, &c.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep: And there came down a wind storm on the lake; and the ship was filling with water, and they were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying: Master, Master, we perish! Then he arose, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the waves, and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them: Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another: What

manner of man is this? for he *commandeth even the winds and the waves and they obey him. Matt. 8:26.

¶VI

26 And they arrived *at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

Matt. 8:28; Mark 5:1.

27 And when he went *forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, who had devils for a long time, and wore no clothes, neither abode he in any house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, he fell down before him, and cried with a loud voice, saying: *What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not. Matt. 8:29.

29 For he commanded the unclean spirit to come out from the man. For oftentimes it had caught him; and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.

30 And Jesus asked him: What is thy name? And he said, Legion; because many devils were entered into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out *into the deep. Rev. 20:3.

32 And there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the mountain. And they besought him that he would allow them to enter into the swine. And he allowed them.

33 Then came the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine. And the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were drowned.

34 When they that had fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country.

35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

36 They also who saw it told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was made whole.

¶VII

37 Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought Jesus to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear. *And he went into the ship, and returned back again.

Matt. 8:34; Acts 16:39.

38 But the man, out of whom the devils were departed, *besought Jesus that he might be with him. But Jesus sent him away, saying:

Mark 5:18.

39 Return to thine own house, and show what great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city what great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to pass, that, when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him; for they were all waiting for him.

¶VIII

41 And, behold, *there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue. And he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him that he would come into his house.

Matt. 9:18; Mark 5:22.

42 For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay dying. But as he went the people thronged him.

¶IX

43 And a *woman having an issue of blood twelve years, who had spent all her living on physicians, neither could she be healed of any,

Mark 5:25, &c.; Matt. 9:20.

44 Came behind him, and touched the border of his garment; and immediately the issue of her blood ceased.

45 And Jesus said: Who touched me? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him said: Master, the multitude throng thee and press thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said: Somebody hath touched me, for I perceive that *power is gone out of me. Mark 5:30; Chap. 6:19.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all

the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her: Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. Go in peace!

¶X

49 While he *yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying: Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master.

Matt. 9:18; Mark 5:35.

50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying: Fear not; *believe only, and she shall be made whole.

Mark 5:36.

51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her; but he said: *Weep not, she is not dead but sleepeth.

Chap. 7:13; John 11:11, 13.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying: Maid, *arise! Chap. 7:14; John 11:43.

55 And her spirit returned, and she arose straightway; and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished; *but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

Chap. 5:14; Mark 7:36; 17:43.

CHAPTER 9

Sending out the Apostles, feeding 5,000 with five loaves of bread. Transfiguration. Suffering foretold. Christ teaches the disciples.

Then *he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases. Matt. 10:1; Mark 6:7.

2 And he *sent them forth to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

Matt. 10:7; Mark 6:12.

3 And he said unto them: *Take nothing for your journey, neither staffs, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece.

Matt. 10:9.

4 And *whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, until ye depart.

Chap. 10:5, 6, 7.

5 And *whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out from that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

Chap. 10:11; Acts 13:51.

6 And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing everywhere.

¶¶¶

7 Now Herod the tetrarch *heard of all that was done by him; and he was perplexed, because that it was said by some, that John had risen from the dead.

Matt. 14:1; Mark 6:14.

8 And by some, that Elias had appeared; and by others, that one of the old prophets had risen again.

9 And Herod said: John I beheaded, but who is this,

of whom I hear such things?

*And he desired to see him.

Chap. 23:8.

¶¶¶

10 And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done. And he took them, and went aside *privately into a desert place belonging to a city called Bethsaida.

Matt. 14:13; Mark 6:30.

11 And the people, when they knew it, followed him, and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 And when the day began to wear away, *came the twelve, and said unto him: Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals, for we are here in a desert place.

Matt. 14:15; John 6:1, 3.

13 But he said unto them: Give ye them to eat. And they said: We have no more than five loaves and two fishes, except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples: Make them sit down by fifties in each company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they *did eat, and were all filled. And there was taken up of fragments that remained over to them twelve baskets. 2 Kings 4:44.

III

18 And it came to pass, as he was praying alone, his disciples were with him, and he asked them, saying: *Who say the people that I am?

Matt. 16:13; Mark 8:27.

19 They answering said, *John the Baptist; but some Elijah; and others, that one of the old prophets is risen again. Matt. 14:2; Mark 6:14.

20 And he said unto them: But who say ye that I am? Peter answering said: *The Christ of God. Matt. 16:16;

Mark 8:29; John 6:69.

21 And he straitly charged them, and commanded them to tell this to no man;

22 Saying: *The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

Matt. 17:22; 10:17, 18.

IV

23 And he said to them all: *If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. Matt. 16:24;

Mark 8:34; Chap. 14:27.

24 For whosoever *would save his life shall lose it; but whosoever would lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. Chap. 17:33.

25 For what is a man *profited, if he gain the whole

world, and lose himself, or forfeit his own self?

Matt. 16:26; Mark 8:36.

26 For *whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels. Matt. 10:33;

Luke 12:9; 2 Tim. 2:12.

27 But I tell you of a truth, *there are some standing here, who shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

Matt. 16:28; Mark 9:1.

VI

28 And *it came to pass about eight days after these things, that he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

Matt. 17:1; Mark 9:2.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistening.

30 And, behold, there talked with him two men, who were Moses and Elijah;

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 Now Peter and they that *were with him were heavy with sleep; and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

Dan. 8:18; 10:8.

33 And it came to pass, as they were parting from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here. Let us make three

tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah; not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them; and they feared as they entered into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying: *This is my beloved Son, hear ye him!

Matt. 3:17;

Mark 1:11; Mark 9:7.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. *And they were silent, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

Matt. 17:9.

¶VII

37 And it came to pass, on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, *much people met him.

Matt. 17:14; Mark 9:14, &c.

38 And, behold, a man from among the people cried out, saying: Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son; for he is mine only child.

39 And, lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast the spirit out; and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering said: O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

42 And as he was yet coming, the devil threw him

down, and tare him. But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

¶VIII

43 And all were amazed at the mighty power of God. But while every one wondered at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples:

44 Let these words sink down into your ears; *for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men.

Matt. 17:22, &c.

45 But they understood not *this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not, and they feared to ask him of that saying.

Chap. 18:34; Mark 9:32.

¶IX

46 And there arose *a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

Mark 9:34.

47 But Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a little child, and set him by his side,

48 And said unto them: Whosoever shall receive such a little child in my name receiveth me; and *whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me; for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

Matt. 10:40; John 13:20; 12:44.

¶X

49 And *John answered and said: Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy

name, and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. Num. 11:27; &c.; Mark 9:38.

50 But Jesus said unto him: Forbid him not, for he that is *not against us is for us. Chap. 11:23; Matt. 12:30.

¶XI

51 And it came to pass, when the time was come that he *should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,

Mark 16:19; Acta 1:2.

52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went, and entered *into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him.

John 4:4.

53 And they *did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

John 4:4. 9.

54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said: Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, *even as Elijah did?

2 Kings 1:10, 12.

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said: Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the *Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

John 8:17; 12:47.

¶XII

57 And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, *a certain man said unto him: Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

Matt. 8:19.

58 But Jesus said unto him: Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 And he said unto another: Follow me. But he said, *Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

Matt. 8:21.

60 *Jesus said unto him: Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

Matt. 8:22.

61 And another also said: Lord, *I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

1 Kings 19:20.

62 And Jesus said unto him: No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, *is fit for the kingdom of God.

Prov. 26:11; 2 Peter 2:20.

CHAPTER 10

The seventy disciples. The good Samaritan. Mary at Jesus' feet.

After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and *sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself was about to come.

Matt. 10:1; Mark 6:7.

2 Therefore, said he unto them, *The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: †pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest:

John 4:35;

†Matt. 9:37, 38; 2 Thess. 3:1.

3 Go your ways, behold, *I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

Matt. 10:16; 23:34.

4 Carry neither purse, *nor bag, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

Matt. 10:9; 2 Kings 4:29.

5 And into whatsoever house ye shall enter, first say: Peace be to this house.

6 And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon him, if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in that same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they have, for the *labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

Deut. 24:14; Matt. 10:11; 1 Cor. 9:14; 1 Tim. 5:18.

8 And into *Whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you. Matt. 10:11.

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, *The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

Verse 11. Matt. 3:2, 4, 17; 10:7.

10 But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Even the *very dust of your city, which cleaveth to us, we do wipe off against you; notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. Acts 13:51; Matt. 10:14.

12 I say unto you, *it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

Matt. 10:15.

13 Woe unto thee, *Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! †for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre

and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

Matt. 11:21; †Ezek. 3:6.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you.

15 And thou, *Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

Matt. 11:23; Isa. 14:13, 14.

16 He that heareth you *heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; †and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.

Matt. 10:40; John 13:20;

†1 Thess. 4:8; John 5:23.

¶II

17 And the *seventy returned with joy, saying: Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

Verse 1.

18 And he said unto them: *I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

Rev. 12:8, 9; John 12:31; 16:11.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread *on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Ps. 91:13; Acts 28:5.

20 Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, *because your names are written in heaven.

Phil. 4:3, &c.; Rev. 13:8.

¶III

21 In that hour Jesus *rejoiced in spirit, and said: I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou

hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes; even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. Matt. 11:25.

22 *All things are delivered to me of my Father; and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.

Matt. 28:18; †John 1:18; 6:44.

IV

(Gospel 13. Sunday after Trin. 23-37.)

23 And he turned unto his disciples, and said privately: *Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see,

1 Kings 10:3; Matt. 13:16.

24 For I tell you, that *many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

1 Peter 1:10.

V

25 And, behold, *a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying: Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? Matt. 22:35; Mark 12:28.

26 Jesus said unto him: What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering said: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; *and thy neighbour as thyself.

Lev. 19:18; Mark 12:30, 31, &c.

28 And Jesus said unto him: Thou hast answered right; *this do, and thou shalt live.

Lev. 18:5; Neh. 9:29; Rom. 10:5.

29 But he, desiring to justify himself, said unto Jesus: And who is *my neighbour?

Exod. 2:13.

30 Jesus answering said: A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, who stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he *passed by on the other side.

Ps. 38:11.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was; and when he saw him, *he had compassion on him.

Ezek. 16:6; John 4:9.

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out *two pennies and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Matt. 20:12.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was

neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?

37 And he said: He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him: Go, and do thou likewise.

¶VI

38 Now it came to pass, as they went on, that he entered into a certain village; and a *certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

John 11:1; 12:2, 3.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, who *also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. Acts 22:3; 1 Cor. 7:32, &c.

40 But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and she came to him, and said: Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And Jesus answered and said unto her: Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things.

42 But *one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

Ps. 27:4; Matt. 6:33; Ps. 27:4.

CHAPTER 11

Power of prayer. Driving out a devil. Asking a sign from heaven. Christ's sermon against the Pharisees.

And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him: Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, *say: Our Fa-

ther who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.

Matt. 6:9.

3 Give us day by day *our daily bread.

Exod. 16:19, 21.

4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

(Popular version: and forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive those who trespass against us.)

Matt. 6:12-13.

¶II

5 And he said unto them: Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him: Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

7 And he from within shall answer and say: Trouble me not, the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you: Though he will not arise and give him, because he is his friend, yet *because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

Chap. 13:5.

9 And I say unto you: *Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

Matt. 7:7; Mark 11:24; John 16:23, 24.

10 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

11 If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Matt. 7:9, &c.

12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children; how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

¶III

(Gospel 3. Sunday after Trin.
14-28.)

14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake. And the people wondered. Matt. 12:22; 9:32.

15 But some of them said: *He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chief of the devils. Matt. 12:24, &c.

16 And others, tempting him, sought of him *a sign from heaven.

Matt. 12:38, 39; 16:1.

17 But Jesus, *knowing their thoughts, said unto them: Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house divided against a house falleth. Matt. 12:25; John 2:25.

18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because

ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the *finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you. Exod. 8:19.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace;

22 But when *a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

Col. 2:15; Isa. 53:12.

23 He that is *not with me is against me, and he that gathered not with me scattereth. Matt. 12:30.

24 When the *unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. Matt. 12:43.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there, and the *last state of that man is worse than the first. John 5:14; Heb. 6:4; 10:26.

¶IV

27 And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company

lifted up her voice, and said unto him: *Blessed is the womb that bare thee and the breasts which thou hast sucked.

Luke 1:28, 48.

28 But he said: Yea, rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, *and keep it. Matt. 7:21; 8:21; James 1:25.

¶V

29 And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say: This is an evil generation; *they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet.

Matt. 16:4, &c.

30 For *as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. Jonas 2:1.

31 The *queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them; for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. 1 Kings 10:1;

2 Chron. 9:1; Matt. 12:42.

32 The men of *Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

Jonas 3:5; Matt. 12:41.

33 No man, when he hath *lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.

Mark 4:21; Matt. 5:15

34 The *light of the body is the eye, therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. Matt. 6:22.

35 Take heed, therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

¶VI

37 Now as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him; and he went in, and sat down to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he *had not first washed before dinner. Matt. 15:2; Mark 7:3.

39 And the Lord said unto him: Now do ye *Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of greed and wickedness. Chap. 18:11,12;

Matt. 15:8; Mark 7:8.

40 Ye foolish ones, did not he, that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But *rather give alms of such things as ye have; and, behold, all things are clean unto you. Isa. 58:7.

42 But woe unto you, Pharisees! *for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, but pass over judgment and the love of God.

These ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Matt. 23:23.

43 Woe unto you, Pharisees! *for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

Chap. 20:46; Matt. 23:6; Mark 12:38.

44 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for *ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them are not aware of them.

Matt. 23:27; Ps. 5:9.

¶VII

45 Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him: Master, in saying this thou reproachest us also.

46 And Jesus said: Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for *ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

Isa. 10:1; Matt. 23:4; Acts 15:10.

47 Woe unto you! for *ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

Matt. 23:29.

48 Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers; for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God: *I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute;

Matt. 10:16; 23:34.

50 That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the

world, may be required of this generation.

51 From the blood of Abel unto the blood of *Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary; verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

Matt. 23:35; Gen. 4:8; 2 Chron. 24:20, 21.

52 *Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge; ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

Matt. 23:13.

53 And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to press upon him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things.

54 Laying wait for him, and *seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

Wisd. 2:12; Mark 12:13.

CHAPTER 12

Christ preaches concerning faith. Its attributes and its hindrances.

In *the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trod one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples: First of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

Matt. 16:6; Mark 8:15.

2 For *there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

Matt. 10:26; Mark 4:22; Chap. 8:17.

3 Therefore, *whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness

shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed upon the housetops. Matt. 10:27.

4 And I say unto you my friends: *Be not afraid of those who kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. Isa. 8:13; Isa. 51:12; Matt. 10:28.

5 But I will warn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, who after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

¶II

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But even the *very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not, therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Chap. 21:18.

8 Also I say unto you: *Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God;

Matt. 10:32; 2 Tim. 2:12; 1 John 2:23.

9 But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And *whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but unto him that blasphemeth against the Ho'y Ghost it shall not be forgiven.

Matt. 12:31; 1 John 5:16.

11 And *when they bring you into the synagogues,

and before magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say; Matt. 10:19; Mark 13:11; Chap. 21:14.

12 For the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that very hour what ye shall say.

¶III

13 And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

14 But he said unto him: *Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?

John 18:36.

¶IV

15 And he said unto them: Take heed, and *beware of covetousness; for a man's life consisteth not in the †abundance of the things which he possesseth.

1 Tim. 6:9, 10; †Matt. 4:4.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying: The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And he reasoned within himself, saying: What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do; I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years take thine ease, *eat, drink, and be merry. Eccles. 11:9;

1 Cor. 15:32; James 5:5.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night *thy

soul shall be required of thee. †Then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? Job 20:27; †Ps. 30:6.

21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, *and is not rich toward God.

Verse 33. 1 Tim. 6:18, 19.

¶V

22 And he said unto his disciples: Therefore I say unto you: *Take no undue thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on.

Matt. 6:25, &c.

23 The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment.

24 Consider the *ravens, for they neither sow nor reap, neither have they storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them; how much more are ye better than the fowls? Ps. 147:9; Job 38:41.

25 And *which of you by taking thought can add to his stature one cubit?

Matt. 6:27.

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow; they toil not, they spin not, and yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

28 But if God so clothe the grass, which is today in the field, and tomorrow is cast into the oven; how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind.

30 For *all these things do the gentiles of the world seek after; but your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. Matt. 6:32.

31 But rather *seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. Matt. 6:33.

¶VI

32 Fear not, little flock; for it is *your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

Chap. 22:29; Matt. 11:26.

33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves purses which wax not old, *a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

Chap. 18:22; 1 Tim. 6:19.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let *your loins be girded about, and your †lights burning;

1 Peter 1:13;

†Matt. 26:1, &c.

36 And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall find watching; verily I say unto you, that *he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat,

and will come forth and serve them. John 13:4; Matt. 24:46.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants.

39 And this know, *that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

1 Thess. 5:2, &c.; 2 Peter 3:10.

40 *Be ye therefore also ready; for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

Matt. 24:44; 2 Peter 3:12.

¶VII

41 Then Peter said unto him: Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said: *Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? Matt. 24:45; 1 Cor. 4:2.

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

44 Of a truth *I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath.

Matt. 24:47.

45 But *if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidservants, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken,

Matt. 24:48.

46 The lord of that serv-

ant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and shall *cut him off, and appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

Matt. 24:38.

47 And *that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

James 4:17; John 9:41.

48 But he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, *shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. Lev. 5:17; 1 Tim. 1:13.

¶VIII

49 I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I have *a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!

Matt. 20:22; Mark 10:38.

51 *Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; †but rather division.

Matt. 10:34;

†John 7:43.

52 For *from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

Matt. 10:35.

53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter

against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

¶IX

54 And he said also to the people: *When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is.

Matt. 16:2.

55 And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass.

56 Ye hypocrites, *ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time?

John 4:38.

57 And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

¶X

58 When thou *goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

Prov. 25:8; Matt. 5:25;

†Ps. 27:6; Isa. 55:6.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt by no means come out from thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

CHAPTER 13

Christ preaches repentance. The fruitless fig tree. The sick woman. The narrow gate. Reproves Herod and Jerusalem.

There were present at that season some that told him of

the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering said unto them: Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered these things?

3 I tell you, Nay! *but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

Ps. 7:13.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were *sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

Matt. 18:24.

5 I tell you, Nay! but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

¶II

6 He spake also this parable: A certain *man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

Isa. 5:2; Matt. 21:19.

7 Then said he unto his vine dresser: Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none; cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?

8 And he answering said unto him: Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it;

9 And if it bear fruit, well; and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

¶III

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath.

11 And, behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift herself up.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said to her: Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13 And he *laid his hands upon her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

Mark 7:32;
Mark 16:18; Acts 9:17.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath, and said unto the people: *There are six days in which men ought to work; in them therefore come and be healed, and †not on the Sabbath day.

Exod. 20:9; †Matt. 12:10.

15 But the Lord answered him, and said: Thou hypocrite, *doth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

Chap. 14:5.

16 And ought not this woman, *being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath?

Chap. 19:9.

17 And as he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed. And all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

¶IV

18 *Then said he: Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I liken it?

Matt. 13:31; Mark 4:30.

19 It is like *a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden; and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

Matt. 18:31; Mark 4:31.

20 And again he said: Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is *like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

Matt. 13:33.

22 *And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

Matt. 9:35; Mark 6:6.

23 Then said one unto him: Lord, are they few that be saved?

24 And he said unto them: Strive ye *to enter in at the narrow gate; for †many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

Matt. 7:13; John 13:33.
†John 7:34; Rom. 9:31.

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying: *Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you: †I know you not whence ye are,

Ps. 32:6; Isa. 55:6; †Matt. 7:23.

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 But he shall say, *I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; *depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.

Matt. 7:23; 25:41; Ps. 6:9.

28 There *shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, †when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out.

Matt. 8:12, 13; †Matt. 8:11.

29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

30 And *behold, there are last which shall be first; and there are first which shall be last. Matt. 19:30; Mark 10:31.

IV

31 The same day there came certain Pharisees, saying unto him: Get thee out, and depart hence, for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them: Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do heal today and tomorrow, and the third *day I shall be perfected. Heb. 2:10.

33 Nevertheless I must walk today, and tomorrow, and the day following; for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 O *Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are

sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!

Matt. 23:37.

35 Behold, *your house is left unto you desolate, and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, †Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Ps. 69:25; Lev. 26:31, 32;

†Ps. 118:26; John 12:13.

CHAPTER 14

Christ heals the man who had dropsy. Preaches concerning the feast for the poor. The great supper. His true followers. Unsavory salt.

(Gospel 17. Sunday after Trin. 1-11.)

And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the Sabbath day, *that they watched him.

Mark 3:2.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy.

3 And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying: *Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath day?

Matt. 12:10.

4 And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go.

5 And answered them, saying: *Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a well, will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

Exod. 23:5; Deut. 22:4.

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

¶II

7 And he put forth a parable to those who were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms, saying unto them:

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him;

9 And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

10 *But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher, then shalt thou have honor in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

Prov. 25:6, 7.

11 For *whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

Matt. 23:12, &c.; Ps. 18:27.

¶III

12 Then said he also to him that bade him: When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, *bid the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind;

14 And thou shalt be blessed, for they cannot re-

compense thee; for thou *shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

Matt. 6:4; John 11:24.

¶IV

15 And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him: *Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

Rev. 19:9.

(Gospel 2. Sunday after Trin. 16-24.)

16 Then said he unto him: A certain man made a great supper, *and he bade many.

Prov. 9:1-12.

17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, *Come, for all things are now ready.

Prov. 9:2, 5.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him: I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it; I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said: I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them, I pray thee have me excused.

20 And another said: I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that servant came, and told his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant: Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, the maimed, the halt, and the blind.

22 And the servant said: Lord, it is done as thou hast

commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said unto the servant: Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you: *That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

Matt. 21:43; 22:8; Acts 13:46.

IV

25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and Jesus turned, and said unto them:

26 If any man cometh to me, *and hateth not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. Deut. 33:9; Matt. 10:37; Rev. 12:11.

27 *Whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. Matt. 16:24; Mark 8:34; 2 Tim. 3:12.

28 For *which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?

Prov. 24:27.

29 Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him.

30 Saying: This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first,

and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

VI

34 Salt is good: *but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? Matt. 5:13; Mark 9:50.

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dung-hill; but men cast it out. *He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. Chap. 8:8.

CHAPTER 15

Praise of divine mercy by parables of lost sheep, piece of silver, prodigal son.

(Gospel 3. Sunday after Trin. 1-10.)

Then drew near unto him *all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. Matt. 9:10.

2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying: This *man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

Chap. 7:39; Acts 11:3; Gal. 2:12.

VII

3 And he spake unto them this parable, saying:

4 What man of you, having a hundred sheep, having lost *one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, †until he find it?

Ezek. 34:11. 16:

†Matt. 18:12; Luke 19:10.

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, *Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost.

1 Peter 2:10, 25.

7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over *one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, who need no repentance.

Chap. 5:32.

¶III

8 Or what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it?

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth *her friends and neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost.

Chap. 1:58.

10 Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

¶IV

11 And he said: A certain man had two sons.

12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. *And he divided unto them his living.

Mark 12:44.

13 And not many days after the younger son gath-

ered all together, and took his journey into a far country, *and there he wasted his substance with riotous living.

Prov. 29:3.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat; and no man gave unto him.

17 But when he came to himself, he said: How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, *and I perish here with hunger!

Prov. 23:21.

18 I *will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him: Father, I have sinned against heaven, †and before thee,

Jer. 3:12, &c.; †Ps. 51:6.

19 I am no more worthy to be called thy son; make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, *and kissed him.

2 Sam. 14:33; Acts 2:39.

21 And the son said unto him: Father, I have sinned against heaven, *and in thy sight, I am no more worthy to be called thy son.

Ps. 51:4.

22 But the father said to his servants: Bring forth the

best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet:

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and make merry.

24 For this my son was dead, and is **alive* again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to make merry.

Eph. 2:1, 8; Chap. 5:14; Rev. 3:1.

25 Now his elder son was in the field, and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And the servant said unto him: Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and entreated him.

29 But he answering said to his father: Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandments, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends.

30 But as soon as this thy son was come, **who* hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. Prov. 29:3.

31 And **the* father said unto him: Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine, is thine.

32 It was mete that we should make merry, and be

glad, for **this* thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

Verse 24.

CHAPTER 16

Abuse of riches. Self-righteousness. The rich man and Lazarus.

(Gospel 9. Sunday after Trin. 1-9.)

And he said also unto his disciples: There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said unto him: What is this that I hear of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 The steward said within himself: What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship; I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed,

4 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 So he called every one of his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the first: How much owest thou unto my lord?

6 And he said: A hundred **measures* of oil. And he said unto him: Take thy bill, sit down quickly, and write fifty. Ezek. 45:10, 11, 14.

7 Then said he to another: And how much owest thou? He said: A hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him: Take thy bill, and write fourscore.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely; for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the *children of light.

Eph. 5:8; 1 Thess. 5:5; John 12:36.

¶II

9 And I say unto you: *Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

Matt. 6:20; 19:21; 1 Tim. 6:19.

10 He that is faithful *in that which is least, is faithful also in much; and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

Chap. 19:17; Matt. 25:21.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

13 *No servant can serve two masters; for either he will hate one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God †and mammon.

Matt. 6:24; †Isa. 56:11.

¶III

14 And the Pharisees, *who were covetous, heard all these things; and they derided him.

Matt. 23:14.

15 And he said unto them: Ye are they which *justify yourselves before men; †but

God knoweth your hearts; for that which is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination in the sight of God.

Chap. 10:29; †Ps. 7:9, &c.

16 The *law and the prophets were until John; since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

Matt. 11:13; 4:17; 7:29.

17 And it is easier for *heaven and earth to pass away, than one tittle of the law to fail.

Chap. 21:33;

Matt. 5:18; Ps. 102:26, 27.

18 Whosoever *putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery; and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery.

1 Cor. 7:10, 11.

Matt. 5:31; 19:9;

¶IV

(Gospel 1. Sunday after Trin. 19-31.)

19 There was a certain rich man, who was clothed in purple and fine linen, faring sumptuously every day:

20 And there was *a certain beggar named Lazarus, who was laid at his gate, full of sores,

Eccles. 14:14.

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table; moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was *carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried.

Ps. 91:11.

23 And in hell he lifted up his eyes being in torment,

seeing Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24 And he cried and said: Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; *for I am tormented in this flame.

Isa. 66:24; Zech. 14:12; Mark 9:44.

25 But Abraham said: Son, *remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things, but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. Job. 21:18; Chap. 6:24.

26 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed; that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.

27 Then said he: I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldst send him to my father's house.

28 For I have five brethren, that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 But Abraham saith unto him: *They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them. Isa. 8:20; 34:16; Acts 15:21.

30 And he said: Nay, father Abraham, but if one would go to them from the dead, they would repent.

31 But Abraham said unto him: If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, *neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. John 12:10, 11.

CHAPTER 17

Concerning offense, willingness to forgive, faith and works, the ten lepers, the future of God's kingdom.

Then said Jesus unto the disciples: *It is impossible but that offences will come; but woe unto him through whom they come!

Mark 9:42; 1 Cor. 11:19.

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and be cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. Matt. 18:6.

III

3 Take heed to yourselves. If thy brother sin against thee, *rebuke him, and if he repent, forgive him. Lev. 19:17; Mat. 18:15, 21.

4 And if he sin against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying: I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, *Increase our faith. Mark 9:23.

6 And the Lord said: If *ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamore tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it would obey you. Matt. 17:20; 21:21; Mark 9:23.

7 But who of you, having a servant ploughing or feeding cattle, will say unto him, by and by, when he is come from the field: Go straightway and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him: Make ready wherewith I may sup, and

gird thyself, *and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken, and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Chap 12:37.

9 Doth he thank that servant because he does the things that were commanded him? I say not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We *are unprofitable servants; we have done that which was our duty to do.

Job. 22:3; Ps. 16:2;
1 Cor. 9:16, 17.

¶III

(Gospel 14. Sunday after Trin.
11-19.)

11 And it came to pass, *as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

John 4:4.

12 And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which *stood afar off;

Lev. 13:46.

13 And they lifted up *their voices, saying: Jesus! Master! have mercy on us!

Ps. 107:19.

14 And when Jesus saw them, he said unto them: *Go and shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

Lev. 13:2; 14:2; Matt. 8:4.

15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorifying God,

16 Fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks; and he was a Samaritan.

17 And Jesus answering said: Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18 Was there none found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger?

19 And he said unto him: Arise, go thy way; *thy faith hath made thee whole.

Chap. 7:50; 8:48; Mark 5:34.

¶IV

20 And when he was asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said: The kingdom of God cometh not with observation.

1 Cor. 4:20.

21 Neither shall they say, *Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

Matt. 24:23; Mark 13:21.

¶V

22 And he said unto the disciples: *The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

Matt. 9:15; John 17:12.

23 And they shall say to you: *See here, or, see there, go not after them, nor follow them.

Matt. 24:23; Luke 21:8.

24 For as the *lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven, so shall the Son of man be in his day.

Matt. 24:27.

25 But *first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

Matt. 16:21; Mark 8:31.

26 And *as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. Gen. 7; Matt. 24:37.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the *day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Gen. 7:7.

28 *Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; Gen. 19:14.

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it *rained fire and hailstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Gen. 19:15, 16, 24.

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man *is revealed. 2 Thess. 1:7.

¶VI

31 In that day, *he who shall be upon the housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away; and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

Matt. 24:17; Mark 13:15.

32 *Remember Lot's wife.

Gen. 19:26, &c.

33 Whosoever shall seek to save *his life shall lose it, *and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.

Matt. 10:39; Mark 8:35; Luke 9:24.

34 I tell you, *in that night there shall be two men in one bed, the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.

Matt. 24:40, 41;
1 Thess. 4:17.

35 Two women shall be grinding together; the one

shall be taken, and the other left.

36 Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered and said unto him: Where, Lord? And he said unto them: *Whosoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together. Job 39:30; Hab. 1:8; Matt. 24:28.

CHAPTER 18

Concerning prayer and repentance. The cross and sufferings of Christ.

And he spake *a parable unto them to the end, that they ought always to pray, and not to faint,

Rom. 12:12; Eph. 6:18.

2 Saying: There was in a city a judge, who feared not God, and regarded not man.

3 And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying: Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while, but afterward he said within himself: Though I fear not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow *troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming, she weary me.

Chap. 11:7, 8.

6 And the Lord said: Hear what the unjust judge saith.

7 And *shall not God avenge his elect, who cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

Rev. 6:10.

8 I tell you that he will *avenge them speedily. Nev-

ertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

Heb. 10:37; 1 Peter 3:8, 9.

¶II

(Gospel 11. Sunday after Trin.
9-14.)

9 And he spake this parable unto certain *who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others.

Chap. 10:29.

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

11 The *Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself: God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

Ps. 135:2; Matt. 5:20;

†Isa. 58:2; Rev. 3:17.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13 But the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying: *God be merciful to me a sinner. Ps. 51:3.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other, *for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

Matt. 23:12;

James 4:6; 1 Peter 5:5, 6.

¶III

15 *And they brought unto him also their infants, that he should touch them, but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

Matt. 19:13; Mark 10:13.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said: Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not; for *of such is the kingdom of God. 1 Cor. 14:20; 1 Peter 2:2.

17 Verily I say unto you, *Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein.

Mark 10:15.

¶IV

18 And a certain ruler *asked him, saying: Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

Matt. 19:16; Mark 10:17.

19 And Jesus said unto him: Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, that is, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, *Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother.

Exod. 20:12, &c.; Rom. 13:9.

21 And he said: All these have I kept from my youth.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him: Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou *shalt have treasure in heaven. And *come and follow me.

Matt. 6:19, 20;
19:21; 1 Tim. 6:19.

23 But when he heard this, he was very sorrowful, for he was very rich.

24 When Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said: *How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

Prov. 11:28; Mark 10:23.

25 For it is easier for a camel to enter through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard it said: Who then can be saved?

27 And he said: The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.

Job 42:2; Matt. 19:26.

28 But Peter said: Lo! *we have left all, and followed thee.

Matt. 19:27.

29 And he said unto them: Verily I say unto you, *There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,

Deut. 33:9.

30 Who shall not receive *manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

Job 42:10.

¶IV

(Gospel Sunday before Lent, 31-43.)

31 Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them: Behold, *we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are †written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

Matt. 17:22, &c.; †Ps. 22; Isa. 53.

32 For he shall *be delivered up unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on;

Matt. 27:2; Acts 3:13.

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood *none of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

Chap. 9:45; Mark 9:32; John 10:6.

¶VI

35 And it came to pass, that as he drew nigh unto Jericho, a *certain blind man sat by the wayside begging.

Matt. 20:29, 30; Mark 10:46.

36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth was passing by.

38 And he cried, saying: Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace; but he cried so much the more: Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying: What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said: Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him: Receive thy sight, thy *faith hath saved thee.

Chap. 17:19.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, *glorifying God, and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

Chap. 5:26; Acts 4:21; 11:18.

CHAPTER 19

Zacchaeus the publican. The entrusted pounds. Christ enters Jerusalem. Cleanseth the temple, weeps over the destruction of Jerusalem.

(Gospel Church Dedication, 1-10.)

And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho.

2 And, behold, there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not because of the crowd, for he was little of stature.

John 12:21.

4 And he ran on before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him; for he was to pass that way.

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him: Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for today I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, because he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

Matt. 9:11; 5:30.

8 And Zacchaeus stood, and said unto the Lord: Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false dealing, I restore him fourfold.

Exod. 22:1; 1 Sam. 12:3.

9 And Jesus said unto him: This day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham.

Chap. 13:16; Gal. 3:7.

10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which is lost.

Matt. 9:13; 18:11; 1 Tim. 1:15.

III

11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

Acts 1:6; Luke 24:21.

12 He said therefore: A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.

Matt. 25:14; Mark 13:34.

13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying: We will not have you to reign over us.

John 1:11, verse 27.

15 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying: Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant; because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.

Matt. 25:21; Luke 16:10.

18 And the second came,

saying: Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him: Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came, saying: Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin.

21 For *I feared thee, because thou art an hard man; thou takest up that thou layest not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

Matt. 25:24.

22 And he saith unto him: *Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an hard man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow;

2 Sam. 1:15; Matt. 12:37.

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with interest?

24 And he said unto them that stood by: Take away from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 And they said unto him: Lord, he hath ten pounds.

26 But I say unto you: *That unto every one that hath, shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that which he hath, shall be taken away from him.

Chap. 8:18; Matt. 13:12.

27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

¶III

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, *ascending up to Jerusalem.

Mark 10:32.

29 And it came to pass, when he *was come nigh unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the Mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, Matt. 21:1; Mark 11:1.

30 Saying: Go ye into the village over against you, in the which as ye enter, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat, loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say unto him: the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent went away, and found it even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them: Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said: The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus. And they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

2 Kings 9:13; Matt. 21:7; John 12:14.

36 And as he went, they spread their garments in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the Mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice

for all the mighty works that they had seen,

38 Saying: *Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord; †peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

John 12:18, &c.;
†Luke 2:14; Eph. 2:14.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him: Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered and said unto them: I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, *the stones would immediately cry out.

Hab. 2:11.

¶IV

(Gospel 10. Sunday after Trin.
41-48.)

41 And when he was come near, he beheld the city, *and wept over it,

2 Kings 8:11; John 11:35.

42 Saying: *If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

Deut. 32:29; Hosea 14:9.

43 For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall *cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

Isa. 29:13, 4; Jer. 6:3, 6.

44 And shall lay thee *even with the ground, and thy children within thee, and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

1 Kings 9:7; Mich. 3:12; Matt. 24:2

¶V

45 And he went into the temple, *and began to cast

out them that sold therein, and them that bought,

Matt. 21:12; Mark 11:15; John 2:14, 15.

46 Saying unto them: *It is written, My house is the house of prayer, †but ye have made it a den of thieves.

Isa. 56:7, &c.; †Jer. 7:11, &c.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. *But the chief priests and the scribes and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

Mark 11:18; John 7:19; 8:37.

48 And could not find what they might do, for all the people were *very attentive to hear him.

Acts 18:14.

CHAPTER 20

Christ speaks of his person and of his office; concerning tribute and the resurrection of the dead.

And it *came to pass, on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon him with the elders,

Matt. 21:23; Mark 11:27.

2 And spake unto him, saying: Tell us, by *what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

Acts 4:7; 7:27.

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing, answer me:

4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not?

6 And if we say of men; all the people will stone us, for they are *persuaded that John was a prophet.

Matt. 14:5; 21:26.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Jesus said unto them: Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

¶II

9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: *A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time.

Ps. 80:8, 9; Isa. 5:1; Matt. 21:33.

10 And at the *season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard; but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

2 Chron. 36:15, 16.

11 And again he sent another servant, and him also they beat, and treated *him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

Matt. 22:6.

12 And again he sent a third: and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son; it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying: *This is the heir; come, let

us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

Ps. 2:7; Heb. 1:2.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said: What is this then that is written, *The stone which the builders rejected, the same became the head of the corner?

Matt. 21:42, &c.; Ps. 118:22.

18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but *on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

Dan. 2:34, 35; Matt. 21:44.

¶III

19 And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; but *they feared the people; for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them. Chap. 19:48.

20 And they watched him, and *sent forth spies, who feigned themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

Matt. 22:15.

21 And they asked him, saying: *Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest in all sincerity, neither acceptest thou the person of

any, but of a truth teachest the way of God,

Matt. 22:16; Mark 12:14.

22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them: Why tempt ye me?

24 Show me a *penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cesar's.

Matt. 18:28.

25 And he said unto them: Render therefore unto Cesar the things that are Cesar's, and unto God the things that are God's.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people; and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

¶IV

27 Then came to him *certain of the Sadducees, who deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked him,

Matt. 22:23, &c.; Acts 23:6, 8.

28 Saying: Master, *Moses wrote unto us, that if any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up children unto his brother.

Gen. 38:8; Deut. 25:5; Mark 12:19.

29 There were therefore seven brethren. The first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.

31 And the third took her; and in like manner the seven

also; and they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering said unto them: The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage.

35 But those who shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more, for *they are like the angels, and are the †children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

Matt. 22:30;

†1 John 3:2; Rom. 8:23.

37 But that the dead are raised, *even Moses shewed at the bush, when he called the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

Exod. 3:6.

38 Now he is not a God of the dead, but of the living; for all live unto him.

39 And certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that they did not dare to ask him any more questions at all.

¶V

41 But he said unto them: *How say they that Christ is David's son?

Matt. 22:42; Mark 12:35.

42 For David himself saith in the *book of Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

Ps. 110:1; Matt. 22:44, &c.

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?

¶VI

45 *Then in the hearing of all the people he said unto his disciples:

Matt. 23:1; Mark 12:38.

46 *Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief places at feasts;

Chap. 11:43; Matt. 23:3, &c.; Mark 12:38.

47 Who *devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers; the same shall receive greater damnation.

Matt. 23:14.

CHAPTER 21

The widow's mite. Destruction of Jerusalem and the end of the world.

And he looked up, and *saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

Mark 12:41.

2 And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in two mites.

3 And he said: Of a truth I say unto you, this poor widow hath cast in *more than they all; 2 Cor. 8:12.

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

¶II

5 And as *some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said,

Matt. 24:1; Mark 13:1.

6 As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in which there *shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. Chap. 19:44;

Jer. 26:18; Micha 3:12.

7 And they asked him, saying: Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things are about to come to pass?

8 And he said: Take heed that ye be not deceived; *for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and, the time draweth near. Therefore go ye not after them.

Mark 13:22, &c.;

Matt. 24:4; 2 Thess. 3:6.

9 And when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified; for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not immediately.

10 Then said he unto them: Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom;

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these things, they shall *lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and prisons, bringing you before

kings and rulers for my name's sake. Matt. 24:9;

Mark 13:9; Rev. 2:10.

13 This shall turn unto you for a *testimony.

Phil. 1:28; 2 Thess. 1:5.

14 Settle it therefore in your *hearts, not to meditate beforehand what ye shall answer.

Matt. 10:19;

Mark 13:11, 12, 11.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall *not be able to gainsay nor resist.

Acts 6:10.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, *and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and †some of you shall they cause to be put to death. Micha 7:6; †Acts 7:58.

17 And ye shall be *hated of all men for my name's sake. Matt. 10:22; Mark 13:13.

18 But not a hair of your head shall perish.

19 In your patience *possess ye your souls.

2 Chron. 15:7; Heb. 10:36.

¶III

20 And *when ye see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand.

Matt. 24:15, &c.; Mark 13:14.

21 Then let those who are in Judea flee unto the mountains; and let those who are in the midst of her depart out; and let not those that are in the countries enter therein.

22 For those are the days of vengeance, that *all things which are written may be fulfilled.

Dan. 9:26, 27; Zech. 11:1.

23 Woe unto those that are with child, and to those that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all nations; and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, *until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Rom. 11:25; Dan. 9:27; 12:7.

¶IV

(Gospel 2. Sunday in Advent, 25-36.)

25 And there shall be signs *in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the †sea and the waves roaring;

Isa. 13:10;

†Ps. 46:3; 2 Peter 3:10, 12.

26 Men's hearts *failing them for fear, and for looking forward to those things which are coming on the earth; for the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

Isa. 64:7; Ezek. 24:23.

27 And *then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

Dan. 7:13; Rev. 1:7; 14:14.

28 But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads, *for your redemption draweth nigh.

Rom. 8:21, 23.

¶V

29 And he spake to them a parable: *Behold the fig tree, and all the trees,

Matt. 24:32; Mark 13:28.

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see it and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily *I say unto you: This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.

Matt. 24:34.

33 *Heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words shall not pass away.

Chap. 16:17; Isa. 51:6;

†Isa. 40:8.

¶VI

34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged *with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares,

Rom. 13:13;

Gal. 5:21; Eph. 5:18.

35 For as *a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 1 Thess. 5:3; 2 Peter 3:10.

36 Watch ye, therefore, and pray always, *that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

Ps. 1:5; Eph. 6:13.

37 And in the daytime he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is *called the Mount of Olives.

John 8:1, 2; 22:39.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.

CHAPTER 22

Judas, the betrayer. The Passover. The Lord's supper. Christ suffering in the garden and before Caiaphas. Peter's denial.

Now* the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passover.

Mark 14:1; John 13:1.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought *how they might kill him, for they were afraid of the people.

Ps. 2:2; John 11:47.

¶II

3 Then *entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

Matt. 26:14; John 13:2, 27.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and *covenanted to give him money.

Zech. 11:12.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

¶III

7 Then came *the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

Matt. 26:17; Mark 14:22.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.

9 And they said unto him: Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them: Behold, when ye have entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him

into the house where he entereth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house: The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

12 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished; there make ready.

13 And they went, and *found as he had said unto them, and they made ready the passover. Chap. 19:32.

14 And when the hour was come, Jesus sat down, and the *twelve apostles with him.

Matt. 26:20; Mark 14:17.

15 And he said unto them: With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer:

16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, *until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

Chap. 11:37; 14:16; Rev. 19:9.

17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves;

18 For I say unto you, *I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God has come. Matt. 26:29.

¶IV

19 And he *took bread, and when he had given thanks, he brake it, and gave it unto them, saying: This is my body which is given for you; this do in remembrance of me.

Matt. 26:26;

Mark 14:22; 1 Cor. 11:23, 24.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, *This cup is the new testament in

my blood, which is shed for you.

1 Cor. 10:16.

¶V

21 *But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. Ps. 41:9.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was *determined, but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed!

Acts 2:23; 4:28.

23 And they began to question among themselves, who of them it was that was going to do this thing.

¶VI

(Gospel Bartholomew day, 24-30.)

24 And there was also a strife among them, *which of them should be accounted the greatest.

Matt. 18:1;

Mark 9:34; Luke 9:46.

25 And he said unto them: *The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors.

Matt. 20:25; Mark 10:42.

26 But ye shall *not be so, but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

Chap. 9:48; 1 Peter 5:3, 5:6.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? *but I am among you as he that serveth.

Matt. 20:28;

John 13:14; Phil. 2:7.

28 Ye are they who *have continued with me in my afflictions.

Chap. 18:28.

29 And I appoint *unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

Chap. 12:32; 2 Tim. 2:12.

30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, *and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Matt. 8:11;
Chap. 14:15; Rev. 19:9.

¶VII

31 And the Lord said, Simon, Simon; behold, *Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat.

2 Cor. 2:11; 1 Peter 5:8; Amos 9:9.

32 But I have *prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not, and †when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

John 17:11; 15:20; †Ps. 51:15.

33 And he said unto him: Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death.

34 And he said, I tell thee, Peter, before the cock *shall crow this day, thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

Matt. 26:34; Mark 14:30, 72.

¶VIII

35 And he said unto them: *When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said: Nothing.

Ps. 23:1; 83:19; 84:10; Matt. 10:9.

36 Then said he unto them: But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip, and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

37 For I say unto you, that this which is written must be accomplished in me: And he was *reckoned among the transgressors; for the things concerning me have an end.

Isa. 53:12; Mark 15:28

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

¶IX

39 And he came out, and went, *as was his custom, to the Mount of Olives; and his disciples followed him.

Matt. 26:30; Mark 14:26; John 18:1

40 And when he was at the place, he said unto them: *Pray that ye enter not into temptation. Matt. 6:13; 26:41.

41 And he *withdrew from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, Mark 14:25; Matt. 26:39.

42 Saying: Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me; nevertheless, *not my will, but thine, be done.

Matt. 26:39; John 5:30.

43 And there appeared *an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. Matt. 4:11.

44 *And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

John 12:27; Heb. 6:7.

45 And when he rose from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

46 And said unto them: Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

¶X

47 And while he yet spake, *behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. Matt. 26:47; John 18:3.

48 But Jesus said unto him:

Judas *betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

Matt. 26:49.

49 When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

¶XI

50 And one of them *smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

Matt. 26:51; Mark 14:47.

51 But Jesus answered and said: Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

¶XII

52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him: *Ye are come out to me, as against a thief, with swords and staves.

Matt. 26:55; Mark 14:53.

53 When I was daily with you in the temple, *ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

John 7:30; Chap. 8:20.

54 Then took they him, *and led him, and brought him into the high priest's house. But Peter followed from afar.

Matt. 26:57; John 18:13, 15.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, *Peter sat down among them.

Matt. 26:69, &c.

56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said: This man was also with him.

57 And he denied, saying: Woman, I know him not.

58 *And after a little while another saw him, and said: Thou art also one of them. And Peter said: Man, I am not.

Matt. 26:71; John 18:25.

59 And about the space of one hour later, another confidently affirmed, saying: Of a truth this man also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 But Peter said: Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake, *the cock crew.

Matt. 26:74; Mark 14:30, 72.

61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, that he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

Matt. 26:34, 75;
John 18:38.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

¶XIII

63 And the men that held Jesus *mocked him, and smote him. Isa. 50:6; Mark 14:65.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying: Prophecy, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

¶XIV

66 And as soon as it was day, *the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, saying:

Matt. 27:1.

Mark 15:1; Acts 22:5.

67 Art thou the Christ? *tell us. And he said unto them: If I tell you, ye will not believe;

68 And if I ask you, ye will not answer me, nor let me go. Matt. 26:63.

69 *Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

Matt. 24:30; 26:64; Mark 14:62.

70 Then said they all: Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them: *Ye say that I am. Mark 14:63.

71 And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard it out of his own mouth.

CHAPTER 23

Christ's sufferings before Pilate, his crucifixion, death and burial.

And the whole *multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

Matt. 27:2; John 18:28.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying: We found this fellow perverting our nation, and *forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying that he himself is Christ a king.

Chap. 20:25.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying: *Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said: Thou sayest.

Matt. 27:11;

Mark 15:2; Acts 17:7.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people: *I find no fault in this man.

1 Peter 2:22.

5 But they were the more fierce, saying: He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged *unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

Chap. 8:1.

¶II

8 Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad; *for he was desirous to see him for a long time, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

Chap. 9:8; Mark 6:14.

9 And he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and scribes stood, vehemently accusing him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him *in a gorgeous robe, and sent him back to Pilate.

Isa. 53:3.

12 And the same day *Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity with each other.

Acts 4:27.

¶III

13 And Pilate, *called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people,

Mark 15:14.

14 And said unto them: Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people; and, behold, I, having examined him before you, *found no fault in this

man touching those things whereof ye accuse him,

Matt. 27:23; John 18:28.

15 No, nor yet Herod; for I sent you to him, and, lo, nothing worthy of death has been found in him.

16 I *will therefore chastise him, and release him.

Matt. 27:26; John 19:3.

17 For of necessity he must *release one unto them at the feast.

Matt. 27:15; John 18:39.

18 But they *cried out all at once, saying: Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas!

Matt. 27:22, 23; Acts 3:14.

19 Who for a certain riot which was made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.

20 And Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

21 But they cried, saying: Crucify him, crucify him.

22 And he said unto them the third time: Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him; I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

23 But they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. And the *voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

John 19:12.

24 And Pilate *gave sentence that it should be as they required.

Mark 15:15; John 19:16.

25 And he *released unto them him that for riot and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

Matt. 27:26.

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon *one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus.

Matt. 27:32; Mark 15:21.

¶IV

27 And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, who also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them said: Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.

29 For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, *Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the breasts which never gave suck.

Matt. 24: 19, 21, 23.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, *Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.

Isa. 2:19; Hos. 10:8;

Rev. 6:16; 9:6.

31 For if they do these things *in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

Jer. 25:29; 1 Peter 4:17.

¶V

32 And there were also two others, *malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

Isa. 63:12; John 19:18.

33 And when they were come to the place, *which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

Matt. 27:33; Mark 15:22;

John 19:17.

¶VI

34 Then said Jesus: *Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

Matt. 5:44;
†Ps. 22:18; Acts 7:60.

35 And the people stood beholding. And *the rulers also with them derided him, saying: He saved others, let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

Matt. 27:39; Mark 15:29.

36 The soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

37 Saying: If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself.

38 And *a superscription was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

Matt. 27:37; John 19:19.

¶VII

39 And *one of the malefactors who were hanged railed on him, saying: If thou art Christ, save thyself and us.

Matt. 27:44.

40 But the other answering rebuked him, saying: Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward of our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amiss.

42 And he said unto Jesus: Lord, *remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

Matt. 16:28

43 And Jesus said unto him: Verily I say unto thee,

Today thou shalt be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth hour, and *there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

Matt. 27:45; Mark 15:33.

45 And the sun was darkened, and *the vail of the temple was rent in the midst.

Exod. 36:35.

¶VIII

46 And when Jesus had *cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit. And having said this, he gave up his spirit.

Matt. 27:50;
†Ps. 31:5; Acts 7:58, 59.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, *Certainly this was a righteous man.

Matt. 27:54; Mark 15:39.

48 And all the people that came together to this sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

¶IX

50 And, behold, *a man named Joseph, a counsellor; who was a good man, and just;

Matt. 27:57;
Mark 15:43; John 19:38.

51 The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them: he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who *also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

Chap. 2:25, 38.

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that *day was the preparation day, and the Sabbath drew on. Matt. 27:62.

55 And *the women also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid. Chap. 8:2.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the Sabbath day *according to the commandment.

Exod. 20:10; Mark 16:1.

CHAPTER 24

Christ's resurrection and ascension.

Now upon the first day of the week, *very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain other persons with them. Matt. 28:1, &c.; John 20:1.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in *shining garments:

John 20:12; Acts 1:10.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them: Why seek ye the living among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen; *remember how he

spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

Matt. 16:21; 17:23; Mark 8:31.

7 Saying: *The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. Matt. 17:22, &c.

8 And they *remembered his words. John 2:22.

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was *Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women that were with them, who told these things unto the apostles.

Chap. 8:2, 3; 24:1.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

12 Then *arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

John 20:3, 6.

III

(Gospel Easter Monday, 13-35.)

13 And, behold, *two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs.

Mark 16:12.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it *came to pass, while they communed together and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. Matt. 18:20.

16 But their eyes were holden that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them: What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him: Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

19 And he said unto them: What things? And they said unto him: Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, *who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people; Matt. 21:11; 7:18; Acts 2:22.

20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and crucified him,

21 But we trusted that it had been he *who should have redeemed Israel, and beside all this, today is the third day since these things were done, Acts 1:6.

22 Yea, certain women also of our company *made us astonished, who were early at the sepulchre;

Matt. 28:8; Mark 16:10; John 10:8, 18.

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive.

24 And certain of them that were with us went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said; but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them: O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken. Gal. 3:1.

26. *Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? Isa. 53:6.

27 And *beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.

Gen. 3:15; Job 19:25; Ps. 8:5; 16:9, 10; Isa. 53; Hos. 6:1.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went; and he made as though he were going further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, *Abide with us! for it is toward evening, and the day is now far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. Gen. 19:3; Acts 16:15.

30 And it came to pass, when he had sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him. And he *vanished out of their sight. John 8:59.

32 And they said one to another: Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us on the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?

33 And they rose up that very hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying: *The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. 1 Cor. 15:4, 5.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

¶III

(Gospel Easter Tuesday, 36-47.)

36 And as they thus spake, Jesus himself *stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them: Peace be unto you.

Mark 16:14, &c.; 1 Cor. 15:5.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they beheld a spirit.

38 And he said unto them: *Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

Mark 4:40.

39 Behold *my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

John 20:20, 27.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

¶IV

41 And while they yet believed not *for joy, and wondered, he said unto them: Have ye here any meat?

John 21:5; Gen. 45:26.

42 And they gave him *a piece of a broiled fish, and of a honeycomb.

John 21:10.

43 And *he took it, and did eat before them.

Acts 10:41.

¶V

44 And Jesus said unto them: These are my words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the

law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me.

45 Then *opened he their understanding that they might understand the Scriptures,

Acts 16:14.

46 And said unto them: *Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

Verse 27. Ps. 22:7, 16.

47 And that repentance and *remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

Acts 13:38; 1 John 2:12.

48 *Ye are witnesses of these things.

John 15:27; Acts 1:8, 22.

¶VI

49 And, behold, *I send the promise of my Father upon you: But tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

John 15:26; 16:7;

Acts 1:4; 2:1.

¶VII

50 And he *led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

Acts 1:12.

51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he departed from them, *and was carried up into heaven.

Mark 16:19; John 20:17; Acts 1:9.

52 *And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy;

Matt. 28:9, 17.

53 And were *continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

Acts 2:46; 5:42.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT JOHN

CHAPTER 1.

Concerning Christ's person and office, as also concerning St. John the Baptist, and some of Christ's disciples.

(Gospel 3rd. Christmas day, 1-14.)

In the *beginning was the †Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was ††God. Gen. 1:1; †† John 1:1, 2; †† John 5:20.

2 The same *was in the beginning with God. Prov. 8:22.

3 *All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made. Ps. 33:6; Col. 1:16, 17; Heb. 1:2.

4 In him *was life; and the life was the †light of men. Chap. 5:26; †Chap. 12:46.

5 And the *light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. Chap. 8:12; 9:5; 12:46.

¶II

6 There was a *man sent from God, whose name was John. Matt. 3:1; 11:10; Mark 1:2.

7 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe.

8 He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light.

9 That was the *true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. Chap. 12:46.

¶III

10 He was in the world, and the *world was made by

him, and the world knew him not. Gen. 1:1, &c.; Heb. 1:2; 11:3.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the *sons of God, even to those that believe on his name; Rom. 8:15; Gal. 3:26.

13 Who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but *of God. Chap. 3:5; 1 John 5:4; James 1:18.

14 And the *Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we †beheld his glory, ††the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth. Isa. 4:7; Matt. 1:16; Luke 1:31, 2, 7; †Isa. 4:5; Matt. 17:2; 2 Peter 1:16, 17; ††Isa. 60:1.

¶IV

15 John bare witness of *him, and cried, saying: This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me; for he was before me. Matt. 3:11; Mark 1:7.

16 And of his *fulness have we all received grace for grace. Chap. 3:34; Col. 1:19; 2:9.

17 For the *law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. Exod. 20:1.

18 No *man hath seen God at any time; the only †begot-

ten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

Exod. 33:20; 1 Tim. 6:16;
†Luke 10:22; Chap. 6:46.

¶V

(Gospel 4th. Sunday in Advent,
19-28.)

19 And this *is the witness of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou?

Chap. 5:33.

20 And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I *am not the Christ. Chap. 3:28.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he saith: I am not. *Art thou the Prophet? And he answered: No.

Deut. 18:16; Matt. 16:14.

22 Then said they unto him: Who art thou? that we may give an answer to those that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?

23 He said: *I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Isaiah.

Isa. 40:3; Matt. 3:3; Mark 1:3.

24 And those who were sent were from the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him: Why baptizest thou then, if thou art not that Christ, nor Elijah, neither that Prophet?

26 John answered them, saying: *I baptize with water: but there standeth one in your midst, whom ye know not;

Matt. 3:11; Mark 1:7;
Luke 3:16.

27 He it is, *who coming after me, is preferred before

me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

Chap. 3:26.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where *John was baptizing.

Chap. 10:40.

¶VI

29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith: Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world!

Verse 36, Exod. 12:3, &c.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man who is *preferred before me, for he was before me.

Verse 15.

31 And I knew him not; but that he should be made *manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

Chap. 7:4.

32 And John bare record, saying: *I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him.

Matt. 3:16; Mark 1:10.

Luke 3:21, 22.

33 And I knew him not, but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he who baptizeth with the *Holy Spirit.

Acts 1:5.

34 And I saw, and bare witness that this is the Son of God.

¶VII

35 Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples;

36 And looking upon Jesus

as he walked, he saith: *Behold the Lamb of God!

Verse 29. Exod. 12:3, &c.

37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them: What seek ye? They said unto him: Rabbi, which is to say, being interpreted, Master, where dwellest thou?

39 He saith unto them: Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day, for it was about the tenth hour.

40 One of the two who heard John speak, and followed him, was *Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.

Matt. 4:18.

41 He first findeth his own *brother Simon, and saith unto him: We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

Matt. 4:18.

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said: Thou art Simon the son of Jona; thou shalt be called Cephas, *which is by interpretation, a stone.

Matt. 16:18.

IVIII

43 The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was from Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, *of whom

Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

Gen. 49:10; Dent. 18:18; Isa. 7:

14; 40:11; 53:2; Jer. 23:5;

Ezek. 34:23; Dan. 9:24; Matt. 2:23.

46 And Nathanael said unto him: *Can any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him: Come and see.

Chap. 7:41.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him: Behold an Israelite indeed, *in whom is no guile!

Ps. 32:2.

48 Nathanael saith unto him: Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him: Before Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him: Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; *thou art the King of Israel.

Chap. 6:69; Matt. 14:33; 16:16;

Mark 8:29.

50 Jesus answered and said unto him: Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

51 And he saith unto him: Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the *angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

Gen. 28:12.

CHAPTER 2.

Wedding at Cana. Purifying the temple.

(Gospel 2d. Sunday after Epiphany, 1-11.)

And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there,

2 And both Jesus was bidden, and his disciples, to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him: They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her: *Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

2 Sam. 19:22; 2 Sam. 16:10.

5 His mother saith unto the servants: *Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.

Gen. 41:55

6 Now there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the *purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. Mark 7:3.

7 Jesus saith unto them: Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them: Draw out now, and bear unto the ruler of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the *water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, but the servants which drew the water knew, the ruler of the feast called the bridegroom,

Chap. 4:46.

10 And saith unto him: Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men *have well drunk, then that which is worse, but thou hast kept the good wine until now.

Gen. 43:34; Hag. 1:6.

11 This is the beginning of miracles which Jesus did in Cana of Galilee, and *mani-

festes his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

Chap. 1:14.

¶II

12 After this Jesus went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and *his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many days.

Matt. 12:46.

13 And the *Jews' pass-over was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem,

Verse 23. Exod. 12:14;

Deut. 16:1, 16.

14 And found in the *temple those who sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting.

Matt. 21:12; Mark 11:15;

Luke 19:45.

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen, and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables:

16 And said unto those who sold doves: Take these things hence; *make not my Father's house an house of merchandise.

Luke 2:49.

17 And his disciples remembered that it was written, *The zeal of thine house hath consumed me. Ps. 69:9.

¶III

18 Then answered the Jews and said unto him: *What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

Matt. 12:38; Chap. 6:30.

19 Jesus answered and said unto them: *Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.

Matt. 26:61; 27:40; Mark 14:58.

20 Then said the Jews: Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou raise it in three days?

21 But he spake of the temple of his *body.

Col. 2:9; 1 Cor. 3:16.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples *remembered that he had said this unto them: And they believed the †Scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

Luke 24:8; †Ps. 16:10.

¶IV

23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should bear witness of man, *for he knew what was in man.

Ps. 7:9, &c.; Acts 1:24.
Rev. 2:23.

CHAPTER 3.

Jesus converses with Nicodemus concerning the way of life. John and his disciples.

Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named *Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews.

Chap. 7:50; 19:30.

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him: Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God, for *no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

Chap. 9:16, 33; Acts 2:22; 10:38.

3 Jesus answered and said

unto him: Verily, verily, I say unto thee, *Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Chap. 1:13; Gal. 6:15; Titus 3:5.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him: How can a man be born when he is old? can he a second time be born?

5 Jesus answered: Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of *water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

Ezek. 36:25, 27; Eph. 5:26;

Heb. 10:22.

6 That which is born of the flesh *is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Gen. 5:3; Rom. 3:23.

7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not *tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth, so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Ps. 135:7; 1 Cor. 2:11.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him: *How can these things be?

Ezek. 36:26.

10 Jesus answered and said unto him: Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, *We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.

Chap. 7:16; 8:26, 28.

12 If I have told you *earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?

Ecc. 9:16.

13 And no man hath *as-
cended up to heaven, but he
that came down from heaven,
even the Son of man who
is in heaven.

Chap. 6:62;
Ps. 47:5; Eph. 4:9, 10.

14 And as *Moses lifted up
the serpent in the wilderness,
even so must the Son of man
be lifted up;

Num. 21:8, 9.

15 That whosoever *believ-
eth in him should not perish,
but have eternal life.

Mark 16:16; Luke 19:10.

III

(Gospel day of Pentecost, 16-21.)

16 For *God so loved the
world, that he gave his only
begotten Son, that whosoever
believeth in him should not
perish, but have everlasting
life.

Chap. 15:13;
Rom. 5:8; 8:32; 1 John 3:16.

17 For God sent not his
*Son into the world to judge
the world; but that the world
through him might be saved.

Chap. 9:39; 5:45; 8:15; 12:47.

III

18 He that *believeth on
him is not judged; but he
that believeth not is judged
already, because he hath not
believed in the name of the
only begotten Son of God.

Chap. 5:24; 6:40, 47; 20:31.

19 And this is the judg-
ment, that light is *come into
the world, and men loved
darkness rather than light,
because their deeds were evil.

Chap. 1:5, 9.

20 For every one that do-
eth evil hateth the light,
neither cometh to the light,
*lest his deeds should be re-
proved.

Eph. 5:13; Job 24:13, 17.

21 But he that doeth truth
cometh to the light, that his
deeds may be made manifest,
for they are *wrought in God.

Eph. 5:8, 9.

IV

22 After these things came
Jesus and his disciples into
the land of Judea; and there
he tarried with them, *and
baptized.

Chap. 4:1, 2.

23 And John also was bap-
tizing in Enon *near to
Salim, because there was
much water there. And the
people came, and were bap-
tized.

1 Sam. 9:4.

24 For *John was not yet
cast into prison.

Matt. 14:3; Luke 8:19, 20.

IV

25 Then there arose a
question between some of
John's disciples and the Jews
about purifying.

26 And they came unto
John, and said unto him:
Rabbi, he that was with thee
beyond *Jordan, to whom
thou barest witness, †behold,
the same baptizeth, and all
men come to him.

Matt. 3:18; †Matt. 3:11.

27 John answered and said:
*A man can receive nothing,
except it be given him from
heaven.

Heb. 5:4; 1 Cor. 4:7.

28 Ye yourselves bear me
witness, that I said: *I am
not the Christ, but that I am
sent before him.

Chap. 1:20, 30; Luke 1:17.

29 He that hath the bride
is the *bridegroom; but the
friend of the bridegroom,
which standeth and heareth
him, rejoiceth greatly because

of the bridegroom's voice; this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

Matt. 9:15; 22:2; Rev. 21:9.

30 He must *increase, but I must decrease. 2 Sam. 3:1.

31 *He that cometh from above is above all; he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth; he that cometh from heaven is above all.

Chap. 8:23; Matt. 28:18; Rom. 9:5.

32 And what he hath *seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony. Chap. 5:19; 8:26, 28.

33 He that hath received his testimony *hath this seal, that God is true.

Rom. 3:4; 1 John 5:10.

34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God, for God giveth not the *Spirit by measure unto him.

Ps. 45:2, 7.

35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given *all things into his hand.

Matt. 11:27, &c.; Luke 10:22.

36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that *believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

Chap. 3:18; Mark 16:16;

1 John 5:10.

CHAPTER 4.

Jesus at the well. Nobleman at Capernaum.

When, therefore, the Lord knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and *baptized more disciples than John,

Chap. 3:22, 26.

2 Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,

3 He left Judea, and de-

parted again into Galilee, saying:

4 I must needs go through Samaria.

5 Then He cometh to a city of Samaria, called Shechem, near to the parcel of ground that *Jacob gave to his son Joseph.

Gen. 33:19; 48:22; Jos. 24:32.

6 Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well; and it was about the sixth hour.

7 Then cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water. Jesus saith unto her: Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy food.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him: How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? (for the Jews have *no dealings with the Samaritans.) 2 Kings 17:24.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her: If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink, thou wouldst have asked of him, and he would have given thee *living water.

Jer. 2:13; Chap. 7:38, 39.

11 The woman saith unto him: Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep, from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of *this water shall thirst again,

Chap. 6:58.

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall *give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. Chap. 6:27; 7:38, 39.

15 The woman saith unto him: Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus, saith unto her: Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said unto him: I have no husband. Jesus said unto her: Thou hast well said, I have no husband;

18 For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou the truth.

19 The woman saith unto him: Sir, I perceive that thou *art a prophet.

Chap. 6:14; 9:17.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in *Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

Deut. 12:5, 6, 11; 1 Kings 8:29.

21 Jesus saith unto her: Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem shall ye worship the Father.

22 Ye worship but ye *know not what. We know what we worship; for salvation is from †the Jews.

2 Kings 17:29; †Isa. 2:3;

†Luke 24:47.

23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 God is a *spirit, and they that worship must worship him in spirit and in truth.

2 Cor. 3:17.

25 The woman saith unto him: I know that *Messias cometh, who is called Christ, when he is come, he will tell us all things.

Chap. 1:41.

26 Jesus saith unto her: *I that speak unto thee am he.

Chap. 8:25; 9:37.

¶II

27 And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman, yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 So the woman left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men:

29 Come, see a man, who told me all things that ever I did; is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

¶III

31 In the meanwhile his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But he said unto them: I have *meat to eat that ye know not. Verses 34. Ps. 19:10.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another: Hath

any man brought him aught to eat?

34 Jesus saith unto them: My meat is to *do the will of him that sent me, and to †finish his work.

Chap. 5:30;
Ps. 40:8; †John 17:4.

35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh the harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are *white already to harvest.

Matt. 9:37.

36 He that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal; that he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.

37 And herein is the saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

¶IV

39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, who testified, He told me all that ever I did.

40 So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days.

41 And many more believed because of his word;

42 And said unto the woman: Now we believe, not because of thy saying; for we *have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

Chap. 17:8.

¶V

43 Now after *two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee.

Matt. 4:12.

44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country.

Mark 6:4.

45 Then when he came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast; for they also went unto the feast.

¶VI

46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where *he made the water wine.

Chap. 2:1-9.

(Gospel 21. Sunday after Trin.,
47-54.)

47 And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son, for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus unto him: *Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.

Chap. 2:18; 1 Cor. 1:22.

49 The nobleman saith unto him: Sir, come down ere my child die.

50 Jesus saith unto him: Go thy way; *thy son liveth. The man believed the word that Jesus spake unto him, and he went his way.

1 Kings 17:23.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met

him, and told him, saying: Thy son liveth.

52 Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. They said unto him: Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at that hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth; and he himself believed, and his whole house.

54 This was the second miracle that Jesus did, when he came out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAPTER 5.

Jesus heals one thirty-eight years sick.

After this there was a *feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

Lev. 23:2; Deut. 16:1.

2 Now there is in Jerusalem by the sheep *market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.

Neh. 3:1; 12:39.

3 In these lay a multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the waters. Whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, who had been infirm thirty and eight years.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that con-

dition, he saith unto him: Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The sick man answered him: Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool; but while I am coming, another step-peth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him: *Arise, take up thy bed, and walk.

Matt. 9:8; Mark 2:11; Luke 5:24.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked. *And the same day was the Sabbath.

Chap. 9:14.

¶III

10 The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured: It is the Sabbath day; *it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.

Jer. 17:21; Luke 6:2; Exod. 20:10.

11 But he answered them: He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk.

12 Then asked they him: What man is that who said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk?

13 But he that was healed wist not who it was; for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him: Behold, thou art made whole, *sin no more, lest something worse come unto thee.

Chap. 8:11; Matt. 12:45.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, who had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day.

¶III

17 But Jesus answered them: *My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

Chap. 14:10; †Chap. 9:4.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the Sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

Chap. 7:30; Phil. 2:6.

19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them: Verily, verily, I say unto you, the Son can do nothing of himself, *but what he seeth the Father do, for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

Chap. 8:11, 32; 8:28; 9:4; 14:10.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and showeth him all things *that himself doeth, and he will show him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

Chap. 1:3;

Matt. 3:17; 2 Peter 1:17.

21 For as the Father raiseth the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man, but hath given *all judgment unto the Son,

Ps. 72:1; Matt. 11:27; 1 Peter 4:5.

23 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. *He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father who sent him.

1 John 2:23.

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, *He that heareth my word, and believeth him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into judgment; but is †passed from death unto life.

Chap. 3:18, 36; 6:40, 47; 8:51; Luke 11:28; †1 John 3:14; Rom. 8:24; ††John 10:4, 16; 2 Tim. 4:1.

25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the *dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live.

Chap. 11:43, 44; Eph. 2:1, 5; 5:14.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself,

27 And hath given him authority to *execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.

Verse 22, Acts 10:42.

28 Marvel not at this; for the hour is coming, in the which all who are in the graves shall hear his voice.

29 And *shall come forth, those who have done good, unto the resurrection of life, and those who have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment.

Chap. 8:40; Dan. 12:2; Isa. 26:19.

¶IV

30 I *can of mine own self do nothing. As I hear, I judge, and my judgment is just; because I seek not †mine own will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.

Verse 19. †Chap. 6:38.

31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true.

32 There is *another who beareth witness of me; and I

know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true.

Matt. 3:17; Chap. 8:18.

¶V

33 *Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth.

Chap. 1:19, 27.

34 But I receive not witness from man, but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light; and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

36 But I have greater witness than that *of John, for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

Chap. 1:33; *Chap. 3:2; 7:31.

37 And the Father himself, who hath sent me, *hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his form.

Matt. 3:17, &c.; 17:5;

1 John 4:12.

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you; for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

¶VI

39 Search *the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life, and they are they which testify of me.

Isa. 34:16; 1 Tim. 4:13;

Luke 24:27.

40 But ye will not come to me, *that ye might have life.

Chap. 6:35.

¶VII

41 I *receive not honour from men.

Heb. 5:5; 1 Thess. 2:6.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not; if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

44 How can ye believe, who receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that *cometh from God only?

Chap. 12:43; Rom. 2:20.

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even *Moses, in whom ye trust.

Deut. 32:1, &c.

46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; *for he wrote of me.

Gen. 3:15; 22:18; 49:10;

Ps. 40:8.

47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

CHAPTER 6.

Feeding five thousand. Walking on the sea. Spiritual eating of his body and drinking his blood.

(Gospel Sunday Laetare, 1-15.)

After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 Now the passover, *a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

Levi 23:5, &c.

¶II

5 *Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw, a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip: Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

Matt. 14:15; Mark 6:34

6 And this he said to prove him, for he himself knew what he would do.

7 Philip answered him: Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one may take a little.

Mark 6:37.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, who hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes, but what are they among so many?

10 Jesus said: *Make the people sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

Matt. 14:19.

11 And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; *and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

Chap. 21:13

12 When they *were filled, he said unto his disciples: Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

Mark 8:8

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said: *This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.

Chap. 4:19; 7:40; Matt. 11:3.

15 When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, *he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

Chap. 18:36.

¶III

16 And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

17 And *entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus had not come to them.

Matt. 14:22; Mark 6:45

18 And the sea *arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

Ps. 107:25.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, *they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

Matt. 14:25

20 But he saith unto them: It is I; be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship; and immediately the ship was at the land, whither they went.

¶IV

22 The day following, when the people, which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the

boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone.

23 Howbeit there came boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord *had given thanks. Verse 11.

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him: Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said: Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, *which the Son of man shall give unto you; for him hath God the Father sealed. Chap. 3:16; 4:14; Matt. 8:17; 17:5.

28 Then said they unto him: What must we do, that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them: This is the work *of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

Enh. 1:19; Phil. 1:6.

30 They said therefore unto him: What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?

31 Our *fathers did eat

manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

Wisd. 16:20;

Gen. 18:13, 14; Ps. 78:24;

32 Then Jesus said unto them: Verily, verily, I say unto you, *Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

Verses 46.

33 For the bread of God is he who cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him: Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, *I am the bread of life. He that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

Verse 48. †Isa. 55:1;

John 4:14; 7:37.

36 But I said unto you, That ye have seen me, and believe not.

37 All *that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

Chap. 17:6, 9, 11, 12, 24.

38 For I came down from heaven, *not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

Chap. 4:34.

39 And this is the Father's will who hath sent me, that of all whom he hath given me I *should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. Chap. 10:28, 29; 17:12.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one who seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have

everlasting life; and *I will raise him up at the last day.

Chap. 5:20; 11:24; Luke 14:14.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they said: *Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

Luke 4:22. &c.

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them: Murmur not among yourselves.

44 No *man can come to me. †except the Father who hath sent me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day. Verse 65. †Jer. 31:33.

45 It is written in the *prophets: And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

Isa. 54:13; Jer. 31:33; Heb. 8:10

46 Not that *any man hath seen the Father, save he who is from God, he hath seen the Father.

Chap. 1:18; 5:37.

47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, *He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

Chap. 3:16, 18. &c.

48 I *am that bread of life.

Verse 35. &c.

49 Your *fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, †and are dead.

Exod. 16:15; Num. 11:7; †1 Cor. 10:5.

50 *This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

Verse 51, 58.

51 I am the living bread which *came down from heaven; if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever. And the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the †life of the world.

Chap. 3:13; †Heb. 10:5, 10.

52 The Jews, therefore, *strove among themselves, saying: How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

Chap. 7:43; 9:16; 10:19.

53 Then Jesus said unto them: Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye *eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

Matt. 26:26, 28.

54 *Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

Verse 27, 40, 63; Chap. 4:14.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, *dwelleth in me, and I in him.

Chap. 15:4; 4:13; 1 John 3:24.

57 As the living Father sent me, and I live by the Father; so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

58 *This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead. He that eateth this bread shall live for ever.

Verse 49, 50, 51.

IV

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 *Many therefore of his

disciples, when they heard this, said: This is an hard saying; who can hear it?

Verse 66. Matt. 11:8.

61 When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them: Doth this offend you?

62 What and if ye shall see the son of man *ascend up where he was before?

Chap. 3:13;

Mark 16:19; Luke 24:51; Eph. 4:8.

63 It is the *Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing, the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

2 Cor. 3:6.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For *Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

Chap. 2:25.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that *no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

Verse 44.

¶VI

66 From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve: Will ye also go away?

68 Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? *thou hast the words of eternal life.

Verse 68.

Matt. 7:29; Acts 5:20.

69 And we believe and are sure that *thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

Chap. 1:49; 11:27;

Matt. 16:16.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you *twelve, and one of you is a devil? Luke 6:13; †John 8:44.

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon, for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAPTER 7.

Christ preaches in the temple.

After these things Jesus walked in *Galilee, for he would not walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him.

Chap. 6:1.

2 Now the Jews' *feast of tabernacles was at hand.

Lev. 23:34.

3 His *brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

Matt. 12:46; Mark 3:31; Acts 1:14.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.

5 For *neither did his brethren believe in him.

Ps. 69:8.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, *My time is not yet come, but your time is always ready.

Chap. 2:4.

7 The world cannot hate you, *but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.

Chap. 15:18.

8 Go ye up unto this feast; I go not up yet unto this feast, for my *time is not yet fully come.

Chap. 8:20.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

¶II

10 But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much *murmuring among the people concerning him; some said, He is a good man; others said: Nay, but he deceiveth the people.

Chap. 9:16; 10:19; Matt. 21:46.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him *for fear of the Jews. Chap. 9:22; 12:42; 19:38.

¶III

14 Now about the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 The Jews marvelled, saying: *How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? Matt. 13:54; Mark 6:3.

16 Jesus answered them, and said: My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man *will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.

Chap. 3:21; 8:31, 32, 47.

18 He that speaketh of himself seeketh his *own glory, but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. Chap. 5:41.

19 Did not Moses give you the *law, and yet none of you

keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

Exod. 24:3, 4; Acts 7:33.

20 The people answered and said: *Thou hast a devil; who goeth about to kill thee?

Chap. 8:48, 52.

21 Jesus answered and said unto them: I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

22 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, not because it is of Moses, *but of the fathers; and ye on the Sabbath circumcise a man.

Gen. 17:10.

23 If a man on the Sabbath receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made *a man every whit whole on the Sabbath?

Chap. 5:9.

24 *Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

Deut. 1:16, 17.

¶IV

25 Then said some of the people of Jerusalem: Is not this he, *whom they seek to kill?

Verse 19.

26 But, lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is; but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying: Ye both know me, and know whence I am. I am not come of myself, *but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

Chap. 8:26, 42.

29 But *I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

Chap. 8:55; Matt. 11:27.

30 Then they sought to take him, but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

Chap. 8:20; Luke 22:53.

31 But many *of the people believed on him, and said: When Christ cometh, will he do †more miracles than these which this man hath done?

Chap. 8:30; †Chap. 20:30, 31.

IV

32 The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them: *Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.

Chap. 13:33; 16:16.

34 Ye shall *seek me, and shall not find me, and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

Chap. 8:21; Hos. 5:6.

35 Then said the Jews among themselves: Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto *the dispersed among the Gentiles and teach the Gentiles?

Isa. 11:12; 1 Peter 1:1.

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me, and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

VI

Now on the last day, *that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying: If

any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

Lev. 23:36; Isa. 55:1; Rev. 22:17.

38 He that believeth on me, *as the Scripture hath said, out of him shall flow rivers of living water.

Isa. 44:3; Joel 3:1.

39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive, for the Holy Spirit was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.

VII

40 Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said: *Of a truth this is the Prophet.

Deut. 18:15.

41 Others said: This is the Christ. But some said: *Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

Chap. 1:46; 4:42.

42 Hath not the Scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the *town of Bethlehem, where David was? Ps. 132:11;

Micha 5:2; Matt. 2:5; 22:42.

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him; *but no man laid hands on him.

Verse 30.

VIII

45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them: Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered: *Never man spake like this man.

Matt. 7:28. &c.

47 Then answered them

the Pharisees: Are ye also deceived?

48 *Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him?

Chap. 12:42; Acts 6:7.

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

50 *Nicodemus saith unto them, he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,

Chap. 3:2.

51 Doth our law judge any man, *before it hear him, and know what he has done?

Lev. 19:15; Exod. 23:1; Deut. 17:8, &c.

52 They answered and said unto him: Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look, for *out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

Verse 41. Isa. 9:1, 2; Matt. 4:15

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAPTER 8.

Christ and the adulteress. Christ's person and office. Concerning his disciples.

But Jesus went unto the Mount of Olives.

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people come unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

¶II

3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They said unto him: Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, *that such

should be stoned, but what sayest thou?

Lev. 20:10;

Deut. 22:22; Ezek. 16:38, 40.

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down and with his finger wrote on the ground.

7 But when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them: *He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

Rom. 2:1; Deut. 17:7.

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

9 When they heard it, being *convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the least. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

Rom. 2:22.

10 And Jesus lifted up himself, and seeing none but the woman, said unto her: Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her: *Neither do I condemn thee, †go, and sin no more.

Luke 9:56; †John 5:14.

¶III

12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying: I am the *light of the world; he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

John 1:5, 9; Isa. 9:2; 42:6, 7; 49:6.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, *Thou bearest witness of thyself; thy witness is not true. Chap. 5:31.

14 Jesus answered and said unto them: *Though I bear witness of myself, yet my witness is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.

Chap. 5:31.

15 Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgment is true; for I am not *alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

Verse 29. Chap. 16:32.

17 It is also written in your law, that the *testimony of two men is true.

Deut. 17:6;

Chap. 19:15; Matt. 18:16.

18 I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye *neither know me, nor my Father; if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

Chap. 26:3; 14:7.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple, and *no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.

Chap. 7:30; Luke 22:53.

¶IV

21 Then said Jesus again unto them: I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins. Whither I go, *ye cannot come.

Chap. 7:35; 13:33.

22 Then said the Jews: Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them: Ye are from beneath; I am from above; ye are of this world; I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins; *for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

Mark 16:16.

25 Then said they unto him: Who art thou? Jesus said unto them: Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you; but he that sent me is true; *and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

Chap. 7:28; 3:32.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

¶V

28 Then said Jesus unto them: *When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

Chap. 8:14; 12:32; Rom. 1:4.

29 And he that sent me *is with me; the Father hath not left me alone, for I do always those things that please him.

Verse 16. Chap. 4:34.

30 As he spake these words, *many believed on him.

Chap. 7:31; 10:42; 11:45.

¶VI

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews who believed on him: If ye *continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;

Chap. 7:17; 15:10, 14.

32 And ye shall know the truth, *and the truth shall make you free. Verse 36.

33 They answered him: We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man; how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them: Verily, verily, I say unto you, *Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

Rom. 6:16, 20; 2 Peter 2:19.

35 And the servant *abideth not in the house for ever, the Son abideth ever.

Gen. 21:10.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you *free, ye shall be free indeed. Verse 32.

Rom. 6:18, 22; Gal. 5:1.

37 I know that ye are *Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

Matt. 3:9.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my *Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

Chap. 3:32.

39 They answered and said unto him: *Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them: If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

Matt. 3:9; Luke 3:8.

40 But now *ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I heard of God, this did not Abraham.

Ps. 10:9; 119, 161, 160.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him: We are not born of fornication, we have one Father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them: If God were your Father, ye would love me; for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

44 Ye *are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: He was a murderer from the beginning, and ††abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own, for he is †††a liar, and the father of it.

John 3:8; 1 Gen. 3:4; Ps. 17:4; ††2 Peter 2:4; †††1 Kings 22:22.

45 But because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

(Gospel Sunday Judica, 46-59)

46 Who *of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

Isa. 53:9; 2 Cor. 5:21; 1 Peter 2:22.

47 He that *is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

Chap. 10:27; 1 John 4:6.

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him: Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and *hast a devil?

Chap. 7:20; 10:20.

49 Jesus answered: I have not a devil; but I *honour my Father, and ye dishonour me.

Chap. 7:18.

50 But I *seek not mine own glory; there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

Chap. 5:30, 41; 7:18.

51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, *If a man keep my word, he shall never see death.

Chap. 6:40, 47; 11:26.

52 Then said the Jews unto him: Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and *the prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

Zech. 1:5; Heb. 11:13.

53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

54 Jesus answered: If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, *I shall be a liar like unto you; but I know him, and keep his saying. Chap. 7:28, 29.

56 Your father Abraham *rejoiced to see my day; and he saw it, and was glad.

Luke 10:24; Heb. 11:13.

57 Then said the Jews unto him: Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them: Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, *I am.

Exod. 3:14; Isa. 43:13; Rev. 1:8.

59 Then *took they up stones to cast at him; but Jesus hid himself, and †went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

Chap. 10:31, 39; †Luke 4:30.

CHAPTER 9.

The one born blind receiveth his sight.

And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man who was blind from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying: Master, *who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

Luke 13:2.

3 Jesus answered: Neither did this man sin, nor his parents: but that *the works of God should be made manifest in him.

Chap. 11:4.

4 I *must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.

Chap. 4:34; 5:19, 36; 11:9; 12:35.

5 As long as I am in the world, *I am the light of the world.

Chap. 1:9; 8:12.

6 When he had thus spoken, he *spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,

Mark 7:33; 8:23.

7 And said unto him: Go, wash in the pool *of Siloam, which is by interpretation, Sent. He went therefore and washed, and came seeing.

Neh. 3:15; 2 Kings 5:14.

¶¶¶

8 The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said: Is not this he that *sat and begged? Acts 3:2, 10.

9 Some said: This is he; others said: He is like him; but he said: I am he.

10 Therefore said they un-

to him: How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered: A man that is *called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash; and I went and washed, and I received sight. Verse 6, 7.

12 Then said they unto him: Where is he? He said: I do not know.

III

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

14 *But it was the Sabbath when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

Chap. 5:9.

15 Then the Pharisees also asked him how he received his sight. He said unto them: He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees: This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath. Others said: *How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

Verse 31, 33. Chap. 3:2; 7:12.

17 They say unto the blind man: What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said: *He is a prophet. Chap. 4:19; 6:14.

IV

18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And asked them, saying: Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered and said: We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind.

21 But by what means he now seeth, we do not know; or who hath opened his eyes, we do not know, he is of age, ask him; he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, *because they feared the Jews; for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

Chap. 7:13; 12:42.

†Verse 34. Chap. 16:2.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him: *Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

Jos. 7:19; 1 Sam. 6:5.

25 He answered and said: Whether he be a sinner, I do not know; one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again: What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them: I have told you already, and ye did not hear, wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him and said: Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses; as for this man, *we know not from whence he is. Chap. 8:14.

30 The man answered and said unto them: *Why herein is a marvelous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Chap. 9:10.

31 Now we know that *God heareth not sinners; but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

Job 27:9; 35:13; Ps. 66:18; Isa. 1:15; Prov. 15:29; 28:9.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.

33 If this man *were not from God, he could do nothing. Verse 16.

34 They answered and said unto him: *Thou wast altogether born in sin, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out. Verse 2, 22.

¶V

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him: Dost thou believe *on the Son of God?

Matt. 14:33; Mark 1:1; Chap. 10:36; 1 John 5:18.

36 He answered and said: Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him: Thou hast both seen him, and it is *he that talketh with thee. Chap. 4:26.

38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

39 And Jesus said: For judgment I am come into this world, that those who see not might see; and that those who *see might be made blind. Matt. 13:13; John 5:22, 27.

40 And some of the Pharisees who were with him heard these words, and *said unto him: Are we blind also? 2 Kings 17:9; Rom. 2:19.

41 Jesus said unto them: If ye were blind, ye would have no sin; but now ye say, We see, therefore your sin remaineth.

CHAPTER 10.

Christ the good shepherd and his sheep. Whether he be the Messiah. (Gospel Pentec. Tuesday, 1-10.)

Verily, verily, I say unto you: He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice, and he calleth his own sheep *by name, and leadeth them out. Isa. 43:1.

4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him; for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake Jesus unto them; but they understood not what things they

were which he spake unto them.

¶II

7 Then said Jesus unto them again: Verily, verily, I say unto you: I am the door of the sheep.

8 All that came *before me are thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not hear them.

Jer. 23:2.

9 I *am the door; by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

Chap. 14:6; Eph. 2:18.

10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more *abundantly. Ps. 23:1; Isa. 44:1.

(Gospel Sunday. Miser. Dom. 11-16.)

11 I am the *good shepherd. The good shepherd giveth †his life for the sheep.

Ps. 23:1; 30:2; Isa. 40:11;

Ezek. 34:11-23; Chap. 37:24;

1 Peter 2:25; †John 15:13.

12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, *and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

Zech. 11:16, 17.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and *know my sheep, and am known of mine. 2 Tim. 2:19.

15 As *the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father; and I lay down my life for the sheep.

Matt. 11:27; Chap. 15:13.

16 And *other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

Ezek. 37:22; Mich. 2:12; Acts 2:39.

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, *because I lay down my life, that I may take it again.

Isa. 53:7, 8, 12; Heb. 2:9.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. *This commandment have I received from my Father.

Chap. 14:31; 15:10; Acts 2:24, 32.

¶III

19 There arose a *division again among the Jews for these sayings. Chap. 7:43; 9:16.

20 And many of them said: *He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

Chap. 7:20; 8:48, 52.

21 Others said: These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

¶IV

22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Jesus walked in the temple *in Solomon's porch.

1 Kings 6:3; Acts 3:11; 5:12.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him: How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, *tell us plainly.

Chap. 16:29.

25 Jesus answered them:

I told you, and ye believe not. The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear *witness of me.

Chap. 5:36; 3:2

26 But ye *believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

Chap. 8:45; 1 John 4:6.

27 My *sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. Chap. 8:47.

28 And I give unto them eternal life; and *they shall never perish, neither shall any one pluck them out of my hand.

Chap. 6:37; 17:11, 12; 18:9.

29 My Father, who gave them to me, *is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

Chap. 14:28.

30 I and my Father *are one.

Chap. 17:11, 22.

31 Then the *Jews took up stones again to stone him.

Chap. 8:59.

32 Jesus answered them: Many good works have I showed you from my Father; for which of those works do *ye stone me?

Chap. 8:59.

33 The Jews answered him, saying: For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

34 Jesus answered them: Is it not written *in your law, I said, Ye are gods? Ps. 82:6.

35 If he called them gods, *unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken;

Rom. 13:1.

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father sanctified, and

sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; *because I said, I am the Son of God?

Chap. 5:17-20; 6:27; 8:17; 8:42.

37 If I do not the *works of my Father, believe me not.

Chap. 15:24.

38 But if I do, though ye *believe not me, believe the works; that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.

Chap. 14:11; 17:21.

¶V

39 They sought again to take him; *but he escaped out of their hand,

Chap. 8:59; Luke 4:30.

40 And went away again beyond Jordan into the place *where John at first baptized; and there he abode. Chap. 1:28.

41 And many resorted unto him, and said: John did no miracle, but all things that John spake of this man were *true.

Chap. 8:30.

42 And many *believed on him there. Chap. 8:30; 11:45.

CHAPTER 11.

The resurrection of Lazarus.

Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of *Mary and her sister Martha.

Luke 10:38, 39.

2 And it was that Mary *who anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.

Chap. 12:8; Matt. 26:7.

3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying: Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 But when Jesus heard it,

he said: This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, *that the Son of God may be glorified thereby.

Chap. 9:3.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 Therefore, when he had heard that he was sick, he *abode two days still in the same place where he was.

Chap. 10:40.

7 Then after this he saith to his disciples: Let us go into Judea again.

8 His disciples say unto him: *Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?

Chap. 8:59.

9 Jesus answered: Are there not twelve hours in the day? If a man walk in the day, *he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

Chap. 9:4; Luke 13:32.

10 But if a man walk in the *night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

Chap. 12:35.

11 These things said he, and after that he saith unto them: Our friend Lazarus *sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.

Matt. 9:24; Acts 7:60.

12 Then said his disciples: Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly: Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your

sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas, who is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples: Let us also go, that we may die with him.

III

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already.

18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off.

19 And many of the Jews come to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him; but Mary still sat in the house.

21 Then said Martha unto Jesus: Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

22 But even now, I know that whatsoever *thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.

Chap. 9:31, 33.

23 Jesus saith unto her: Thy brother shall rise again.

24 Martha saith unto him: I know that he shall rise again *in the resurrection at the last day.

Chap. 5:29; 6:40; Luke 14:14.

25 Jesus said unto her: I am *the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.

Chap. 5:21; 6:39, 40; 1 John 5:10.

26 And whosoever liveth

and *believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? Chap. 6:35, 40, 50.

27 She saith unto him: Yea, Lord! I *believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, who should come into the world. Chap. 6:69; Chap. 4:42.

III

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying: The Master is come, and calleth thee.

29 As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place *where Martha met him. Verse 20.

31 The *Jews then who were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying: She goeth unto the grave to weep there. Verse 19.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him: *Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. Verse 19.

IV

33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping who came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled,

34 And said: Where have ye laid him? They say unto him: Lord, come and see.

35 Jesus *wept. Luke 19:41.

36 Then said the Jews: Behold how he loved him!

37 But some of them said: Could not this man, who *opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that this man should not have died? Chap. 9:6.

38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a *stone lay upon it. Matt. 27:60.

39 Jesus said: Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him: Lord, by this time he stinketh; for he hath been dead four days.

40 Jesus saith unto her: Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest *see the glory of God? Rom. 8:4.

41 Then they *took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said: Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. Mark 7:34.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the *people who stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. Chap. 12:30.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice: Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them: Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews who came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, *believed on him.

Chap. 3:23; 10:42; 12:11, 18.

46 But some of them went away to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

IV

47 Then *gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said: What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.

Matt. 26:3; Luke 22:2; Ps. 2:2.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him; and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation.

49 And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them: Ye know nothing at all.

50 Nor consider *that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. Chap. 18:14.

51 And this spake he not of himself, but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;

52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather *together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. Chap. 10:16;

Eph. 2:14, 16; 1 John 2:2.

53 Then from that day forth they took counsel together how to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked

no more openly among the Jews, but went thence into a country near to the wilderness, into a city *called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

Chap. 4:1, 3; 7:1.

VI

55 Now the Jews' passover was nigh at hand; and many out of the country went up to Jerusalem before the passover, *to purify themselves.

2 Chron. 30:17.

56 Then *sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple: What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

Chap. 7:11.

57 Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given the commandment, that, if any man knew where he was, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAPTER 12.

Anointing of Jesus. His entry into Jerusalem. Sermons.

Then Jesus six days before the passover *came to Bethany, where Lazarus was who had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

Matt. 26:6; Mark 14:3.

2 There they made him a supper; and Martha served; but *Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

Chap. 11:14, 43; Matt. 26:6.

3 Then took *Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair, and

the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

Mark 14:3; Luke 10:38, 39.

4 Then saith *one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, who should betray him,

Matt. 26:8.

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and *had the bag, and bare what was put therein. Chap. 13:29.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone; against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For *the poor ye have always with you, but me ye have not always.

Deut. 15:11; Matt. 26:11.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, *whom he had raised from the dead.

Chap. 11:43, 44.

¶II

10 But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

¶III

12 On the next day *much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

Matt. 21:8; Mark 11:8.

13 Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried: *Hosanna;

Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Ps. 118: 25, 26; Matt. 23:39; Mark 11:8, 9.

14 And Jesus, having found a *young ass, sat thereon; as it is written: Matt. 21:7.

15 Fear not, daughter of Zion; *behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

Zech. 9:9; Isa. 62:11; Matt. 21:5.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first, but *when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

Luke 18:34.

17 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare witness.

18 For this cause the people also met him, *for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

Verse 11.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves: Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him. Chap. 11:47, 48.

¶IV

20 And there were certain Greeks among them that came up *to worship at the feast.

1 Kings 8:41; Acts 17:4.

21 The same came therefore to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying: Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew; and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

¶V

23 And Jesus *answered them, saying: The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

(Gospel Laurentii, 24-26.)

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a *corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone, but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. 1 Cor. 15:36, 37.

25 *He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.

Matt. 10:39; Luke 17:33.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where *I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father †honor. Chap. 14:3; †1 Sam. 2:30.

27 Now is my *soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

Matt. 26:38; Luke 12:50.

28 Father, glorify thy name. *Then came there a voice from heaven, saying: I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.

Matt. 3:17.

29 The people, therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered, others said: An angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered and said: This voice came not because of me, *but for your sakes. Chap. 11:42.

31 Now is the judgment of this world; now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I *be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me. Chap. 3:14; Rom. 5:18.

33 This he said, signifying what death he should die.

¶VI

34 The people answered him: We have heard out of the law that Christ *abideth forever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? Ps. 110:4; 89:36, 37.

35 Then Jesus said unto them: Yet a little while is *the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you, for he that †walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.

Chap. 1:9; 8:12; †Chap. 11:10.

36 While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the *children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them. Eph. 5:9; Luke 16:8; 1 John 2:9-11.

¶VII

37 But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him;

38 That the saying of Esaiiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake: Lord, *who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? Isa. 53:1; Rom. 10:16.

39 Therefore they could not believe, for *Esaiiah said again: Isa. 6:10; Luke 8:10, &c.

40 He hath *blinded their eyes, and hardened their

heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

Isa. 6:9; Matt. 13:14.

41 These things said Esaiiah, *when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

Isa. 6:7.

42 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

43 For they *loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. Chap. 5:44.

¶VIII

44 Jesus cried and said: He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, *but on him that sent me.

1 Peter 1:21; Mark 9:37.

45 And he that *seeth me seeth him that sent me.

Chap. 14:9.

46 I am come a light into the world, *that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

Chap. 1:9; 3:19; 8:12; 9:5.

47 And if any man hear my words, and believe not, *I judge him not; for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

Chap. 5:45; 8:15, 26.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the *word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

Deut. 18:19; Mark 16:16.

49 For I have not spoken of myself; *but the Father

who sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. Chap. 14:10; Deut. 18:18.

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

CHAPTER 13.

Feet washing. Judas' betrayal. Peter's denial.

(Gospel Maunday Thursday, 1-15.)

Now *before the feast of the passover, Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own who were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

Matt. 26:2;

Mark 14:1; Luke 22:1.

2 And supper being ended, *the devil having put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him;

Luke 22:3.

3 Jesus *knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

Chap. 13:4;

Matt. 11:27; 28:18; Acts 2:36.

4 Riseth from supper, *and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself.

Luke 22:27; Phil. 2:7, 8.

5 After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter. And Peter saith unto him: Lord, *dost thou wash my feet?

Matt. 3:14.

7 Jesus answered and said unto him: What I do thou knowest not now; *but thou shalt know it hereafter.

Verse 12.

8 Peter saith unto him: Thou shalt never wash my feet. *Jesus answered him: If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

Chap. 3:5; Eph. 5:26.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him: Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

10 Jesus saith to him: He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit; and ye are *clean, but not all. Chap. 15:3.

11 For he *knew who should betray him; therefore said he: Ye are not all clean.

Chap. 6:64.

¶II

12 So after he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them: Know ye what I have done to you?

13 Ye call me *Master and Lord, and ye say well, for so I am.

Matt. 23:8, 10;
Luke 6:46; Phil. 2:11.

14 If I then, *your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet.

Luke 22:27; Rom. 12:10.

15 For I have given you an *example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

1 Peter 2:21; 1 John 2:6.

16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, *The servant is not greater than his lord; neither

he that is sent greater than he that sent him.

Chap. 15:20; Matt. 10:24.

17 If ye *know these things, blessed are ye if ye do them.

James 1:25.

¶III

18 I speak not of you all. I know whom I have chosen, but that the Scripture may be *fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.

Ps. 41:10, &c.; Matt. 26:23.

19 Now I tell you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he.

20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, *He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

Matt. 10:40; Luke 9:48;
1 Thess. 4:8.

21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said: *Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

Matt. 26:20, 21; Acts 1:17.

22 The disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there *was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.

Chap. 21:20, 24.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him: Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered: He it is, to whom I shall give a

piece of bread *after dipping it in the dish. And when he had dipped it, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

Matt. 26:23.

27 And *after he had received it Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him: That thou doest, do quickly.

Luke 22:3.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some of them thought, because Judas *had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor.

Chap. 12:6.

30 He then, after receiving the piece of bread, went immediately out. And it was night.

¶IV

31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said: *Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

Chap. 12:23; 1 Peter 4:11.

32 If God be glorified in him, *God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

Chap. 12:23; 17:1.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me; and as I said unto the Jews, *Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you.

Chap. 7:34; 8:21.

34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one *another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. Mark 12:31, &c.; Eph. 5:2; James 2:8.

35 By *this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

1 John 2:5; 4:20.

¶V

36 Simon Peter said unto him: Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him: Whither I go, *thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

Chap. 7:34; †Chap. 21:18, 19.

37 Peter said unto him: Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

38 Jesus answered him: Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

Mark 14:30, 72; Luke 22:34.

CHAPTER 14.

Christ's going to the father. Concerning true faith, love, prayer and true peace.

(Gospel Philip and James, 1-14.)

Let *not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me.

Verse 27. Chap. 16:22, 23.

2 In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

2 Cor. 5:1.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive *you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

Chap. 12:26; 17:24;

1 Thess. 4:17.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

¶III

5 Thomas saith unto him: Lord, we know not whither thou goest, how can we know the way?

6 Jesus saith unto him: *I am the way, the truth, and the life, no man cometh unto the Father, †but by me.

Heb. 9:8; †Eph. 2:8; 3:12;

Heb. 7:25; Chap. 10:9.

2 Cor. 3:4; 1 Peter 1:21.

7 *If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also; from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

Chap. 8:19.

¶III

8 Philip saith unto him: Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Jesus saith unto him: Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? *he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; how sayest thou, Shew us the Father?

Chap. 12:45; Col. 1:15; Heb. 1:3.

10 Believest thou not that *I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself; but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

Chap. 10:38; 17:21, 23.

11 Believe me that *I am in the Father, and the Father in me, †for else believe me for the very work's sake.

Verse 20. †Chap. 10:25, 38.

12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also, and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

13 And whatsoever ye shall *ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

Mark 11:24, &c.; Luke 11:9;

James 1:5.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it.

¶IV

15 If ye *love me, keep my commandments.

Chap. 15:10; 1 John 5:3.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you *another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

Chap. 15:26; 16:7; Rom. 8:15, 26.

17 Even the Spirit of truth; whom the *world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him, ye know him; †for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

Eccles. 1:5; †John 7:39.

18 I will not leave you comfortless, *I will come to you.

Jer. 51:5; Matt. 28:20.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me, and because I live, ye shall live also.

20 In that day ye shall know that *I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

Chap. 17:21, 22.

21 He that hath my commandments, and *keepeth them, he it is that loveth me. And he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself unto him.

Eccles. 2:18; 1 John 2:5; 5:3.

¶V

22 Judas, not Iscariot, saith unto him: Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy-

self unto us, and not unto the world?

¶VI

(Gospel on the day of Pentecost, 23-31.)

23 Jesus answered and said unto him: If a *man love me, he will keep my word, and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our tabode with him.

Verse 21. Chap. 13:34; †Eph. 3:17.

24 He that loveth me not keepeth not my words. And the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's *who sent me.

Chap. 7:28; 12:49.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, who is the Holy Spirit, whom the *Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Chap. 15:26, &c.; Luke 24:49.

¶VII

27 *Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. Phil. 4:7; Col. 3:15.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father, for my Father *is greater than I.

Chap. 10:29, 30; Phil. 2:6.

29 And now I have told you before it come to pass,

that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you, for the *prince of the world cometh, and he hath nothing in me.

Chap. 12:31; 16:11.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and *as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

Chap. 10:18; Phil. 2:8; Heb. 5:8.

CHAPTER 15.

Admonition to be steadfast in faith, love and patience.

I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 *Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away, and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

Matt. 15:13.

3 *Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

Chap. 13:10; 17:17; Eph. 5:26.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine. ye are the branches. He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit, for *without me ye can do nothing.

2 Cor. 3:5; Phil. 1:11; 4:13.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and *cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

Matt. 3:10; 7:19.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall *ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

Mark 11:24; John 14:13, 14.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, *that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.

Matt. 5:16; Phil. 1:11.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep *my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

Chap. 14:15; 21:23.

¶II

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

12 This is my commandment, *That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

Mark 12:31; 1 Peter 4:8.

13 Greater love *hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

Chap. 3:16; 10:11; Eph. 5:2.

14 Ye are my *friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

Chap. 8:31; 14:15, 23.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I call you friends, for all things *that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

Gen. 18:17; Acts 20:27.

¶III

16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and

ordained you, that ye should *go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

Matt. 28:19; Mark 16:15;

Col. 1:6.

(Gospel Simon's and Jude 17-28.)

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it *hated me before it hated you.

Chap. 7:7; 1 John 3:1, 13.

19 If ye were *of the world, the world would love his own; but †because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

1 John 4:5; †John 17:14.

20 Remember the word that I said unto you, *The servant is not greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my word, they will keep yours also.

Matt. 10:24; Luke 6:40; John 13:16.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, *because they know not him that sent me.

Chap. 16:3.

22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, *they had not had sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin.

Chap. 9:41; Rom. 1:20;

James 4:17.

623 He that hateth me hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done *among them the works which none other did, they had not had sin; but now

have they both seen and hated both me and my Father.

Chap. 10:37.

25 But this cometh to pass, that the word may be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me *without a cause.

Ps. 85:19; 69:4.

(Gospel Sunday Exaudi, 15:26 - 16, 4.)

26 But when *the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.

Chap. 14:26; Luke 24:49; Acts 1:4.

27 And ye also bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAPTER 16.

Persecutions. Office of the Holy Spirit. Answer to prayers. Flight of disciples.

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They *shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth an service unto God.

Matt. 10:17; 24:9; Mark 13:9.

3 And these things will they do, because they have *not known the Father, nor me.

Chap. 15:21; Rom. 10:2.

¶¶¶

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

(Gospel Sunday Cantate, 5-15.)

5 But *now I go to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

Chap. 7:33; 13:3; 14:26.

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

¶¶¶

7 Nevertheless I tell *you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away †the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

Chap. 6:46; †Chap. 14:16, 26.

8 And when he is come, he will bring conviction to the world as to sin, and as to righteousness, and as to judgment.

9 *As to sin, because they believe not on me;

Acts 2:22, &c.

10 As to righteousness, *because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more;

Acts 2:32; 3:14; 5:32.

11 As to judgment, *because the prince ruling this world has been judged.

Chap. 12:31; 14:30; Acts 26:18.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, *but ye cannot bear them now.

1 Cor. 3:1-2; Heb. 5:12.

13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, *he will guide you into all truth; for he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak, and he will shew you things to come.

Chap. 14:26; 1 John 2:27; Rom. 8:14.

14 He shall glorify me, for

he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 *All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

Chap. 17:10; Matt. 11:27.

¶IV

(Gospel Sunday Jubilate, 16-23.)

16 A *little while, and ye shall not see me; and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Chap. 7:33; 13:33; 14:10.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves: What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me; and again, a little while, and ye shall see me; and, because I go to the Father?

18 They said, therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them: Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me; and again, a little while, and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice; ye shall be sorrowful, *but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

Ps. 30:11.

21 *A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come. But as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remember-

eth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. Gen. 3:16; Isa. 26:17.

22 And ye therefore now have sorrow, but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and *your joy no one taketh from you.

Isa. 35:10; Acts. 2:46; 1 Peter 1:8.

(Gospel Sunday Rogate, 28-30.)

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall *ask the Father in My name, he will give it you.

Mark 11:24, &c.;

Chap. 14:20; 15:16.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, *that your joy may be full. Chap. 15:11.

¶V

25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs, but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 In that *day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you.

Chap. 14:20.

27 For the Father *himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have †believed that I came forth from God.

Chap. 14:21; †Chap. 17:8, 25.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world; again, I *leave the world, and go unto the Father.

Chap. 13:3.

29 His disciples said unto him: Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb.

30 Now are we sure that thou *knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee, by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. Chap. 21:17.

31 Jesus answered them: Do ye now believe?

32 Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be *scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

Zech. 13:7; Matt. 26:31;
John 8:16.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have *peace. In the world ye have tribulation: but be of good †cheer; I have overcome the world.

Chap. 14:27; Rom. 5:1;
Eph. 2:14; Col. 1:20; †Isa. 35:4.

CHAPTER 17.

Christ's prayer for himself, for his disciples and for his church.

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up *his eyes to heaven, and said: Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee. Chap. 11:41; 12:23; 13:32.

2 As thou hast *given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. Matt. 11:27, &c.; 28:18.

3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, even Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

4 I glorified thee on the earth; I *finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

Chap. 4:34; 5:36; 9:3; 19:30.

5 And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with *thee before the world was.

Chap. 1:1; 8:58; 10:30; 14:9.

¶III

6 I manifested thy name unto the men that thou gavest me out of the world; thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I *came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

Chap. 16:27, 30.

9 I pray for them; I pray not for the world, but for them whom thou *hast given me, for they are thine.

Chap. 6:37; 1 John 3:19.

10 And all mine are thine, *and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

Chap. 16:15.

¶III

11 I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, *as we are one.

Chap. 10:30; 13:1; 16:23.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name; those that thou gavest me I have kept, and

*none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; †that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

Chap. 6:39; Heb. 2:13;
†Ps. 109:8.

18 And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might *have my joy fulfilled in themselves. Chap. 15:11; 18:19.

14 I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest *keep them from the evil. 2 Thess. 3:3; Gal. 1:4; Matt. 6:13.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctify them through thy truth; *thy word is truth. Chap. 8:40; Ps. 119:142, 151.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I *sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

Heb. 2:11; 10:10.

¶IV

20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall *believe on me through their word,

Chap. 20:31.

21 That they all may be *one, as thou Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us, that

the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

Gal. 3:28; Rom. 12:5.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; *that they may be one, even as we are one;

Acts 4:32; 1 John 1:3.

23 I in them, and thou in me, *that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and lovest them, as thou hast loved me.

1 Cor. 6:17; Col. 3:14.

¶V

24 Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; *that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me; for thou lovest me before the foundation of the world.

Chap. 12:26; 14:3;
1 Thess. 4:17.

25 O righteous Father, *the world hath not known thee; but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

Chap. 15:21; 16:9.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it; that the love wherewith thou hast *loved me may be in them, and I in them.

Chap. 15:9, 15.

CHAPTER 18.

Christ's sufferings before Caiphas and Pilate.

When Jesus had spoken these words, he *went forth with his disciples over the †brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples.

Matt. 26:36; †2 Sam. 15:23.

2 Now Judas also, who betrayed him, knew the place, for Jesus often *resorted thither with his disciples.

Luke 21:37; 22:39.

3 *Judas then, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

Matt. 26:47; Acts 1:16.

4 Jesus therefore, *knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them: Whom seek ye?

Chap. 19:28.

5 They answered him: Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them: *I am he. And Judas also, who betrayed him, stood with them. Chap. 6:20.

6 As soon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said: Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered: I have told you that I am he, if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way;

9 That the saying *might be fulfilled, which he spake: Of them which thou gavest me have I lost none.

Chap. 17:12.

10 Then, Simon Peter having a sword, *drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus.

Matt. 26:51; Mark 14:47.

11 Then said Jesus unto Peter: Put up thy sword into

the sheath; *the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I †not drink it?

Matt. 20:22; †Ps. 110:7.

12 Then the *band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him,

Matt. 26:57; Mark 14:53.

13 And *led him to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, who was the high priest that same year.

Luke 22:54.

14 Now Caiaphas *was he, who gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

Chap. 11:50.

III

15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.

16 But *Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple, who was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

Matt. 26:69. &c.; Luke 22:54.

17 Then saith the damsel that kept the door unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this man's disciples? He saith, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals, for it was cold; and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

III

19 The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his teaching.

20 Jesus answered him: *I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret spake I nothing. Luke 2:46; 4:14, 15; John 7:14, 26.

21 Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them, behold, they know what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, *one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying: Answerest thou the high priest so?

1 Kings 22:24; Jer. 21:2; Acts 23:2.

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil; but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.

25 Simon *Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said: I am not. Matt. 26:58, 69; Mark 14:60.

26 One of the servants of the high priest, being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off, saith: Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied again; and *immediately the cock crew. Matt. 26:74; Luke 22:60.

IV

28 Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto *the hall of judgment. And it was early. And they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover. Matt. 27:2; Mark 15:1; Acts 3:18.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said: What accusation bring ye against this man?

30 They answered and said unto him: If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them: *Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him: It is not lawful for us to put any man to death. Chap. 19:6.

32 That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, *which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

Matt. 20:19; Mark 10:33; Luke 18:32.

33 Then Pilate *entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him: Art thou the King of the Jews?

Matt. 27:11; Luke 23:3.

34 Jesus answered him: Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered: Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests delivered thee unto me; what hast thou done?

36 Jesus answered: *My kingdom is not of this world; if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews, but now is my kingdom not from hence. Chap. 6:15; Luke 12:14.

37 Pilate therefore said unto him: Art thou a king then? Jesus answered: Thou sayest I am a king.* To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. 1 Tim. 6:13; 1 John 3:19.

38 Pilate saith unto him: What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them: *I find in him no fault at all.

Matt. 27:23; Mark 15:14; Luke 23:14.

39 But ye *have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

Matt. 27:15; Mark 15:6.

40 Then cried they all again, saying: Not this man, but Barabbas. *Now Barabbas was a robber. Matt. 27:20;

Mark 15:11; Luke 23:18.

CHAPTER 19.

Christ's sufferings at the hands of the soldiers. Crown of thorns, crucifixion, death and burial.

Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and *scourged him.

Matt. 27:27; Mark 10:34; 15:15.

2 And the soldiers *platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe. Matt. 27:9.

3 And said: Hail, King of the Jews! and they *smote him with their hands.

Matt. 26:67.

4 Pilate *therefore went out again, and saith unto them: Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.

Chap. 18:29.

5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them: Behold the man!

6 *When the chief priests and officers saw him, they cried out, saying: Crucify him! Crucify him! Pilate saith unto them: Take ye him, and crucify him, for I find no fault in him. Acts 3:13.

7 The Jews answered him: *We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God. Lev. 24:15, 16; Deut. 18:20.

¶II

8 When Pilate therefore heard this saying, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again *into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus: Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

Chap. 18:33; Isa. 53:7.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him: Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have *power to release thee?

Chap. 18:39.

11 Jesus answered him: Thou wouldst have *no power at all against me, except

it were given thee from above; therefore he that delivered me, unto thee hath greater sin. Luke 22:53.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him; but the Jews cried out, saying: *If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend. Whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar. Luke 23:2.

13 When Pilate heard these words, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 Now it was the preparation of the passover, about the sixth hour. And he saith unto the Jews: Behold your King!

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him. *crucify him! Pilate saith unto them: Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered: We have no king but Caesar.

Verse 6. Gen. 49:10.

16 *Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away.

Matt. 27:26; Mark 15:15; Luke 23:24.

17 And he bearing his cross went forth into a *place called the place of a skull, which is called in Hebrew Golgotha.

Matt. 27:33, &c.; Heb. 13:12.

18 Where they crucified him, and two others with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

¶III

19 *And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

Matt. 27:37; Luke 23:38.

20 This title then was read by many of the Jews; for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city, and it was written in Hebrew, and in Greek, and in Latin.

21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate: Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said: I am King of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered: What I have written I have written.

¶IV

23 Then *the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also his coat. Now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.

Matt. 27:35;

Mark 15:24; Luke 23:34.

24 They said therefore among themselves: Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith: *They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things the soldiers did.

Ps. 22:18.

25 Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary, the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 When Jesus therefore

saw his mother and *the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother: Woman, behold thy son!

Chap. 13:23; 20:2; 21:7, 20, 24.

27 Then saith he to the disciple: Behold thy mother! And from that hour the disciple took her unto his own home.

¶V

28 After this, Jesus, *knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the †Scripture might be fulfilled, saith: I thirst.

Chap. 13:3; †Ps. 22:15; 69:21.

29 Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar, and they filled a sponge *with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth. Ps. 69:22; Matt. 27:48.

30 When Jesus had received the vinegar, he said: *It is finished. And he bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

Chap. 17:4.

31 The Jews therefore, because it was the *preparation, that the bodies should not remain on the cross on the Sabbath, for that Sabbath day was an high day, besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.

Mark 15:42.

32 Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other who was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and *forthwith came there out blood and water.

1 John 5:6, 8.

35 And he that saw it has borne witness, and his witness is true; and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

36 For these things were done, *that the Scripture should be fulfilled: A bone of him shall not be broken.

Exod. 12:10; Ps. 34:20.

37 And again another *Scripture saith: They shall look on him whom they pierced.

Zech. 12:10; Rev. 1:7.

¶VI

38 *After this Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus. And Pilate gave him leave. He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus.

Matt. 27:57;

Mark 15:43; Luke 23:50.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, who *at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of †myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

Chap. 3:2; Matt. 2:11; †Acts 5:6.

40 So then they took the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 *There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation day; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

Isa. 53:9. Verse 31.

CHAPTER 20.

Christ's resurrection manifested, and established in Judea.

Now on the *first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. Matt. 28:1; Mark 16:1; Luke 24:1.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the *other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them: They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

Chap. 13:23; 19:26; 21:7.

3 Peter *therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

Luke 24:12.

4 So they ran both together. And the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And stooping down, and looking in, saw *the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

Chap. 19:40.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lying,

7 And the *napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.

Chap. 11:44.

8 Then went in also that other disciple, who came first

to the sepulchre, and saw, and believed.

9 For as yet they *knew not the Scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

Ps. 16:10;

Acts 2:26-31; 13:34, 35.

10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

III

11 *But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping; and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked in to the sepulchre,

Mark 16:5.

12 And seeth two *angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

Matt. 28:5, 6;

Mark 16:5.

13 And they say unto her: Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them: Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 When she had thus said, she turned herself back, and *saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

Matt. 28:9; Mark 16:7;

Luke 24:16, 31.

15 Jesus saith unto her: Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him: Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her: Mary! She turned herself, and saith unto him: Rabboni! which is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith to her: Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto my Father. But go to *my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.

Ps. 22:23; Heb. 2:11, 12; Rom. 8:29.

18 *Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had †seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

Mark 16:10; Gen. 32:30; †Luke 24:10.

¶III

(Gospel 1st Sunday after Easter, 19-31.)

19 Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, *came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them: Peace be unto you.

Luke 24:36; 1 Cor. 15:5.

20 And when he had so said, *he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord. 1 John 1:1.

21 Then said Jesus to them again: Peace be unto you. As my Father *hath sent me, even so send I you.

Isa. 61:1; John 17:18; Heb. 3:1.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and said unto them: Receive ye the Holy Ghost:

23 Whosoever *sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained.

Matt. 16:19; 18:18.

¶IV

(Gospel on St. Thomas day, 24-31.)

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him: We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them: Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and put my hand *into his side, I will not believe it.

Chap. 19:34.

¶V

26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them; then came Jesus, *the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said: Peace be unto you.

Verse 19.

27 Then saith he to Thomas: Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and put it into my side; and be not faithless, but believing.

28 Thomas answered and said unto him: *My Lord and my God.

1 Kings 18:39.

29 Jesus saith unto him: Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed; blessed are they that have *not seen, and yet have believed.

1 Peter 1:8.

¶VI

30 Many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book:

31 But these are written, that ye may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that *believing ye may have life through his name.

1 John 5:12.

CHAPTER 21.

Christ's resurrection manifested at Galilee.

After these things Jesus manifested himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias. And on this wise manifested he himself.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter *saith unto them: I go a fishing. They say unto him: We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

Luke 5:5.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples *knew not that it was Jesus. Chap. 20:14; Luke 24:16.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them: Children, *have ye aught to eat? They answered him: No. Luke 24:41.

6 And he said unto them: *Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

Luke 5:4, 6, 7.

7 Therefore *that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto

Peter: It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his coat unto him, for he was naked, and cast himself into the sea.

Chap. 13:23; 20:2.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship, for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits, dragging the net full of fishes.

9 As soon as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them: Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three; and although there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, *Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him: Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. Acts 10:41.

13 Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, *and fish likewise.

Chap. 6:11.

14 This is now the *third time that Jesus manifested himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

Chap. 20:19, 26.

¶II

15 So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter: Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him: Yea,

Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him: Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him a second time: Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him: Yea. Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, *Feed my sheep.

Acts 20:28;
1 Peter 5:2, 4.

17 He saith unto him the third time: Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him: Lord, *thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him: Feed my sheep.

Chap. 16:30; Eccles. 42:19;
Bar. 3:32.

18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee: When thou wast young thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest, *but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

2 Peter 1:14; Acts 12:3, 4.

19 Now this spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And

when he had spoken this, he saith unto him: Follow me.

(Gospel on the day of St. John the Evangelist, 20-24.)

20 Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; *who also leaned on his breast at supper, and had said: Lord, who is he, that betrayeth thee?

Chap. 13:23, 25; 20:2.

21 Peter seeing him saith to Jesus: Lord, and what shall this man do?

22 Jesus saith unto him: If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die, yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the disciple who *testifieth of these things, and wrote these things; and we know that his testimony is true.

Chap. 15:27; 19:35.

25 And *there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written.

Chap. 20:30; Amos 7:10.

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

MAINLY OF

ST. PAUL AND PETER, ST. JOHN,
STEPHEN AND PHILIP

CHAPTER 1.

Christ's ascension. The council of the apostles. Matthias chosen.

(Epistle Ascension Day, 1-11.)

The former treatise have I made,* O Theophilus, concerning all that Jesus began both to do and teach.†

Luke 1:3; †Ex. 4:12, 15.

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the *apostles whom he had chosen; Verses 25, 26.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, appearing to them from time to time during forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the *kingdom of God.

Luke 17:20, 21. Rom. 14:17.

4 And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, *but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard from me. John 15:26.

5 For *John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

Chap. 11:16; 13:24; 19:4.

Matt. 3:11.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked him, saying: Lord, wilt thou at this time *restore again the kingdom to Israel? Luke 24:21.

7 And he said unto them: It is not for you to *know times or seasons, which the Father hath reserved in his own authority. Luke 4:36.

8 But ye shall *receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

John 1:12. †Ps. 2:8.

III

9 And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, *he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight. Luke 24:51.

10 And while they looked steadfastly into heaven as he went up, behold, *two men stood by them in white apparel; Luke 24:4. John 20:12.

11 Which also said: Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye looking up into heaven? this very Jesus, who is taken up from you into heaven, *shall so come in like manner as ye

have seen him go into heaven.

Luke 21:27. 1 Thess. 4:16.

¶III

12 Then the apostles returned unto Jerusalem from *the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey.

Luke 24:50, 51, 52.

13 And when they were come in to Jerusalem they went into an upstairs room, where abode *Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

Matt. 10:2.

14 These all continued with *one accord in prayer and supplication, also the women, Mary the mother of Jesus, and his brethren.

Chap. 2:1, 42; 4:24.

¶IV

(Ep. Matthias Day, 15-26.)

15 ¶ And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the *disciples, and said, the number of names together were about a hundred and twenty,

Mark 3:18-19.

16 Brethren, this *Scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, who was guide to them that took Jesus.

Ps. 41:10.

17 For he was *numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

Luke 6:16.

18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and *hanging himself, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. Matt. 27:5.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem, *insomuch as that field is called, in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

Matt. 27:7, 8, 9, etc.

20 For it is written in the *book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein; and, His †bishopricks let another take.

Ps. 69:26. †Ps. 108:9.

21 Wherefore of these men who have been with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that Jesus was taken from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

23 And they set forth two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, who *knowest the hearts of all men, shew which of these two thou hast chosen,

Ps. 7:10.

25 That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell away that he might go to his own place.

26 And they *gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

Prov. 16:33.

CHAPTER 2.

Outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon the Apostle. St. Peter's sermon.

(Epistle at the day of Pentecost, 1-13.)

And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were *all with one accord in one place.

Chap. 1:14.

2 And *suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of the rushing of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

Rev. 22:7.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like *as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

Matt. 3:11.

4 And they were all *filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

Chap. 10:44; 11:15; 19:6.

5 Now there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, *devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

Chap. 13:36.

6 When this sound was heard, the multitude came together, and were *confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

Chap. 13:26.

7 And they were *all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans?

Verse 7, 12.

8 And how hear we every man in our own language, wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia.

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes.

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

12 And they were all *amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

Verse 6, 7.

13 Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine.

§II

14 But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them: Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words;

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day.

16 But this is that which has been spoken by the prophet *Joel;

Joel 3:1, etc.

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and *your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams;

Chap. 21:9.

18 And on my servants and on my hand-maidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy,

19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs on the earth beneath;

blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke.

20 The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

21 And it shall come to pass **that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.* Rom. 10:13.

22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God **among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know;* Chap. 10:3.

23 Him, **being delivered up by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain;*

Chap. 4:28. Luke 22:22.

24 Whom God **raised up, having loosed the pangs of death; because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.*

Chap. 3:15. Matt. 28:6. Mark 16:6.

25 For **David speaketh concerning him, I beheld the Lord always before my face; for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.*

Ps. 16:8, etc.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou

shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

29 Men and brethren I can speak to you more confidently about the patriarch **David, he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day.*

Chap. 13:36. 1 Kings 2:10.

30 Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had **promised with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne;*

Ps. 89:4, 5.

31 He, seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, **that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.*

Chap. 13:35. Ps. 16:10.

32 This Jesus did **God raise up, whereof we all are witnesses.*

Chap. 3:15.

33 Being therefore by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath poured forth this, which ye see and hear.

34 For David ascended not into the heavens, but he saith himself, **The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,*

Matt. 22:44.

35 Until I make thy foes thy footstool.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

IIII

37 Now when they heard this, they were pricked in

their heart, and said unto Peter and the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, *what shall we do?

Chap. 9:6; 16:39.

38 Then Peter said unto them: *Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ unto the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the †gift of the Holy Ghost. Matt. 3:2. Acts 3:19.

†Acts 19:6.

39 For the promise is unto you, and unto your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many *as the Lord our God shall call. Joel 3:5.

40 And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying: Save yourselves from this crooked generation.

IIIV

41 Then they that gladly received his word were baptized, and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

42 And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, *and in prayers. Chap. 1:14; 2:1.

43 And fear came upon every soul, and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles.

44 And all that believed were together, and *had all things common; Chap. 4:32.

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all, as every man had need.

46 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and *breaking bread at their houses, did eat their

meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Chap. 20:7.

47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church *daily those who were being saved.

Chap. 4:4; 5:14; 11:21; 14:1.

CHAPTER 3.

Peter's miracle in healing the lame man. Peter's sermon of Christ unto repentance.

Now *Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour.

Matt. 16:18. Matt. 4:21.

2 And a certain man *lame from his birth was carried, whom they laid daily at the door of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple; Chap. 8:7; 14:8.

3 Who, seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms.

4 And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with John, said: Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something from them.

6 Then Peter said: Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee; In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth *rise up and walk. Chap. 14:9, 10.

7 And he *took him by the right hand, and lifted him up, and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength.

Matt. 8:15. Chap. 9:25.

8 And leaping up he stood, *and walked, and entered with them into the temple,

walking, and leaping, and praising God. Is. 35:6.

9 And all the people saw him walking and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he that sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple. And they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man who was healed held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called *Solomon's, greatly wondering.

Chap. 5:12.

¶II

12 And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own *power or godliness we had made this man to walk? Ps. 62:11.

13 The god *of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom †ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

Ex. 3:6; 15:16. †Acts 2:23; 7:52.

14 But ye denied the Holy and Righteous One and *desired a murderer to be granted unto you;

Matt. 27: 20, 21.

15 And killed the Prince of life, *whom God raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

Chap. 2:24, 32; 4:10; 10:40. 13:30, 34; 17:31. Rom. 4:24. Chap. 8:11. 1 Cor. 6:14; 15:4. 2 Cor. 4:14.

16 And his name, through faith in his name, hath made this man strong whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is through him hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

17 And now, brethren, I know that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ *should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

1 Pet. 1:11.

¶III

19 *Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, that so there may come the †times of refreshing from the presence of the Lord; Chap. 2:38. †Is. 35:10. Dan. 27:22, 27. Rom. 8:21. Rev. 20:5.

20 And that he may send the Christ, who before was preached unto you, even Jesus.

21 Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things which God hath spoken by the mouth of his holy prophets since the world began.

22 For Moses truly said unto the fathers: A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 *And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

Lev. 18:15, etc.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from *Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise told of these days.

1 Sam. 8:19, 20.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham: *And in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.

Gen. 12:3, etc., 22.

26 Unto *you first God, having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

Chap. 13:46.

CHAPTER 4.

Peter and John persecuted. The council warns them not to preach of Jesus. The prayer of the believers.

And as they spake unto unto the people, the priests and the *captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them.

Luke 22:4, 52.

2 Being sore troubled because they taught the people, and preached through *Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

Psa. 40:9.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in prison unto the next day, for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed, and the *number of men was about five thousand.

Chap. 2:47, etc.; 2:41.

¶¶¶

5 And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6 And *Annas the high

priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem. *Chap. 5:17. Luke 3:2.*

7 And when they had set them in the midst they asked them: *By what power, or by what name, have ye done this?

Matt. 21:23.

8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them: Ye *rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

Luke 12:11.

9 If *we this day are examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole:

John 10:32.

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified *whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

Chap. 3:15.

11 This is the *stone which was set at nought by you builders, which became the head of the corner.

Matt. 21:42, etc.

12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men *whereby we must be saved.

Matt. 1:21.

¶¶¶

13 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And seeing the man *that was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

Chap. 8:8, 9.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves.

16 Saying, What shall we do to those men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done through them is manifest to all that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it.

17 But that it spread no further among the people, *let us threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name. Chap. 5:28.

18 So they called the apostles and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them: Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken *unto you rather than unto God, judge ye.

Chap. 5:29.

20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatened them, let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people, for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above forty years old, on whom this miracle of healing was wrought.

¶IV

23 And being let go, they went to *their own com-

pany, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them.

Chap. 1:13.

24 And they, when they heard that, lifted up their voice to God with *one accord, and said: O Lord, thou art God, who has made the heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is;

Rom. 15:6.

†Gen. 1:1. Is. 37:16.

25 Who by the mouth of thy servant David *hast said: Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? Ps. 2:1, 2.

26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy hold child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together,

28 To do whatsoever thy hand and thy *counsel determined before to be done.

Chap. 2:23.

29 And now, Lord, behold their threatenings; and grant unto thy servants, that with *all boldness they may speak thy word. Chap. 18:16; 14:3.

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done in the name of thy holy child Jesus.

¶V

31 And when they had prayed, the place was *shaken where they were assembled; and they were all

filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

Chap. 2:2; 16:28.

32 And the multitude of them that believed were of *one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that aught of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common.

Chap. 1:14.

33 And with great power gave the apostles witness *of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

Chap. 1:22; 2:24.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses *sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold.

Chap. 2:45.

35 And laid them at the apostles' feet, and *distribution was made unto every man according as any one had need.

Deut. 15:11. 1s. 58:7.

36 And Joseph, who by the apostles was surnamed *Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus.

Chap. 13:2.

37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles' feet.

CHAPTER 5.

Ananias and Sapphira. The Apostles imprisoned, tried and dismissed.

But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, *and laid it at the apostles' feet. Chap. 4:37.

3 But Peter said: Ananias, why hath *Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Spirit, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

John 18:2.

4 While it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? Why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost. And great fear came upon all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up *and carried him out, and buried him.

Lev. 10:4, 5.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her: Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said: Yea, for so much.

9 But Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to *tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and they shall carry thee out.

James 1:2-4. Gen. 3:1.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and gave up the ghost. And the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carry-

ing her out, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear *came upon the whole church, and upon as many as heard these things.

Luke 7:16.

¶II

12 And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders *wrought among the people; and they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch.

Verses 15, 16, 19, 20.

13 But of the rest durst no man join himself to them, but the people magnified them.

14 And *believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.

Chap. 2:47, etc.

15 Insomuch that they *brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them.

Chap. 19:11, 12.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about *Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits. And they were healed every one. Matt. 23:37.

¶III

17 But the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, which is the sect of the *Sadducees, they were filled with indignation.

Chap. 4:1.

18 And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But an *angel of the Lord by night opened the

prison doors, and brought them out, and said:

Chap. 12:7.

20 Go ye, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the *words of this life.

John 12:50. Matt. 7:14.

21 And when they heard that, they entered into the temple, early in the morning, and taught. But the *high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

Chap. 4:5.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut in all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doors, but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high priest and the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison are standing in the temple, teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence, for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned.

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the council, and the high priest asked them,

28 Saying: Did not we straitly charge you that ye should not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring *this man's blood upon us.

Chap. 4:18; 2:23. Matt. 27:25.

¶III

29 But Peter and the other apostles answered and said: We ought to obey *God rather than men.

Chap. 4:19. Dan. 6:10.

30 The *God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.

Chap. 3:15, etc. Gal. 3:13.

31 Him hath God *exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

Chap. 2:33. 1 Cor. 2:8.

32 And we are *witnesses of these things; and so is the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

Luke 24:48. John 15:26, 27.

¶IV

33 When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.

34 But there stood up one in the council, a Pharisee, named *Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, held in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space;

Chap. 22:3.

35 He said unto them: Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do with these men.

36 For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be somebody; to

whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves, he was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished; and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone, for if this counsel or this work be *of men, it will come to nought;

Matt. 15:13.

39 But if it is of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even fighting *against God. Chap. 9:5.

40 And to him they agreed; and when they had called the apostles, *and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

Chap. 22:19.

¶V

41 And they departed from the presence of the council, *rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer dishonor for his name.

Matt. 5:10, 12. 1 Peter 4:13.

42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and to *preach Jesus the Christ.

Pa. 40:9.

CHAPTER 6.

Apostles elect Deacons. Stephen falsely accused.

Now in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplying, there arose

a murmuring of the Grecian Jews against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily distribution.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said: It is not well that we should forsake the word of God, and serve tables.

3 Wherefore, brethren, *look ye out among you seven men of honest reputation, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business.

1 Tim. 3:7, 8. 1 Cor. 1:24.

4 But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.

III

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude. And they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and *Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch;

Chap. 8:5.

6 Whom they set before the apostles. And when they had *prayed, they laid their hands on them.

Chap. 1:24.

7 And the *word of God increased, and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly, and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

Chap. 19:20.

(Ep. on St. Stephen's day, 8-15.)

8 And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders and signs among the people.

III

9 But there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called the synagogue of the Libertines, and of the Cyrenians, and of the Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia and Asia, disputing with Stephen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, which said: We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the council.

13 And set *up false witness, which said: This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous *words against this holy place, and the law;

1 Kings 21:13.

14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered unto us.

15 And all that sat in the council, looking steadfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

CHAPTER 7.

Stephen before the council. His preaching, suffering and death.

Then said the high priest: Are these things so?

2 And he said: Brethren, and fathers, hearken; The *God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when

he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Haran,

Ps. 29:3. Numb. 14:21.

3 And said unto him, *Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

Gen. 12:1, etc.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Haran, and from thence, when his father was dead, God *removed him into this land, wherein ye now dwell.

Gen. 12:5. Chap. 15:7.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no, not so much as to set his foot on, yet he promised that *he would give it to him in possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

Gen. 12:7; 13:15; 15:18.

6 And God spake on this wise, *That his seed should sojourn in a strange land; and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat them evil four hundred years.

Gen. 15:13. Ex. 12:40.

7 And the nation to which they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God, and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.

8 And he gave him the *covenant of circumcision; and so Abraham †begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day; and ‡Isaac begat Jacob; and §Jacob the twelve patriarchs.

Gen. 17:10. †Gen. 21:2.

‡Gen. 25:26. §Gen. 19:31, etc.
Chap. 30:5, etc.

¶II

9 And the patriarchs, moved with envy, *sold

Joseph into Egypt, but God was with him,

Gen. 37:28; 39:1.

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom before Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he made him governor over Egypt and all his house.

Gen. 49:41, etc.

11 Now there came a famine over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when *Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent forth our fathers first.

Gen. 42:1.

13 And at the second time *Joseph was made known to his brethren, and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

Gen. 45:4.

14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father *Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls.

Gen. 45:9, 10.

15 So *Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, †he himself and our fathers.

Gen. 46:1, etc. †Gen. 49:9, 10.

16 And they were carried over into Shechem, and laid in the sepulchre that *Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor, the father of Shechem.

Gen. 23:16, 17. Josh. 24:32.

¶III

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 There arose another king which knew not Joseph.

19 The same dealt sub-

tilely with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.

¶IV

20 In which time Moses *was born, and was exceeding fair, and was nourished up in his father's house three months, Gen. 2:2. Heb. 11:23. †1 Sam. 16:22.

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter *took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

Ex. 2:10.

22 And Moses was thought in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.

23 But when he was about forty years old it *came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.

Ex. 2:12.

24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian,

25 For he supposed his brethren understood how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not.

26 And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and urged them to make peace, saying: *Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong one to another?

Ex. 2:13.

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong thrust him away, saying: Who made thee ruler and a judge over us?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as

thou killedst the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled *Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.

Ex. 2:15.

30 And when forty years were fulfilled, there *appeared to him an angel of the Lord in the wilderness of Mount Sina in a flame of fire in a bush.

Ex. 3:2. Deut. 33:16.

31 And when Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight and as he drew near to behold the voice of the Lord came unto him,

32 Saying: *I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

Ex. 3:6; 15:16. Matt. 22:32.

33 Then said the Lord to him *put off thy shoes from thy feet, for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

Ex. 3:5.

34 I have surely seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, *I will send thee into Egypt.

Ex. 3:10.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, *Who made thee a ruler and a judge? him did God send to be a ruler and a delivered by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

Ex. 2:14.

36 He brought them out, after that he had *shewed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt and in the

†Red Sea, and in the wilderness forty years.

Ex. 7:10. †Ex. 14:21.

¶IV

37 This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, *A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear.

Deut. 18:15, etc.

38 This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him *in the mount Sina, and with our fathers, who received the living oracles to give unto us.

Ex. 19:3.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt.

40 Saying unto Aaron, *Make us gods to go before us, for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

Ex. 32:1.

¶V

41 And they made a calf in those days and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their hands.

42 But God turned, and gave them up to worship the *host of heaven; as it is written in the †book of the prophets; O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices by the space of forty years in the wilderness?

Jer. 19:13. †Amos 5:25.

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of the god Remphan,

the figures which ye made to worship them, but I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

¶VI

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it *according to the model that he had seen.

Ex. 25:40. Chap. 26:30.

45 Which also our fathers that came after *brought in with Joshua into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David.

Josh. 3:14.

46 Who found favour in the sight of God, and desired to find a *tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

2 Sam. 7:2. Ps. 132:5.

47 But *Solomon built him a house.

1 King 6:1.

48 Howbeit the Most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet:

49 Heaven *is my throne and earth is my footstool, what house will ye build me? saith the Lord. Or what is the place of my rest?

Ps. 11:4. Is. 66:1, etc.

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

¶VII

51 Ye *stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost, as your fathers did, so do ye.

Ex. 32:9.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain

them which shewed before-hand of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers.

² Chron. 36:16. Matt. 23:31.

53 Ye who have received the *law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

Ex. 20:1. etc.

¶VIII

54 Now when they heard *these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

Chap. 5:33.

55 But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God.

56 And said: *Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

² Tim. 4:7, 8.

57 But they cried out with a loud voice and stopped their ears, and rushed upon him with one accord.

58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him. And the *witnesses laid down their garments at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.

Chap. 22:20.

59 And they *stoned Stephen, as he was calling upon God, and saying, †Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

¹ Kings 21:13.

†Heb. 11:37. Ps. 31:6.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice: Lord, *lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

Luke 23:24.

CHAPTER 8.

Persecution by Saul. Philip preaches in Samaria. Simon the sorcerer. The Ethiopian baptized.

And Saul was *consenting unto his death. And at that time there arose a great persecution against the church at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

Chap. 7:57.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

¶II

3 But Saul made *havoc of the church, entering into every house and dragging out men and women, committing them to prison.

Chap. 7:57; 9:1; 13:21; 22:4.

4 Therefore they *that were scattered abroad went every where preaching the word.

Chap. 11:9.

5 Then *Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

Chap. 6:5.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the *miracles which he did.

Chap. 9:18, 36-41; 28:8, 9.

7 For *unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them, and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

Mark 16:17.

8 And there was *much joy in that city.

John 4:40, etc.

¶III

9 But there was a certain man, called *Simon, who be-

foretime in the city used sorcery, and astonished the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one.

Chap. 8:13, 18.

10 To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest saying, This is that power of God which is great.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had amazed them with sorceries.

12 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they *were baptized, both men and women.

Matt. 28:19.

13 And Simon himself also believed, and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, beholding the miracles and signs which were done, and was amazed.

(Ep. Tuesday after Pentecost 14-25)

14 Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had *received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

John 1:12.

15 Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost.

16 For as yet he was fallen upon none of them; they only were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

17 Then *laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

Chap. 6:6. Tim. 5:22.

18 Now when Simon saw that through the laying on of the apostles' hands the

Holy Ghost was given he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay my hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said unto him: Thy money perish with thee, *because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be obtained with money.

Matt. 10:8. 2 Cor. 9:15.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is not right before God.

22 *Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be †forgiven thee.

Chap. 2:38; 3:19.

†Ps. 32:1.

23 For I perceive that thou art in *the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.

Deut. 29:18.

24 And Simon answered and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which he have spoken come upon me.

IIIV

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem and *preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

Chap. 14:7. Rev. 14:6.

26 But the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose and went. And, behold, a man of Ethiopia, a Eunuch of great au-

thority under Candace queen of the *Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship.

Zeph. 3:10.

28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot *read Esaias the prophet. *Is. 1:1.*

29 And the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias and said, *Understandest thou what thou readest? *Jer. 9:24.*

31 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he besought Philip that he would come up and sit with him.

32 Now the place of the Scripture which he was reading was this: He was *led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth. *Is. 53:7.*

33 In his *humiliation his judgment was taken away, and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

Prov. 16:19.

34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and beginning from the same Scripture, preached unto him Jesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water. And the Eunuch said, *See here is water;

what doth hinder me to be baptized?

Chap. 10:47. †Matt. 3:11.

37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, *I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. *Matt. 16:16.*

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still. And they both went down into the water, Philip and the Eunuch; and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord *caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more. And he went on his way rejoicing. *1 Kings 18:12.*

40 But Philip was found at Azotus. And passing through he preached the gospel to all the cities, till he came to *Cesarea. *Chap. 21:8.*

CHAPTER 9.

Conversion of Saul. Paul being baptized. Miracle by St. Peter.

(Ep. St. Paul's conversion 1-22.)

But Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter *against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest. *Chap. 26:9, etc.*

2 And desired of him *letters unto Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of †this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

Chap. 26:12. †Chap. 19:8, 22.

3 And as he journeyed he came near Damascus. And suddenly there shone *round about him a light from heaven. *Chap. 22:6. 1 Cor. 15:8.*

4 But he fell upon the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, way persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said: I am Jesus whom thou persecutest; it is hard for thee *to kick against the pricks.

Chap. 5:39.

6 But he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him: Arise, and go into the city, and it *shall be told thee what thou must do.

Chap. 10:6.

7 And the men that journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man. But they led him by the hand and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three days without sight, and did neither eat nor drink.

¶II

10 Now there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him said the Lord in a vision, *Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord.

Verse 13, 17.

11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire at the house of Judas for one called Saul of Tarsus, for, behold, he prayeth.

12 He hath seen in *a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and laying his

hand on him that he might receive his sight.

Verse 27. Gen. 15:1.

13 But Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy *saints at Jerusalem;

Deut. 33:4.

14 And here he hath authority from the chief priests to bind all that call upon thy name.

15 But the Lord said unto him: Go thy way; for he is a *chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.

Chap. 22:21.

16 For I *will shew him how many things he must suffer for my name's sake.

2 Cor. 11:23, etc.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house, and laying his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, who appeared unto thee in the way which thou camest, hath sent me that thou mayest receive thy sight, and be filled *with the Holy Spirit.

Chap. 10:38-44.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it were scales. And he received his sight forthwith, and rose and was *baptized.

Matt. 3:11.

¶III

19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened, and was certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, proclaiming that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this he *that destroyed those that called on the name of Jesus in Jerusalem, and came hither intending that he might bring such persons bound before the chief priests?

Verses 1-14. Chap. 8:1; 26:10.

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that Jesus is the very Christ.

¶IV

23 And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews *took counsel to kill him.

2 Cor. 11:32.

24 But their laying wait was known of Saul. Also they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Paul was come to Jerusalem, he attempted to join himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how Saul had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus *in the name of Jesus.

Chap. 26:22, 23. Luke 12:13.

28 And he was with the disciples coming in and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus,

and disputed against the Grecians, but they went about to slay him.

30 And when the brethren knew it, they brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him *forth to Tarsus.

Chap. 11:25.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified, and walking *in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, were multiplied.

Matt. 2:1.

¶V

32 And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout the country he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Eneas which had kept his bed eight years, and was sick *of the palsy.

Matt. 4:23, 24.

34 And Peter said unto him, Eneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole. Arise, and make thy bed! And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at *Lydda and Sharon saw him, and turned to the Lord.

Verse 38.

¶VI

36 Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas. This woman was rich in good works and *almsdeeds which she did.

Ps. 41:3. Matt. 6:1.

37 And it came to pass in those days, that she fell sick, and died. When they had washed her, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the *disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them.

Matt. 5:1.

39 And Peter arose and went with them. And when he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber. And all the widows stood by him weeping and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed, and turning to the body said: Tabitha, *arise! And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

Mark 5:41. Luke 7:14.

John 11:43.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up; and when he had called the saints and widows, he presented her alive.

42 And it came to be known throughout all Joppa; *and many believed on the Lord.

John 8:30. Chap. 10:42.

43 And it came to pass that he abode many days in Joppa with one *Simon a tanner.

Chap. 10:6.

CHAPTER 10

Cornelius. Peter's vision. Cornelius converted through Peter's sermon.

Now there was a certain man in Cesarea, Cornelius by name, a *centurion of the band called the Italian band.

Verse 24. Matt. 8:5.

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his

house, who *gave much alms to the people and prayed to God always.

Dan. 4:24.

3 He saw in a vision clearly, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying to him: *Cornelius!

Verses 1, 7.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said: What is it, Lord? And he said unto him: Thy prayers and thine alms are gone up for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for *one Simon, who is surnamed Peter.

Matt. 16:16.

6 He lodgeth with *one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee †what thou oughtest to do.

Chap. 9:43. †Chap. 2:37; 9:6.

7 And when the angel that spake unto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout *soldier of them that waited on him continually;

2 Tim. 2:8.

8 And after he had told all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

¶11

9 Now on the morrow, as they were on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the housetop to pray, about the sixth hour:

10 And he became hungry, and would have eaten, while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been

a great sheet knit at the *four corners, which was let down to the earth.

Luke 13:29. Acts 11:5.

12 Wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts, wild beasts, and creeping things of the earth and fowls of the air.

Chap. 11:6.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said: Not so, Lord; *for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

Hez. 4:14. Lev. 11:7; 18:23.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time, saying: *What God hath cleansed, that make not thou common.

Matt. 11:41.

16 This was *done thrice. And the vessel was taken up again into heaven.

Chap. 11:10.

17 Now while Peter was much perplexed in himself what this vision which he had seen should mean, behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius having made inquiry for *Simon's house, stood before the gate,

Verses 6, 32.

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodging there.

¶III

19 And while Peter thought on the vision the Spirit said unto him: Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise, therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing, for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down

to the men who were sent unto him from Cornelius, and said: Behold, I am he whom ye seek. What is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a righteous man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was told by a holy angel of God to send for thee to his house and to hear of thee what you have to say.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from *Joppa accompanied him.

Chap. 9:42.

24 And the morrow after they entered into *Cesarea. And Cornelius was waiting for them, having called together his kinsmen and his near friends.

Verses 1.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter raised him up, saying: *Stand up; I myself am only a man like yourself.

Rev. 19:10.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them: *Ye know that it is an unlawful thing for a Jewish man to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

John 4:9.

29 Wherefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as

soon as I was sent for. I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me?

30 And Cornelius said: Four days ago I was fasting until this hour; and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and, behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And saith, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon, who is surnamed Peter; he is lodging in the house of Simon a tanner near the sea shore, who, when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present in the sight of God, to hear all things that are commanded thee by the Lord.

¶IV

(Ep. Monday after Easter 34-41.)

34 Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that *God is no respecter of persons;

Deut. 10:17. 1 Sam. 16:7. 2 Chron. 19:7. Job 34:19. Rom. 2:11. Gal. 2:6. Eph. 6:9. 1 Pet. 1:17.

35 But in *every nation he that seeketh him and worketh righteousness, is acceptable with him.

Is. 56:6.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching good tidings of peace by Jesus Christ. *He is Lord of all.

Matt. 28:18. Rom. 10:9.

37 That word, I say, ye know, which was published throughout all Judea, and beginning *from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached;

Matt. 4:12, etc.

38 How God *anointed even Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power. Who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil, for God was with him.

Ps. 45:8. Is. 61:1.

39 And we *are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged him on a tree.

Chap. 1:8, 22; 2:22, 32.

40 Him God *raised up the third day, and shewed him openly;

Chap. 3:15, 26.

41 Not to all the people, *but unto witnesses chosen before of God, even to us who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

John 15:27. Chap. 20:19, 26.

(Ep. Monday after Pentecost 42-48)

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that this is he which was ordained of God to be the *judge of quick and dead.

2 Tim. 4:1.

43 To him give *all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

Is. 55:3, 6. Jer. 31:34. Hez. 34:16. Dan. 19:24. Hos. 1:7. Micah 7:18.

¶V

44 While Peter yet spake these words, the *Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

Chap. 4:31; 8:17.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed were *amazed, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost. Is. 60:5.

46 For they heard them speak *with tongues, and magnify God. Then answered Peter, Chap. 2:4. Mark 16:17.

47 Can any man *forbid the water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Spirit as well as we? Chap. 8:36.

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Then *prayed they him to tarry certain days. John 4:40.

CHAPTER 11.

Contention with Peter. His defense. Planting of the church at Antioch.

Now the apostles and brethren that were in Judea heard that *the Gentiles also had received the word of God. Eph. 3:1.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of *the circumcision, contended with him, Gen. 17:10.

3 Saying: Thou wentest in to men *uncircumcised and didst eat with them. Eph. 2:11.

¶II

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it in order unto them, saying:

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying; and *in a trance I saw a vision: A certain ves-

sel descending as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even unto me.

Chap. 10:10.

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and *saw four-footed beasts, wild beasts, and creeping things of the earth, and fowls of the air. Chap. 10:12.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay and eat.

8 But I said: Not so, Lord, *for nothing common or unclean hath ever entered into my mouth. Lev. 11:2.

9 But the voice answered me a second time from heaven, What God hath *cleansed that make not thou common. Gen. 7:2.

10 And this was done three times; and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And, behold, *immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Caesarea unto me.

Chap. 10:17; 10:1.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover these six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house.

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him: Send men to Joppa, and call for *Simon, who is surnamed Peter;

Matt. 16:16.

14 Who shall tell unto thee *words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

Chap. 10:6.

15 And as I began to speak
*the Holy Spirit fell on them
even as on us at the begin-
ning. Chap. 2:4; 10:44; 16:7, 9.

16 Then remembered I the
word of the Lord, how *he
said: John indeed baptized
with water; but ye shall be
baptized with the Holy Spirit.

Chap. 1:5. Matt. 3:11, etc.

17 Forasmuch then as God
gave them the like gift as
he did unto us, who believed
on the Lord Jesus Christ,
what 'was I, that I could
withstand God?

18 When they heard these
things they held their peace,
and glorified God, saying:
Then huth God also to the
Gentiles granted *repent-
ance unto life. Chap. 13:24.

¶III

19 Now those who were
scattered abroad upon the
persecution that arose *about
Stephen, travelled as far as
Phenice, Cyprus, and An-
tioch, preaching the word to
none but unto the Jews only.

Chap. 8:1.

20 And some of them were
men of Cyprus and Cyrene,
who when they were come to
Antioch, spake unto the Gre-
cians, preaching the Lord
Jesus.

21 And the hand of the
Lord was with them, and *a
great number believed, and
turned unto the Lord.

Chap. 2:47, etc.

22 Then tidings of these
things came unto the ears of
the *church which was in
Jerusalem; and they sent
forth Barnabas, that he
should go as far as Antioch.

Verse 26. Matt. 18:17.

23 Who, when he came,
and had seen the grace of
God was glad, and exhorted
them all, that with *purpose
of heart they would cleave
unto the Lord.

Chap. 13:43, etc.; 2:42.

24 For he was a good man,
and full of the *Holy Ghost
and of faith: and ¶much peo-
ple was added unto the Lord.

Chap. 6:5. †Chap. 5:14.

25 Then departed Barna-
bas to Tarsus, for to seek
*Saul. Verse 30.

26 And when he had found
him, *he brought him unto
Antioch. And it came to
pass, that a whole year they
assembled themselves with
the church, and taught much
people. And the disciples
were called Christians first
in Antioch. Gal. 2:11.

¶IV

27 And in these days came
*prophets from Jerusalem
unto Antioch.

Chap. 13:1; 15:32.

28 And there stood up one
of them named *Agabus,
and signified by the Spirit
that there should be great
dearth throughout all the
world, which came to pass in
the days of Claudius.

Chap. 21:10.

29 Then the disciples,
every man according to his
ability *determined to send
relief unto the brethren that
dwelt in Judea; Rom. 15:26.

30 Which also they did,
sending it to the elders *by
the hands of Barnabas and
Saul. Chap. 12:25.

CHAPTER 12

Death of St. James. Peter imprisoned. His deliverance. Herod's death.

(Ep. Peter and Paul's day 1-11.)

Now about that time Herod the king *stretched forth his hands to afflict certain of the church.

Chap. 4:3. Matt. 16:18.

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.

¶II

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further and took *Peter also during the days of unleavened bread.

Verses 5-7, 11, 14, 16, 18.

4 And when he had *apprehended Peter, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four guards of soldiers to keep him; intending after Easter to bring him up before the people.

Chap. 16:24. Gen. 39:20.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison; but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.

6 And when *Herod would have brought him before the people the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains; and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

Verse 1.

¶III

7 And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a *light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side and raised him up, saying: Arise quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

Chap. 9:3.

8 And the angel said unto him: Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals; and he did so. And he saith unto him: Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and he wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; *but thought he saw a vision.

Gen. 15:1.

10 And when they were past the first and the second ward, they came to the iron gate that leadeth into the city, *which opened to them of its own accord. And they went out, and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him.

Chap. 16:26.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a truth, *that the Lord hath sent forth his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

Chap. 5:19.

Gen. 19:15, 16. Ps. 91:11.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary *the mother of John, whose surname was Mark; where many were gathered together praying.

Chap. 15:37.

13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to answer, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her,

Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, *It is his angel. Luke 24:37.

16 But Peter continued knocking. And when they had opened the door, and saw him they were astonished.

17 But he, beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison.. And he said: Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now as soon *as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter. Chap. 5:21, 22.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and there abode.

¶IV

20 Now Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon; but they came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus the king's chamberlain their friend, desired peace, *because their country was nourished by the king's country. 1 Kings 6:9, 11. Hez. 27:17.

21 And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in *royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. Sirach 11:4.

22 And the people shouted,

saying, It is the *voice of a God, and not of a man. Hez. 28:2.

23 And immediately an angel of the Lord smote him, *because he gave not God the glory; and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost. Dan. 5:20.

¶V

24 But the *word of God grew and multiplied. Chap. 6:7. Is. 55:11.

25 And Barnabas and Paul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministration, taking with them John, *whose surname was Mark. Chap. 11:29; 15:37.

CHAPTER 13.

Paul's first tour to the heathens. Elymas. Paul preaches at Antioch. Jews raise a persecution.

Now there were in the church that was at Antioch *certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Paul. Chap. 11:27.

2 And as they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said: *Separate me Barnabas and Paul for the work whereunto I have called them. Chap. 9:15.

3 Then when they had *fasted and prayed, and laid {their hands on them, they sent them away. Chap. 14:23. {Chap. 6:6, 8:18,19.

¶III

4 So they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, went down to Seleucia; and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews, and they had also *John as an attendant. Chap. 12:12, 15.

6 And when they had gone through the whole isle they reached Paphos, and found a certain *sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus.

Ex. 7:11. Deut. 18:10-12.

7 Who was with the proconsul of the country, Sergius Paulus, a man of understanding who called for Barnabas and Paul, and desired to hear the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer, for so is his name by interpretation, *withstood them, seeking to turn away the proconsul from the faith.

Ex. 7:11. 2 Tim. 3:8.

9 Then Saul *who also is called Paul, filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him. Verses 13, 16. Rom. 1:1.

10 And said: O thou, full of all deceit and villainy, thou *child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

Deut. 13:13. Matt. 13:38.

11 But now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be *blind, not able to see the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

Chap. 9:8.

12 Then the proconsul, when he saw what was done,

believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia. And John departing from them returned to Jerusalem.

IIII

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with his hand said: Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, harken:

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with a high arm brought he them out of it.

18 And for about forty years suffered he their manners in the wilderness.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he divided their land to them by lot.

20 And after that he gave them judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a king, and God gave unto them Saul the son of Kis, a man of the tribe of

Benjamin, by the space of forty years.

22 And when he had removed him, he raised up David to be their king; to whom also he gave this testimony, and said: *I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, who shall do all my will.

1 Sam. 16:12, 13.

23 Of this man's *seed hath God, according to his promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus.

Is. 11:1. Matt. 1:6. Luke 1:27.

24 When John had first preached before the coming of Jesus *the baptism of repentance for all the people of Israel.

Matt. 3:1.

25 And John, fulfilling his course, said: Whom think ye that I am? *I am not he. But behold, †there cometh one after me, whose shoes of his feet I am not worthy to loose.

John 1:20.

†Mark 1:7. Luke 3:16.

IIIV

(Ep. Thursday after Easter 26-33.)

26 Brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the *word of this salvation sent.

Rom. 1:16.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, *because they knew him not, nor the voices of the prophets which are read every Sabbath, fulfilled them in condemning him.

Chap. 3:17. John 16:3.

28 And though they found no cause of death in him,

*yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.

Matt. 27:22, 23. Mark 15:12-14.

Luke 23:23. John 19:6.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him *they took him down from the cross and laid him in a sepulchre.

Matt. 27:59.

30 But *God raised him from the dead.

Chap. 8:15, etc. Mark 16:6.

31 And he was *seen many days of those who came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people.

John 20:19, 26.

32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was *made unto the fathers.

Gen. 3:15. Chap. 12:3, etc.

33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he raised up Jesus; as it is written in the *second psalm: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

Ps. 2:7, etc.

34 And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise: *I will give you the sure blessings of David.

Is. 55:3.

35 Wherefore he saith also in another psalm, *Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

Ps. 16:10.

36 For *David, after he had served in his own time by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid beside his fathers, and saw corruption.

Chap. 2:29, etc.

37 But he, whom God raised up, saw no corruption.

¶V

38 Be it known unto you therefore, brethren, that *through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins.

Luke 24:47.

39 And by him all that *believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

Is. 53:6, 11.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken in the prophets:

41 Behold *ye despisers, and wonder, and perish; for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though one declare it unto you.

Hab. 1:5.

42 And as they went out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath.

43 Now when the congregation had dispersed many of the Jews and devout proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas; who, speaking to them, persuaded them to *continue in the grace of God.

Chap. 11:23. Chap. 14:22.

¶VI

44 And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.

45 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with *envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

Chap. 5:17.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said: It was necessary that the word

of God should *first be spoken to you; but seeing ye †thrust it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

Matt. 10:6. †Luke 7:30.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying: I have set *thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

Is. 42:6; 49:6.

Is. 60:3. Luke 2:32.

48 And as the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord; and as many *as were ordained to eternal life believed.

Rom. 8:29.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the country.

50 But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised up a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and they cast them out of their country.

51 But they shook *off the dust of their feet against them, and went to Iconium.

Chap. 18:6. Matt. 10:14.

52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

CHAPTER 14.

Persecution of Paul and Barnabas. Their return to Antioch.

And it came to pass in *Iconium, that they went together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews and of the Greeks believed.

Acts 13:51.

2 But the *unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made them evil affected against the brethren.

Matt. 18:58.

3 Long time therefore tarried they speaking boldly in the Lord, who gave witness unto the word of his grace, granting signs and wonders to be done *by their hands.

Chap. 19:11.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided, and part held with the Jews, and part with the *apostles.

Verse 14. Luke 6:13.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews with their rulers, to use *them despitefully, and to stone them,

Verse 19. 2 Tim. 3:11.

6 The apostles became aware of it, and *fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region round about. Chap. 8:1.

7 And there they *preached the gospel. Chap. 11:20.

¶II

8 And there at Lystra sat a certain man, impotent in his feet, a cripple from his mother's womb, *who never had walked: Chap. 3:2.

9 The same heard Paul speaking who steadfastly beholding him, and perceiving that *he had faith to be healed, Matt. 9:28.

10 Said with a loud voice: *Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped up and walked.

Chap. 3:6. Is. 35:6.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voice,

saying in the language of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter, whose temple was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 But when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of it they *rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, Num. 14:6.

15 And saying: Sirs, why do ye these things? *We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vain things unto the living God, †who made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that is in them. Chap. 10:26.

†Chap. 4:24. Ps. 146:2. Rev. 14:7. 16 Who in times past suffered all nations to *walk in their own ways.

Chap. 17:30. Ps. 81:13.

17 Nevertheless he left himself not without witness, in that he did good, and gave you rains from heaven, and *fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and gladness. Ps. 147:8. Jer. 5:24. etc.

18 And with these sayings they could hardly restrain the people from doing sacrifice unto them.

¶III

19 But there came certain Jews thither from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded

the people, and, *having stoned Paul, dragged him out of the city, supposing he was dead. 2 Cor. 11:25. 2 Tim. 3:11.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, *he rose up, and entered into the city, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe. Chap. 20:12.

21 And when they had preached the *gospel to that city, and had made many disciples, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antioch.

Mark 16:15, 16.

22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, showing that we must *through many tribulations enter into the kingdom of God. Matt. 10:38.

23 And when they had *ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, in whom they believed. Chap. 6:6.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia.

26 And there sailed to Antioch, *from where they had been committed to the grace of God for the work which they fulfilled. Chap. 13:1, 2.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, *they rehearsed all things that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

Chap. 15:4. 1 Cor. 6:9.

28 And there they abode a long time with the disciples.

CHAPTER 15.

Dispute about circumcision and justification. Council at Jerusalem.

And certain men came down from Judea taught the brethren, saying: *Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. Gal. 5:2.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that *Paul and Barnabas, and certain others of them, should go up to Jerusalem to the apostles and elders about this question. Chap. 11:30.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phœnicia and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles; and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received by the church, and the apostles and elders, and they declared all things *that God had done with them. Chap. 14:27.

5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees who believed, saying: It is needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

¶II

6 And the apostles and elders came together for to consider this matter.

7 And when there had been

much questioning, Peter rose up, and said unto them: Brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, *that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe.

Chap. 11:18; 22:14.

8 And God, *who knoweth the heart, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as he did unto us;

Ps. 7:10, etc.

9 And put no *distinction between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

Chap. 10:34.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to *put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

Matt. 23:4.

11 For we *believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they.

Eph. 2:4, 8.

¶III

12 And all the multitude kept *silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what signs and *wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

Chap. 1:18. †Ex. 7:9.

¶IV

And after they had held their peace, *James answered, saying, Brethren, hearken unto me: James 3:13.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did *visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

Chap. 10:44.

15 And to this agree the

words of the prophets; *as it is written.

Amos 9:11.

16 After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up.

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, *who doeth all these things.

Gen. 12:2, 3.
Ex. 20:25. Gal. 5:19.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my judgment is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles turn to God.

20 But that we write unto them, that they abstain from the pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from these things strangled, and *from blood.

Lev. 8:17, etc.

21 For Moses from generations of old hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues *every sabbath day.

Chap. 13:15.

¶V

22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; namely, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, teachers among the brethren.

23 And they wrote letters by them after this manner: The apostles and elders and brethren send greetings unto the brethren which are of the

Gentiles in Antioch, *Syria and Cilicia: Matt. 4:24.

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that *certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying: Ye must be †circumcised, and keep the law; to whom we gave no such commandment;

Chap. 20:30. Gal. 2:4.
†Gen. 17:10.

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with *one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved brothers Barnabas and Paul,

Phil. 2:2.

26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats sacrificed to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: if ye keep yourselves from these things, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

¶VI

30 So they, when they were dismissed, came to Antioch. And when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered *the letter.

1 Cor. 5:9.

31 And when they had read it, they *rejoiced for the consolation.

Chap. 13:48.

32 And Judas and Silas

*being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and strengthened them.

Chap. 11:27: 13:1.

33 And after they had tarried there some time, they were dismissed in peace from the brethren and the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 But Paul and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and *preaching the word of the Lord, and many others with them. Verse 36.

¶VII

36 And after some days, Paul said unto Barnabas: Let us go again and visit our brethren in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

37 And Barnabas was minded to take with them John, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, because he had departed from them at *Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work. Chap. 13:13.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other, and Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto *Cyprus; Chap. 4:36.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being commended by the brethren unto the grace of the Lord.

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the *churches. Chap. 18:22.

CHAPTER 16.

¹Timotheus circumcised. Lydia converted. Paul and Silas imprisoned, but set free.

Then came Paul to Derbe and Lystra: and, behold, a certain disciple was there, named ²Timotheus, the son of a Jewish woman, who was a believer, but his father was a Greek. Chap. 19:22.

2 Who was ³well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

Chap. 6:3; 10:22.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and he took and circumcised him because of the Jews that were in those quarters, for they all knew that his father was a Greek.

4 And they went through the cities, and delivered them the ⁴decrees to keep, that were ordained by the apostles and elders that were at Jerusalem. Chap. 15:20, 29.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

¶ III

6 Now as they went through the ⁵region of Phrygia and Galatia, they were forbidden by the Holy Spirit to preach the word in Asia.

Chap. 18:23. Acts 2:4.

7 And when they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And passing by Mysia, they came down to ⁶Troas.

Chap. 20:6.

2 Cor. 2:12. 2 Tim. 4:13.

9 And ⁷a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stood a man of Macedonia be-

seeching him, saying: Come over into Macedonia, and help us. Gen. 15:1.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly concluding that the Lord had called us to preach ⁸the gospel unto them. Acts 20:24.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothrace, and the next day to Neapolis;

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a Roman colony. And we were in that city abiding certain days.

¶ III

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women who resorted thither.

14 And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, who worshipped God, heard us, whose ⁹heart the Lord opened, that she gave heed unto the things which were spoken by Paul. Luke 24:45.

15 And when she was ¹⁰baptized, and her household, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, ¹¹come into my house, and abide. And she constrained us.

Matt. 3:11. †Gen. 18:3.

¶ IV

16 And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a

spirit of divination met us, who brought her masters much gain by soothsaying.

17 The same followed Paul and us, and cried out, saying, *These men are servants of the most high God, who shew unto us the way of salvation.

Mark 1:24, 34.

18 And this did she for many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit: *I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And it came out the same hour.

Mark 16:17.

¶V

19 But when her masters saw that their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and dragged them to the marketplace before the rulers,

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying: These men, being Jews, *do exceedingly trouble our city.

Chap. 17:6. 1 Kings 18:17.

21 And teach customs, which are not lawful for us to receive, or to observe, being Romans.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them; and the magistrates rent their clothes off from them, and *commanded to beat them with rods.

2 Cor. 11:25. Phil. 1:30. 1 Thess. 2:2.

23 And when they had laid many stripes on them, they cast them into prison, charging the jailer to keep them safely;

24 Who, having received such a charge, cast them

into the inner *prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

Gen. 39:20.

¶VI

25 But at midnight Paul and Silas prayed,* and sang praises unto God. And the prisoners heard them.

Chap. 4:31; 5:41.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were *shaken, and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed.

Ex. 19:18.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, seeing the prison doors open, drew his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying: Do thyself no harm; for we are all here.

29 Then he called for lights and sprang in, and came *trembling for fear, and fell down before Paul and Silas,

Ex. 19:16.

30 And brought them out, and said: *Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

Luke 3:10.

31 And they said: *Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

John 3:16.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes; and was *baptized, he and all his, straightway.

Matt. 28:19, 20.

¶VII

34 And when he had brought them *into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced with all his house having believed in God.

Luke 5:29.

35 But when it was day, the magistrates sent the serjeants, saying: Let those men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go; now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them: They have beaten us publicly, uncondemned, *being Romans, and have cast us into prison; and do they now thrust us out privily? nay verily; but let them come themselves and bring us out.

Chap. 22:25.

38 And the serjeants told these words unto the magistrates. And they feared, when they heard that they were Romans.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and *desired them to depart out of the city.

Matt. 8:34.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entered into the house of Lydia, and when they had seen the brethren, they *comforted them, and departed.

Ps. 27:14; 31:24.

CHAPTER 17.

Paul at Thessalonica, Berea and Athens.

Now when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to

*Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

1 Thess. 2:2.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in to them, and for three sabbath days *reasoned with them out of the Scriptures.

1 Sam. 12:7.

3 Teaching and proving *that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

Verse 3:31.

Luke 24:27, 45. 1 Cor. 15:52.

4 And some of them *were persuaded, and consorted with Paul and Silas; and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

Verse 17. Chap. 28:24.

¶II

5 But the Jews which believed not being moved with envy, took unto them certain vile fellows of the rabble, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of *Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

Verses 6, 7, 9.

6 And when they found them not, they dragged Jason and certain brethren before the rulers of the city, crying, These that have *turned the world upside down are come hither also;

Chap. 16:20. 1 Kings 18:17.

7 Whom Jason hath received; and these all act contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying that there is *another king, one Jesus.

Luke 23:2.

8 And they troubled the people and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security from Jason, and the others, they let them go.

¶III

10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto *Berea, who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews.

Verse 13.

11 Now these were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, *and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

Is. 34:16. Luke 16:29.

John 5:39.

12 Therefore many of them believed; also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men, not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at *Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

Verse 10.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul to go as far as to the sea; but Silas and *Timotheus abode there still.

Verse 10. Chap. 16:1.

15 And they that conducted Paul brought him unto Athens; and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus to come to him with all speed, they departed.

¶IV

16 Now while Paul waited for them at *Athens, his spirit was provoked in him, as he beheld the city wholly given to idolatry.

Verse 15:22. 1 Thess. 3:1.

17 Therefore he reasoned in the synagogue with the Jews, and the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoics, encountered him. And some said, *What will this babbler say? others said, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods, because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. 1 Cor. 4:12. †Ps. 40:9.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto the court of Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears, we would know therefore what these things mean.

21 For all the Athenians, and strangers sojourning there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing.

¶V

22 Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said: Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

24 God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of

heaven and earth, dwelleth
*not in temples made with
hands;

Chap. 7:48.

25 Neither is worshipped
with men's hands, as *though
he needed any thing, seeing
he giveth to all life, and
breath, and all things;

Ps. 50:8, etc.

26 And hath made of one
blood all nations of men for
to dwell on all the face of
the earth, and hath deter-
mined the times before ap-
pointed, *and the bounds of
their habitation;

Deut. 32:8.

27 That they should *seek
the Lord, if haply they might
feel after him, and find him,
though he be not far from
every one of us.

Is. 55:6. Eccl. 13:9.

28 For in him we live, and
move, and have our being; as
certain also of your own
poets have said, For we are
also his offspring.

29 Forasmuch then as we
are the offspring of God, we
ought not to think that the
*Godhead is like unto gold,
or silver, or stone, graven by
art and man's device.

Is. 46:5.

30 And the *times of this
ignorance God winked at;
but now †commandest all
men every where to repent.

Luke 14:16. †Luke 24:47.

31 Because he hath ap-
pointed a day, in the which
he will judge the world in
righteousness by *that man
whom he hath ordained;
whereof he hath given as-
surance unto all men, in that
he †hath raised him from the
dead.

Rom. 4:10, etc.

†Acts 3:15, etc.

32 Now when they heard
of the resurrection of the
dead, some *mocked, but
others said, We will hear
thee again concerning this
matter.

1 Cor. 1:23.

33 So Paul departed from
among them.

34 Howbeit certain men
clave unto him, and believed;
among the which was Diony-
sius the Areopagite, and a
woman named Damaris, and
others with them.

CHAPTER 18.

Paul preaches at Corinth, goes
to Antiochia. Apollus to Ephesus.

After these things Paul
departed from *Athens, and
came to Corinth;

Chap. 17:15. 1 Cor. 1:2.

2 And found a certain Jew
named *Aquila, born in Pon-
tus, lately come from Italy,
with his wife Priscilla, be-
cause Claudius had com-
manded all Jews to depart
from Rome, and came unto
them.

Rom. 6:3. Acts 18:18, 26.

3 And because he was of
the same trade, he abode
with them, *and wrought,
for by trade they were tent-
makers.

1 Cor. 4:12, etc.

4 And he reasoned in the
synagogue every sabbath,
and *persuaded Jews and
Greeks.

Verse 13.

5 And when *Silas and
Timotheus were come down
from Macedonia, Paul was
constrained by the Spirit,
and testified to the Jews
that Jesus was the Christ.

Chap. 17:14, 15.

6 And when they opposed
themselves, and blasphemed,
*he shook his raiment, and

said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean; from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

Chap. 13:51. Matt. 10:14.

III

7 And he departed thence, and entered into a certain man's house, named Titius Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joined to the synagogue.

8 And *Crispus, the ruler of the synagogue, believed in the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing, believed, and were baptized.

1 Cor. 1:14.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, *Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

1 Cor. 2:3.

10 For * I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to harm thee, for †I have much people in this city.

Isa. 41:10. Jer. 1:18.

†Hos. 2:23. John 10:16.

11 And he continued there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them.

III

12 And when *Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews with one accord rose up against Paul, and brought him before the judgment seat,

Verse 14:17.

13 Saying: This man persuadeth the people to worship God contrary to the law.

14 But when Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of *wrong or wicked lewdness, O ye

Jews, reason would that I should bear with you,

Chap. 25:11.

15 But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, *look ye to it; for I will be no judge of such matters.

Matt. 27:24. John 18:31.

16 And he drove them from the judgment seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took *Sosthenes, the ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment seat. And Gallio cared for none of these things.

1 Cor. 1:1.

IV

18 And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence for Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila; *having shorn his head in Cenchrea, for he had a vow.

Chap. 21:24. Num. 6:9. 18.

19 And they came to Ephesus, and he left them there; but he himself entered into the synagogue, and *reasoned with the Jews.

1 Sam. 12:7.

20 And when they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not;

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh in Jerusalem, but I will return again unto you, *if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus.

1 Cor. 4:19.

Heb. 6:3. James 4:15.

22 And when he had landed at *Cesarea, and gone and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

Acts 10:1.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed,

and went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia, strengthening all the disciples.

¶V

24 Now a certain Jew named Apollos, born at *Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus.

Chap. 6:9.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being *fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John.

Chap. 19:6.

26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue, but when Aquila and Priscilla had heard him they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was wanted to pass into *Achaia, the brethren wrote letters, exhorting the disciples to receive him, and when he was come he helped them much which had believed through grace;

2 Cor. 1:1; 9:2.

28 For he mightily *convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the Scriptures that Jesus was *the Christ.

Chap. 9:22.

CHAPTER 19.

Paul at Ephesus. Drives out an evil spirit. Up roar of craftsman of Demetrius.

And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper regions, came *to Ephesus; and there finding certain disciples,

Chap. 18:19, 21.

2 He said unto them: Have ye *received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him: We have not so much as heard †whether there be any Holy Ghost.

Chap. 10:44. †John 7:39.

3 And he said: Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said; *Unto John's baptism.

Matt. 3:11.

4 Then said Paul: *John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

Matt. 3:11, etc.

5 And when they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had *laid his hands upon them, †the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

Chap. 6:6; 8:17.

†Chap. 10:14; 11:15.

7 And they were in all twelve.

¶II

8 And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three months, reasoning and *persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

Chap. 14:3.

9 But when *some were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, reasoning daily in the school of Tyrannus.

2 Tim. 1:15.

10 And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in

Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought special *miracles by the hands of Paul;

Ex. 7:9.

12 So that were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched his body and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

III

13 Then certain of the *traveling Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying: We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

Gen. 4:12.

14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said unto them, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them and *overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

Gen. 49:19.

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks dwelling at Ephesus; and fear *fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. Chap. 5:5, 11.

18 And many that believed came, and *confessed their deeds.

Lev. 5:5.

19 And many of them also which practiced curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all

men; and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

20 So *mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

Chap. 6:7; 12:24.

IV

21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to *Jerusalem, saying: After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

Chap. 18:21; 20:22.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timotheus and *Erastus; he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

Rom. 16:23.

23 And at that time there arose *no small stir concerning that way.

2 Cor. 1:8.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines of Diana, brought *no small gain unto the craftsmen;

Chap. 16:16.

25 Whom he called together with the *workmen of like occupation, and said: Sirs, ye know that by this trade we have our wealth.

2 Tim. 2:15.

26 Moreover ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned away much people, saying that they are no gods, which are made with hands,

27 So that not only this our trade is in danger to be set at nought, but also that the temple of the great goddess *Diana should be des-

pised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth. *Verses 24, 28, 34, 35.*

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion. And having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, *they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

2 Cor. 1:8, etc. Acts 20:4.

30 And when Paul would have entered in unto the theatre, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief men of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another, for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. *And Alexander beckoned with the hand, and would have made a defence unto the people.

Chap. 12:17; 13:16; 21:40.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours cried out: Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

IV

35 And when the town clerk had appeased the peo-

ple, he said: Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the *Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the image which fell down from Jupiter?

Chap. 21:29.

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of temples, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the trades men which are with him, have a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies, let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be *determined in a lawful assembly.

Acts 2:23.

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this day's uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAPTER 20.

Paul's further journeys. Eutychus brought to life. Charge to the Elders of Miletus.

And after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed to *go into Macedonia. *1 Tim. 1:3.*

2 And when he had gone through those parts, and had

given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three months. And when a plot was formed by the Jews against him, as he was about to sail into *Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia. Matt. 4:24.

4 And there accompanied him as far as Asia Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, *Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus; and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus. Chap. 17:10; 19:29.

5 These going before tarried for us at *Troas.

Chap. 16:8.

¶II

6 And we sailed away from *Philippi after the days of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five days; where we abode seven days. Chap. 16:2.

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together *to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight. Chap. 2:42, 46.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber, where we were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being overcome into a deep sleep, and as Paul was long preaching, he sank down sleeping, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

10 And Paul went down, *and fell on him, and em-

bracing him said: Trouble not yourselves, for his life is in him. 1 Kings 17:21.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked with them a long time, even till break of day, he departed.

12 And they brought the young man *alive, and were greatly comforted.

Chap. 24:15, 21.

¶III

13 But we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul; for so had he appointed, intending himself to go afoot.

14 And when he met us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day over against Chios, and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium; and the next day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail past Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia, for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

¶IV

17 And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the *elders of the church.

Chap. 11:30.

18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them: *Ye know, from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons, Chap. 19:10.

19 Serving the Lord with all *humility of mind, and with many tears, and temptations, which befell me by the plots of the Jews.

Prov. 16:19.

20 And how I kept back nothing that was *profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house,

Gen. 37:26.

21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, *repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

Mark 1:16.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto *Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there,

Chap. 19:21.

23 Save that the Holy Ghost *witnesseth in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions abide me.

Chap. 9:16; 21:4, 11.

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I *my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.

Chap. 21:13.

25 And now, behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the *blood of all men.

Chap. 18:6.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

¶IV

28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you Bishops, *to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

2 Sam. 5:8.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous *wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

Matt. 7:15; 10:16.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, *and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one, night and day, with tears.

Matt. 24:42. Heb. 13:17.

32 And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the *word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

Chap. 14:3. Phil. 1:1.

33 I have *coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel.

Psa. 10:3.

34 Yea, ye yourselves know, that these hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to *support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said: It is more blessed to give than to receive.

2 Cor. 12:3, 10.

¶VI

36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, *and prayed with them all.

Chap. 21:5. 2 Cor. 6:13.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him,

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see *his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

Verse 25.

CHAPTER 21.

Paul goes to Jerusalem. The Jewish mob. Paul a prisoner.

And it came to pass, that after we were parted from them, and had launched, we came with a straight course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phoenicia, we went aboard, and set forth.

¶III

3 Now when we were sighting Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at *Tyre, for there the ship was to unlade her burden.

Verse 7. Matt. 11:21.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days, who said to *Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

Verses 11, 12, 20, 23.

5 And when we had accomplished those days, we departed and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of

the city. And we *kneeled down on the shore, and prayed.

Chap. 20:36.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they returned home again.

¶III

7 And when we had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and we saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Caesarea; and we entered into the house of *Philip the evangelist, which was one of the seven; we abode with him.

Chap. 6:5. 2 Tim. 4:5.

9 Now this man had four daughters, *virgins, which did prophesy.

Chap. 2:17. Joel 3:1.

10 And as we tarried there many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named *Agabus.

Chap. 11:28.

11 And coming to us, and taking Paul's girdle, he bound his hands and feet, and said: Thus saith the *Holy Ghost, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

Chap. 20:23.

12 And when we heard these things, both we, and they of that place *besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

Matt. 16:22.

13 Then Paul answered, What mean ye weeping and breaking mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound

only, *but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.

Rom. 8:36.

14 And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying: *The will of the Lord be done.

Ps. 40:8.

¶IV

15 And after these days we took up our baggage and went up to Jerusalem.

16 And there went with us also certain of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an early disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

¶V

18 And the day following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the *elders were present.

Acts 11:30.

19 And when Paul had saluted them, he declared particularly what *things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his †ministry.

Luke 10:17. †Acts 20:24.

20 And when they heard it, they *glorified the Lord, and said unto him: Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are who believe; and they are all zealous for the law,

Num. 14:41.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake *Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs.

Ex. 3:4.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together, for they will certainly hear that thou art come.

23 Do therefore what we say to thee: We have four men which have a *vow on them.

Gen. 28:20.

24 Them take, and *purify thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave their heads, and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but that thou thyself also walkest orderly, and keepest the law.

Chap. 18:18.

25 As touching the Gentiles that believe, we have written and concluded that they observe no such thing, save only that they *keep themselves from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

Chap. 15:20, 29.

¶VI

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them entered into the temple, to signify the *accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.

2 Chron. 36:22.

27 And when the seven days were almost ended, the Jews which were of Asia, *when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

Chap. 24:18.

28 Crying out, Men of

Israel, help: *This is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place; and above all has brought Greeks also into the temple, and hath polluted †this holy place.

Chap. 19:16; 24:5.

†Hez. 44:7.

29 For they had seen before with him in the city *Trophimus the Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple.

Chap. 20:4; 2 Tim. 4:20.

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together, and they *took Paul, and dragged him out of the temple, and forthwith the doors were shut.

Chap. 26:21.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all *Jerusalem was in an uproar.

Matt. 23:37.

32 Who immediately took soldiers and centurions, and ran down unto them, and when they saw the chief captain and the soldiers, they left off beating Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near, and took him, and commanded him to be *bound with two chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

Chap. 20:23.

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude, and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when Paul came

upon the stairs, so it was, that he was borne of the soldiers for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, *Away with him. Luke 23:18.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek?

38 Art not thou that *Egyptian, which before these days madest an uproar, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers?

Ex. 1:13.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of *Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city; and, I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people.

Chap. 9:11.

40 And when he had given him license, Paul stood on the stairs, and *beckoned with the hand unto the people. And when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying:

Chap. 12:17; 13:16; 19:33.

CHAPTER 22.

Paul speaks to the people, claims Roman citizenship.

*Brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence which I make now unto you.

Chap. 7:2; 13:26.

2 And when they heard that he spake in *the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence. And he saith:

Chap. 21:40.

3 I am verily a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of *Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.

Chap. 5:34.

4 And I *persecuted this way even unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

Chap. 8:3; 9:2; 26:9, etc.

5 As also the high *priest doth bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders, from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring those who were there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

Chap. 9:2; 26:12.

6 And it came to pass, that, *as I made my journey, and drew nigh unto Damascus about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

Chap. 9:3, 17; 26:12.

1 Cor. 15:8.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a *voice saying unto me: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

Chap. 9:4; 26:14, 15.

8 And I answered: Who art thou, Lord? Then the voice said unto me: I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest.

9 And they *that were with me saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me. Chap. 9:7.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, *Arise, and go into Damascus; and there it

shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do. Chap. 9:6.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

¶II

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,

13 Came unto me, and standing by me said unto me: Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the very hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he said: The God of our fathers hath *chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see the righteous One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth.

Chap. 9:15.

15 For thou shalt be *his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.

Chap. 26:16.

16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, wash away thy sins, and call on the name of the Lord.

¶III

17 And it came to pass, that, when I was come again *to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I fell in a trance;

Chap. 9:26.

18 And saw him saying unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem, because they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know not I *imprisoned and

beat in every synagogue them that believed on thee.

Chap. 8:3; 9:2.

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, *and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

Chap. 7:57; 8:1.

21 But he said unto me, *Depart, for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

Chap. 9:15; 13:2.

¶IV

22 And they gave him attention unto this word, but then they lifted up their voices, and said *away with such a fellow from the earth, for it is not fit that he should live.

Chap. 21:36.

23 And as they cried out, they cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the air,

24 The chief captain commanded Paul to be brought into the castle and directed that he should be examined under the lash, that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.

¶V

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, *Is it lawful for you to lash a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?

Chap. 16:17.

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chief captain, saying: Take heed what thou doest; for this man is a Roman.

27 Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? He said, Yea.

28 And the chief captain answered, With a great sum obtained I this freedom. And Paul said: But I am a Roman born.

29 Then straightway they departed from him who should have examined him. And the chief captain also was afraid, when he knew that Paul was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

CHAPTER 23.

Paul answereth before the council. Is beaten. Conspiracy against him. Is sent to Felix.

And Paul, earnestly beholding the council, said: Brethren, *I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day. Chap. 24:16.

2 And the high priest, *Ananias, commanded them that stood by him to smite him on the mouth. Chap. 24:1.

3 Then said Paul unto him: God shall smite thee, *thou whited wall! for sittest thou to judge me according to the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law? Matt. 23:27.

4 And they that stood by said, Revilest thou God's high priest?

5 Then said Paul, I did not know, brothers, that it was the high priest, for it is written: *Thou shalt not speak

evil of the ruler of thy people. Ex. 22:18. 2 Peter 2:10. Jud. 8.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council: Brethren, *I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee, of the hope and resurrection of the dead I am called in question. Chap. 26:5.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees. And the multitude was divided.

8 For the Sadducees *say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit, but the Pharisees confess both. Matt. 22:23.

9 And there arose a great cry. And the scribes that were of the Pharisees' part arose, and strove, saying, *We find no evil in this man, but if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God. Chap. 25:25. †Chap. 5:38.

10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain, fearing lest Paul should have been torn in pieces by them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

¶III

11 And the night following the Lord stood by him, and said, *Be of good cheer, Paul; for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear testimony also in Rome. Chap. 19:8. †Chap. 19:21.

12 And when it was day, the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under an oath, saying that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more than forty which made this plot.

14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said: We have bound ourselves under a great oath, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the council suggest to the chief captain that he bring him down unto you to-morrow, as though ye would inquire something more perfectly concerning him, and we, before he come near you, are ready to kill him.

16 But when Paul's sister's son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entered into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said: Bring this young man unto the chief captain, for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said: Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and asked me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked him: What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said: The Jews have *agreed to desire thee that thou wouldst bring down

Paul to-morrow into the council, as though they would inquire somewhat of him more perfectly. Acts 5:9.

21 But do not thou yield unto them, for there lie in wait for him more than forty men, which have bound themselves *with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him; and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee. Gen. 4:8.

22 Then the chief captain let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man that thou hast showed these things to me.

¶III

23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred soldiers to *go to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night; Verse 33. Chap. 10:1.

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe unto *Felix the governor. Chap. 24:3. 22; 25:14.

¶IV

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias unto the most excellent governor Felix greeting:

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them. Then *came I with a force of soldiers and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman. Chap. 21:33; 22:25.

28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore

they accused him, *I brought him forth into their council; Chap. 20:30.

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his *accusers also to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell. Chap. 24:8.

¶V

31 So the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 But on the morrow they left it to the horsemen to go with him, and the soldiers returned to the castle.

33 When they came to Cesarea, they delivered the *letter to the governor, presented Paul also before him. 1 Cor. 5:9.

34 And when the governor had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia, he said:

35 I will hear thee, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be *kept in Herod's judgment hall. Chap. 10:1.

CHAPTER 24.

The charge of Tertullus against Paul. Paul's defense. Felix defers judgment.

And after five days Ananias the high priest came down with the elders, and

with a certain orator named Tertullus, who informed the governor against Paul.

Chap. 23:2.

§II

2 And when he was called, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying: Seeing that by thee we enjoy great peace, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy care,

3 We accept it always, and in all places, *most noble Felix, with all thankfulness.

Chap. 23:26.

4 But that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of *sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes;

1 Kings 18:17.

6 Who also hath gone about to *profane the temple, whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

Chap. 21:28.

7 But the chief captain, *Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands.

Verse 22. Chap. 23:26.

8 Commanding his *accusers to come unto thee; by examining of whom thyself mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

Chap. 23:30.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying that these things were so.

§III

10 Then Paul, after that the governor had beckoned

unto him to speak, answered: Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more *cheerfully answer for myself; *Matt. 9:2.*

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And *they never found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither stirring up the people, or in the synagogues, nor in the city.

Chap. 25:8.

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confess unto thee, that after the way which *they call heresy, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and in the prophets, *Verse 5.*

15 And I have a hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a *resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

Dan. 12:2. John 5:28, 29.

16 And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience *void of offence toward God, and men.

Chap. 23:1. Job 27:6.

1 Peter 3:16.

17 Now after many years I came to bring *alms to my nation, and offerings.

Chap. 11:29; 21:16. Gal. 2:10.

18 Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me *purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

Chap. 21:27.

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had aught against me.

20 Or else let these themselves here say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the council.

21 Except it be for this *one voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day.

Chap. 23:6; 26:6; 28:20.

III

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When *Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

Verse 7. Chap. 23:26.

23 And he commanded a *centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister or come unto him. Chap. 27:3.

24 And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ Jesus.

25 And as he *reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix *trembled, and answered: Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

1 Sam. 12:7. Ex. 19:16.

26 He hoped also that *money should have been given him of Paul, that he

might loose him; wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

Gen. 17:12.

27 But after two years *Porcius Festus came into Felix' room. And Felix, †willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul in bonds.

Chap. 25:14. †Chap. 25:9.

CHAPTER 25.

Paul before Festus. He appeals to Caesar. He is sent to Agrippa.

Now when *Festus had entered upon his province, after three days he went up from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

Chap. 24:27.

2 And the high priest and the chief of the Jews *informed him against Paul, and besought him. Chap. 24:1.

Chap. 25:4. 6, 7, 9, 10, 14, 19, 21, 23.

3 Asking as a favour against him, that he would send for Paul to Jerusalem, *laying wait in the way to kill him.

Chap. 23:15.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly thither.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, go down with me, and *accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him.

Matt. 27:37.

6 And when he had tarried among them more than ten days, he went down unto Cesarea; and the next day *sitting on the judgment seat commanded Paul to be brought.

John 19:13.

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem stood round

about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.

8 But Paul answered for himself: Neither against the law of the Jews, or *against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all. Chap. 24:12.

9 But Festus *willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said: Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

Verses 8, 10-12, 21. Chap. 24:27.

10 Then said Paul: I stand before Cesar's judgment seat, where I ought to be judged. To the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 If I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die. But if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man can deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.

12 Then Festus, when he had conferred with the council, answered: Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.

¶¶¶

13 And after certain days king Agrippa and Bernice came *unto Cesarea to salute Festus. Chap. 20:30.

14 And when they had been there many days, Festus laid Paul's case before the king, saying, *There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix, Chap. 24:27.

15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief

priests and the elders of the Jews *informed me, desiring to have judgment against him.

Verses 1, 2.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, *before that he which is accused have the accusers face to face, and have license to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him. Deut. 17:4.

17 Therefore, when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgment seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed.

19 But had certain questions against him of their own religion, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be *alive.

Luke 24:23.

20 And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him *whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters. Verse 9.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

¶¶¶

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus. I would also wish to hear the man myself. Tomorrow, said Festus, thou shalt hear him.

23 And on the morrow, when Agrippa was come, and

Bernice *with great pomp, and was entered into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the city, at Festus' command Paul was brought forth. Is. 5:14.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and also here, *crying that he ought not to live any longer. Chap. 22:22.

25 But I found that he had committed *nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him. Chap. 23:9.

26 Of whom I have nothing definite to write unto my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, King Agrippa, that, after examination had, I may have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withal to signify the charges laid against him.

CHAPTER 26.

Paul's defense before Agrippa.
His appeal granted.

Then Agrippa said unto Paul: Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then Paul stretched forth his hand, and answered for himself:

2 I think myself happy, King Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself this day before thee regarding all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews.

3 Especially because I know thou art expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews; wherefore I beseech thee to hear me *patiently. Rom. 5:3.

4 My manner of life *from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews; Eccl. 11:9.

5 Which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the strictest sect of our religion I *lived a Pharisee. Chap. 23:6. Phil. 3:5.

6 And now I stand here to be judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers, Ex. 12:25.

7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes, earnestly serving God day and night, hope to attain. *For which hope's sake, King Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

Chap. 13:32; 28:20. Gen. 3:15.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

¶¶¶

9 I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

Chap. 8:3; 9:1; 22:4.

10 Which I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I *shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them. Gen. 39:20.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceed-

ingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

12 Whereupon as I went *to Damascus with authority and commission from the chief priests, Chap. 9:3, etc.

¶III

13 At midday, O *King, I saw on the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice saying unto me in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the goads.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 Arise, and stand upon thy feet; for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose *to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; Chap. 22:15.

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom I send thee.

18 To open *their eyes, that they may turn themselves from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins †and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith in me. Is. 35:5. Eph. 1:18.

†Chap. 20:32. Eph. 1:11. Col. 1:12.

¶IV

19 Wherefore, O King Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the *heavenly vision. Gal. 1:16.

20 But *shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the country of Judea, and also to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance. Chap. 9:21.

21 For these cause the Jews caught me in the temple *and went about to kill me. Chap. 21:30.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which *the prophets and Moses did say should come. Luke 24:44.

23 How that Christ should suffer, and that he should be the *first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

1 Cor. 15:20. Col. 1:8. Rev. 1:5.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thyself; much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But Paul said, I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak forth words of truth and soberness.

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely; for I am *persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this was not done in a corner. John 8:20.

27 King Agrippa, believest

thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul: Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that whether with little or with much, not only thou, but also all that hear me this day, should become such as I am, except these bonds.

II V

30 And when he had thus spoken, the King rose up, and the governor, and Bernice, and they that sat with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death or of bonds.

32 And Agrippa said unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, *if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

Chap. 25:11.

CHAPTER 27.

Paul's voyage to Rome. Shipwreck and miraculous escape.

And when it was determined that we should *sail for Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus' band.

Chap. 25:12.

2 And entering into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia; *one Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us.

Chap. 19:29; 20:4.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon, where Julius *courteously treated

Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

Chap. 24:23; 28:16.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed across the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing for Italy; and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the wind not suffering us, we sailed under Crete, over against Salmone;

8 And, passing it with difficulty unto a place which is called the Fair Havens; nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now *dangerous, because the Fast was now already over, Paul admonished them,

2 Cor. 11:25, 26.

10 And said unto them: Friends, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives.

III

11 Nevertheless the centurion believed the master and the owner of the ship, more than those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the harbor was not commodious to winter in, the majority advised

to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phoenix, and there to winter; which is a harbor of Crete, and lieth toward the southeast and northeast.

13 And when the south wind blew softly, supposing that they had *obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Crete.

Is. 14:42.

14 But not long after there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let her drive before it.

16 And running under a certain island which is called Claudia, we had much work to secure the hoat.

17 Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirdling the ship; and, fearing lest they should fall into the quicksands, lowered sail, and so we drifted.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightened the ship;

19 And the third day we cast out with our own hands the ship's tackle.

20 And as neither sun nor stars in many days appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved was now taken away.

¶ III

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have

loosed from Crete, and have gained *this harm and loss.

Matt. 16:26.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good *cheer: for there shall be no loss of life among you, only the ship.

Matt. 9:2.

23 For there stood by me this night the *angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve.

Gen. 16:7.

24 Saying, *Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Cesar. And, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee.

Chap. 23:11.

25 Wherefore, dear friends, be of good cheer, for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we *must be cast upon a certain island.

Chap. 28:1.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in the sea of Adria, about midnight the shipmen deemed that they drew near to some country;

28 And sounded, and found twenty fathoms, and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the sailors were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, on pretence as though they would have cast anchors out of the fore-ship.

31 Paul said to the centu-

rion and to the soldiers, Except these men abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the soldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her drift away.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take some meat, saying: This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

Verse 27.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take some meat; for this is for your health: for there shall not *a hair fall from the head of any of you.

Matt. 10:30, Luke 21:18.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave *thanks to God in presence of them all; and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

John 6:11. 1 Tim. 4:4.

36 Then were they all *of good cheer, and they also took some meat. Matt. 14:27.

37 And we were in all in the ship *two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.

Chap. 2:41; 7:14.

¶IV

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they recognized not the land, but they discovered a certain bay with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed themselves unto the sea, and *loosed the rud-

der bands, and hoisted up the mainsail to the wind, and made toward shore.

John 11:44.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met *they ran the ship aground; and the forepart stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

2 Cor. 11:25.

42 And the soldiers' advise was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out, and escape.

43 But the centurion desiring to save Paul, kept them from their purpose; and commanded that they which could swim should cast themselves first into the sea *and get to the shore;

Verses 24, 25.

44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship. And so it came to pass, that they all escaped safe to the shore.

CHAPTER 28.

Events at Melita. Arrival in Rome. Paul preaches the Gospel at Rome.

And when we were *escaped we discovered that the island was called Malta.

Chap. 27:26.

2 And the native people shewed us no little kindness. For they kindled a fire, and received us every one, because of the rain and the *cold.

2 Cor. 11:27.

3 But when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came out a viper because of the heat, and *fastened on his hand.

Verses 6, 8.

4 And when the natives saw the venomous beast hanging on his hand, they said among themselves: No doubt this man is a *murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

Num. 35:16.

5 But he *shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm.

Mark 16:18.

6 Howbeit they look that he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and seeing that no harm came to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was *a God.

Chap. 14:11.

III

7 Now in the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius; who received us, and entertained us three days courteously.

8 And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick *of a fever and of a bloody flux; so Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, healed him.

Matt. 8:14.

9 So when this was done, others also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed.

10 Who also honoured us with many honours; and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.

11 After three months we departed in a ship of *Alexandria, which had wintered

in the isle, whose ensign was Castor and Pollux.

Chap. 18:24.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three days.

13 From thence we fetched a compass, and came to Rhegium. And after one day the south wind blew, we came the next day to Puteoli,

14 Where we found brethren, and were entreated to tarry with them seven days, and after that we went *toward Rome.

Rom. 1:7.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appius Forum, and the Three Taverns. When Paul saw them he thanked God, and was much cheered.

16 And when we entered into *Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard. But Paul was †suffered to dwell by himself with a soldier that guarded him.

Chap. 23:33.

†Chap. 24:23; 27:3.

III

17 And it came to pass, that after three days Paul called the chief of the Jews together, and when they were come together, he said unto them: *Brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people, or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered as a prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans.

Chap. 23:1.

18 Who, when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death found in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to *appeal unto Cesar; not that I had aught to accuse my nation of.

Chap. 25:12.

20 For this reason therefore have I called for you, to see you, and to speak with you; *because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

Chap. 23:6; 24:21; 26:6, 7.

21 And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither have any of the brethren that came to us shewn or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest, for as concerning *this sect, we know that every where it is spoken ~~†~~against.

Chap. 24:14. ~~†~~Luke 2:34.

¶IV

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and *testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

Chap. 26:22.

24 And some *believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.

Chap. 17:4.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they

departed, after that Paul had spoken one word: Well spake the *Holy Ghost by Esaia the prophet unto your fathers,

2 Peter 1:21.

26 Saying: *Go unto this people, and say, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive.

Is. 6:9, 10. Luke 8:10, etc.

27 For the heart *of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Hez. 11:19.

28 Be it known *therefore unto you, that this salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, ~~†~~and that they will hear.

Chap. 13:38, 46. ~~†~~Ps. 18:45.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great *disputing among themselves.

1 Sam. 12:7.

¶V

30 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came unto him.

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching *those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no one forbidding him.

Ex. 4:12, 15.

SOME POINTERS FOR LAY WORKERS, DEACONS AND MISSIONARIES.

What Unconverted Persons Should Take Notice Of.

1. All have sinned. You are a sinner as well as I.

Rom. 3:22, 23; Matt. 22:37, 38;
Luke 18:10-14.

2. The consequences of sin for you and for me.

Rom. 6:23; 2 Thess. 1:7-9;
John 8:24; Luke 16:12-31.

3. The escape from sin and damnation for you and for me.

John 14:6; Acts 4:12; John 6:68-69.

4. The great love of God for all—for you and for me.

John 3:16; Rom. 5:8; Luke 15:11-24.

Different Objections Answered.

1. I don't feel it.

John 5:24; 6:37, 40; Matt. 9:9-13.

2. Did you say for me to repent?

Matt. 4:17; Mark 3:2; Acts 2:38.

3. Later on, not to-day.

2 Cor. 6:2; James 4:13, 14;
Acts 24:24-27.

4. I fear I can't hold out.

1 Cor. 10:13; Jude 23-25;
Rom. 8:35-39.

5. Too much to give up.

Mark 8:36, 37; Rom. 6:23;
Matt. 19:16-22.

6. After I have gotten to be a better man.

Mark 2:17; Eph. 2:8, 9; Mark 5:25-34.

7. We are all right without religion.

Luke 16:15; Rom. 3:10-12;
Luke 18:10-14.

SOME POINTERS FOR LAY WORKERS.—Concluded.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>5. Christ atoned for us all
—for you and for me.</p> <p>1 Peter 2:24, 25; Rom. 5:6;
Luke 23:39-46.</p> | <p>8. Should I become baptized and go to the Lord's table?</p> <p>Matt. 28:19; Acts 2:38;
1 Cor. 11:28.</p> |
| <p>6. By faith only, not by works, are we to be saved, you and I.</p> <p>John 1:12; Rom. 3:24, 28;
Eph. 2:8-10; Acts 16:25-33.</p> | <p>9. I can not believe.</p> <p>John 5:44; 7:17; Mark 9:20-27.</p> |
| <p>7. You and I must confess faith in Christ, repent, believe, and be baptized.</p> <p>Matt. 10:32, 33; Rom. 10:9-11;
John 5:24; Acts 4:18-33;
Mark 16:19; Matt. 28:19.</p> | <p>10. It is not for me.</p> <p>1 Tim. 1:15, 16; Rev. 22:17;
John 4:7-26.</p> |
| <p>8. The testimony of the Holy Spirit will be given unto you as it has been given unto me.</p> <p>1 John 5:10-13; Rom. 8:15-17;
Luke 19:1-10.</p> | <p>11. I am so weak.</p> <p>2 Cor. 12:9; Rom. 1:16;
Isaiah 40:31.</p> |
| | <p>12. Hypocrites in the church.</p> <p>Matt. 7:1-5; Rom. 14:12, 13;
John 21:19-23.</p> |
| | <p>13. I am a backslider—it's no use.</p> <p>1 John 1:9; Matt. 11:28-30;
John 21:1-17.</p> |
| | <p>14. Must I return?</p> <p>Jer. 3:12; Zech. 1:3;
Matt. 11:28.</p> |

This tract may be had printed separately, twelve copies for 10 cents.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE ROMANS

CHAPTER 1.

Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, *called to be an apostle, †set apart unto the gospel of God.

Acts. 22:21. 1 Cor. 1:1.
Gal. 1:1. 1 Tim. 1:11. 2 Tim. 1:11.
†Acts 9:15; 13:2.

2 *Which he promised before †by his prophets in the holy scriptures. Titus 1:2.

†Chap. 3:21; 16:26. Gal. 3:8.

3 Concerning his Son *who was †born of the seed of David according to the flesh; Matt. 1:6, 16. Luke 1:32.

2 Tim. 2:8. †John 1:14.

4 And was *declared with power to be the Son of God, according †to the spirit of holiness, by his resurrection from the dead, even Jesus Christ our Lord.

Acts 13:33. †Heb. 9:14.

5 Through whom *we have received grace and apostleship into †obedience to the faith among all nations, ††for his name's sake.

Chap. 12:8; 15:16. 1 Cor. 15:10.

Gal. 1:15. Eph. 3:8.

†Acts 6:7. ††Acts 9:15.

6 Among whom are you also called of Jesus Christ:

7 To all that are in Rome, the beloved of God *called to be saints: †Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Chap. 9:24. 1 Cor. 1:2. 1 Thess. 4:7.

†1 Cor. 1:3. Gal. 1:3.

III

8 First, *I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that †your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

1 Cor. 1:4. Phil. 1:3. 1 Thess. 1:2.
†Chap. 16:19. 1 Thess. 1:8.

9 For *God is my witness, †whom I serve in my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that ††without ceasing I mention you always in my prayers;

Chap. 9:1. 2 Cor. 1:23.

†Acts 27:23. 2 Tim. 1:3.

John 4:23, 24. ††1 Thess. 3:10.

10 *Making request, if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey †by the will of God to come unto you.

Chap. 15:23. 32. 1 Thess. 3:10.

†James 4:15.

11 For I long to see you, that *I may impart unto you some spiritual gifts, to the end ye may be established;

Chap. 15:29.

12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you by *the mutual faith both of you and me.

Titus 1:4. 2 Pet. 1:1.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that *oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, but †was hindered hitherto that I might have some fruit

†among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

Chap. 15:23. †Acts 16:7.

1 Thess. 2:18. ††Phil. 4:17.

14 *I am debtor both to the Greek, and to the Barbarian; both to the wise, and to the unwise. 1 Cor. 9:16.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you also that are at Rome.

16 For *I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for †it is the power of God bringing salvation to every one that believeth in Christ; ††to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

Ps. 40:9. 10. 2 Tim. 1:8.

†1 Cor. 1:18; 15:2. ††Luke 2:30.

17 For *therein is a righteousness of God revealed, from faith to faith, as it is written: †The just shall live by faith.

Chap. 3:21, 22. †Hab. 2:4. John 3:36. Gal. 3:11. Phil. 3:9.

18 *For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold down the truth in unrighteousness;

Acts 17:30. Eph. 5:6. Col. 3:6.

III

19 Because *that which may be known of God is manifest to them; for †God hath manifested it unto them.

Acts 14:17. †John 1:9.

20. For *the invisible things of him since the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

Ps. 19:1, etc. Acts 14:17; 17:27.

IV

21 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were they thankful; but *became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

2 Kings 17:15. Jer. 2:5.

22 *Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

Jer. 10:14.

23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible *God into an image made by corruptible man, of birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

Deut. 4:16, etc. Ps. 106:20. Is. 40:18, 25. Jer. 2:11. Acts 17:29.

24 *Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, †to dishonour their own bodies ††between themselves:

Ps. 81:12. Acts 7:42. Eph. 4:18, 19.

†1 Cor. 6:18. 1 Thess. 4:4.

1 Pet. 4:3. ††Lev. 18:22.

25 And changed *the truth of God †into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who ††is blessed for ever.

Amen. 1 Thess. 1:9. 1 John 5:20.

†Is. 44:20. Jer. 10:14; 13:26.

Amos 2:4. ††Rom. 9:5.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto *vile passions, for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature;

Lev. 18:22, 23. Eph. 5:12. Jude 10.

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is shameful, and receiving in themselves

that recompence of their error which was due.

28 And even as they refused to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them up unto a reprobate mind, to do those things *which are not fitting. Eph. 5:4.

29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents.

31 Without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful.

32 Who *knowing the judgment of God, that they who practise such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them. Chap. 2:2. †Chap. 6:21.

††Ps. 50:18. Hos. 7:2, 3.

CHAPTER 2.

Therefore thou art *inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: †for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest do the same things.

Chap. 1:20. †2 Sam. 12:5, 6, 7. Matt. 7:1, 2. John 8:9.

2 But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.

III

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them

which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

4 Or despisest thou *the riches of his goodness and **forbearance and longsuffering, †not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

Chap. 9:23. Eph. 1:7; 4:7. **Chap. 3:25. †Ex. 34:6. ††Is. 30:18.

5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart* treasurest up for thyself wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God.

Deut. 32:34. James 5:3.

6 *Who will render to every man according to his deeds.

Job. 34:11. Ps. 62:12. Prov. 24:12. Jer. 17:10. Matt. 16:27. Rev. 2:23.

7 To them who by patience in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life;

8 But unto them that are contentious, and *do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be indignation and wrath,

Job 24:13. 2 Thess. 1:8.

9 Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew *first, and also of the Greek.

Amos 3:2. Luke 12:47. 1 Pet. 4:17.

10 *But glory and honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

1 Pet. 1:7.

11 For *there is no respect of persons with God.

2 Chr. 19:7. Acts 10:34. Eph. 6:9. 1 Pet. 1:17.

12 For as many as have sinned without law shall also

perish without law: and as many as have sinned under the law shall be judged by the law;

13 For *not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

Matt. 7:21. James 1:22, 23, 25.
1 John 3:7.

14 For when the Gentiles, who have no law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having no law, are a law unto themselves;

15 Who shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience witnessing within them, and their thoughts accusing or even excusing themselves.

16 *In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men ~~†~~according to my gospel ~~††~~by Jesus Christ.

Ecc. 12:14. Matt. 25:31.
†John 5:22. Acts 10:42; 17:31.
††Chap. 16:25. 1 Tim. 1:11.

¶¶¶

17 But if *thou art called a Jew, and ~~†~~restest in the law, ~~††~~and makest thy boast of God,

Matt. 3:9. John 8:33.
†Mic. 3:11. Chap. 9:4.
††Is. 45:25; 48:2.

18 And *knowest his will, and ~~†~~approvest the things that are excellent, being instructed out of the law;

Deut. 4:8. Ps. 147:19, 20.
†Phil. 1:10.

19 And *art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them that are in darkness.

Matt. 15:14; 23:16, 17, 19, 24.

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes,

*who hast the form of knowledge and of the truth;

Chap. 6:17. 2 Tim. 1:13; 3:5.

21 *Thou therefore that teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

Ps. 50:16, etc. Matt. 23:3, etc.

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, *dost thou rob temples?

Mul. 3:8.

23 Thou that *boatest in the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

Verse 17.

24 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you, even as it is *written.

2 Sam. 12:14.
Is. 52:5. Ezek. 36:20.

25 *For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law thy circumcision has become uncircumcision.

Gal. 5:3.

26 Therefore *if the uncircumcision keep the requirements of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? Acts 10:34.

27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, *judge thee, who notwithstanding letter and circumcision art a lawbreaker;

Matt. 12:41, 42.

28 For *he is not a Jew who is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: Matt. 23:8. John 8:39. Chap. 9:6, 7. Rev. 2:9.

29 But he is a Jew, *who is one inwardly; and **circumcision is that of the

heart, in the spirit, not in the letter; †whose praise is not of men, but of God.

† Pet. 3:4. **Phil. 3:3. Col. 2:11.

†Chap. 7:6. 2 Cor. 3:6.

††1 Cor. 4:5. 2 Cor. 10:18.

CHAPTER 3.

What advantage then hath the Jew? or what is the profit of circumcision?

2 Much every way: first, because that *unto them were committed the word of God.

Deut. 4:7, 8. Ps. 147:19, 20.

Chap. 2:18; 9:4.

3 For what if *some did not believe? †shall their unbelief make the faithfulness of God without effect?

Chap. 10:16. Heb. 4:2.

†Num. 23:10. Chap. 9:5; 11:29.

4 *God forbid: yea, let **God be found true, but †every man be false; as it is written, ††That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and overcome when thou art judged.

Job 40:8. **John 3:33.

†Ps. 62:9; 116:11. ††Ps. 51:4.

5 But if our unrighteousness commendeth the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? *I speak as a man.

Chap. 6:19. Gal. 3:15.

6 God forbid, for then *how shall God judge the world? Gen. 18:25. Job. 8:3.

7 But if the truth of God hath abounded through my lie unto his glory; why am I also still judged as a sinner?

8 And why not rather, as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, *Let us do evil, that good may come? whose condemnation is just.

Chap. 5:20; 6:1, 15.

9 What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise; for we have before proved both Jews and Greeks that *they are all under sin; Ver. 23. Gal. 3:22.

10 As it is written, *There is none righteous, no, not one: Ps. 14:1, 2, 3; 53:1.

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no, not so much as one.

13 *Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; †the poison of asps is under their lips:

Ps. 5:9. Jer. 5:16. †Ps. 140:3.

14 *Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness:

Ps. 10:7.

15 *Their feet are swift to shed blood;

Prov. 1:16. Is. 59:7, 8.

16 Destruction and misery are in their ways;

17 And the way of peace have they not known;

18 *There is no fear of God before their eyes.

Ps. 35:1.

19 Now we know that what things soever *the law saith, it saith to them that are under the law, that †every mouth may be stopped, and ††all the world may become guilty before God.

John 10:34; 15:25.

†Job. 5:15. Ezek. 16:63.

20 Therefore *by the works of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight:

for †through the law is the knowledge of sin. Ps. 143:2. Acts 13:39. Gal. 2:16; 3:11. Titus 3:5. †Chap. 7:7.

¶II

21 But now *the righteousness of God apart from the law is manifested, †being witnessed to by the law †and the prophets;

Acts 15:11. Chap. 1:17. †John 5:46. Acts 26:22. †Chap. 1:2. 1 Pet. 1:10.

22 Even the righteousness of God which is *through faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe for †there is no difference;

Chap. 4. †Chap. 10:12. Gal. 3:28. Col. 3:11.

23 For *all have sinned, and fall short of the glory of God;

Ver. 9. Chap. 11:32. Gal. 3:22.

24 Being justified freely *by his grace †through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

Chap. 4:16. Eph. 2:8. Titus 3:5. †Matt. 20:28. Eph. 1:7. 1 Tim. 2:6. 1 Pet. 1:18, 19.

25 Whom God hath set forth *to be a propitiation through faith **in his blood, to manifest his righteousness †in the remission of ††sins done aforetime through the forbearance of God.

Lev. 16:15. 1 John 2:2. **Col. 1:20. †Acts 13:38, 39. ††Acts 17:30. Heb. 9:15.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness; that he might be just, and the justifier of him that believeth in Jesus.

27 *Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

Chap. 2:17, 23; 4:2. 1 Cor. 1:29, 31. Eph. 2:9.

28 Therefore we conclude *that a man is justified by faith alone without the deeds of the law.

Vernes 20, 21, 22. Acts 13:38, 39. Gal. 2:16.

¶III

29 Or is he the God of the Jews only? is he not the God of Gentiles also? Yes, of Gentiles also:

30 Seeing *it is one God, who shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

Chap. 10:12, 13. Gal. 3:8, 20, 28.

31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid; nay, we establish the law.

CHAPTER 4.

Then what shall we say that *Abraham our forefather, according to the flesh, hath found?

John 8:33, 39. Is. 51:2. Matt. 3:9.

2 For if Abraham was *justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God. Chap. 3:20, 27, 28.

3 For what saith the scripture? *Abraham believed God, and it was reckoned unto him for righteousness.

Gen. 15:6. Gal. 3:6. James 2:23.

4 Now *to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned as of grace, but as of debt.

Chap. 11:6.

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth *the ungodly, his faith is reckoned for righteousness.

Josh 24:2.

6 Even as David also pronounced blessedness of the man, unto whom God reckoneth righteousness without works.

7 Saying, *Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.

Ps. 32:1, 2.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not reckon sin.

III

9 Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And *he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that the might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be reckoned unto them also:

Gen. 17:10.

†Verses 12, 16. Luke 10:9. Gal. 3:7.

12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise, that he should be the *heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

Gen. 17:4, etc. Gal. 3:29.

14 For *if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise is made of none effect:

Gal. 3:18.

15 For *the law worketh wrath; but where no law is, there is no transgression.

Chap. 3:20; 5:13, 20; 7:8, 10, 11.

2 Cor. 3:7, 9.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be *by grace; †to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; ††who is the father of us all,

Chap. 3:24. †Gal. 3:22.

††Is. 51:2. Chap. 9:8.

17 As it is written, *I have made thee a father of many nations, before him whom he believed, even God, †who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those ††things that are not, as though they were.

Gen. 17:5. †Chap. 8:11.

††Chap. 9:26. 1 Cor. 1:28.

18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which had been spoken, *So shall thy seed be. Gen. 15:5.

19 And being not weak in faith, *he considered not his own body as good as dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sarah's.

Gen. 17:17; 18:11. Heb. 11:11, 12.

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but waxed strong through faith, giving glory to God;

21 And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, *he was able also to perform.

Ps. 115:3.

Luke 1:37, 45. Heb. 11:19.

22 Wherefore also it was reckoned unto him for righteousness.

¶III

23 Now *it was not written for his sake alone, that it was reckoned unto him;

Chap. 15:4. 1 Cor. 10:6, 11.

24 But for us also, to whom it shall be reckoned, if we believe *on him that raised Jesus our Lord from the dead;

Acts 2:24; 13:30.

25 *Who was delivered for our offences, and †was raised for our justification.

Is. 53:5, 6. Chap. 3:25; 5:6; 8:32. 2 Cor. 5:21. 1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18.

†1 Cor. 15:17. 1 Pet. 1:21.

CHAPTER 5.

*Being therefore justified by faith, we have †peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ;

Is. 32:17. John 16:33. Chap. 3:28, 30. †Eph. 2:14. Col. 1:20.

2 *Through whom also we have had our access by faith into this grace †wherein we stand, let us †rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

John 10:9; 14:6. Eph. 2:18; 3:12.

†1 Cor. 15:1. ††Heb. 3:6.

3 And not only so, but *let us also glory in our tribulations, †knowing that tribulation worketh patience.

Matt. 5:11, 12. Acts 5:41.

James 1:2, 12. 1 Pet. 3:14.

4 *And patience, experience; and experience, hope;

James 1:12.

5 *And hope maketh not ashamed; †because the love of God has been shed abroad in our hearts through the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

Phil. 1:20.

†2 Cor. 1:22. Gal. 4:6.

6 For while we were yet without strength, in due time *Christ died for the ungodly.

Verse 8. Chap. 4:25.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die, yet peradventure for the good man some would even dare to die.

8 But *God commendeth his own love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

1 Pet. 3:18. 1 John 3:16.

9 Much more then, being now justified *by his blood, shall we be saved †from wrath through him.

Chap. 3:25. Eph. 2:13. Heb. 9:14.

1 John 1:7. †1 Thess. 1:10.

10 For *if while we were enemies, †we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more being reconciled, shall we be saved †by his life.

Chap. 8:32.

†2 Cor. 5:18, 19. Eph. 2:16.

††John 5:26; 14:19.

11 And not only so, but we also *joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.

Chap. 2:17; 3:29, 30. Gal. 4:9.

¶II

12 Wherefore, as *through one man sin entered into the world, and †death through sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

Gen. 3:6. 1 Cor. 15:21.

†Gen. 2:17. Chap. 6:23.

13 For until the law sin was in the world: but *sin is not imputed when there is no law.

Chap. 4:15. 1 John 2:4.

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the likeness of Adam's transgression, *who is the figure of him that was to come.

1 Cor. 15:21, 22, 45.

III

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one the many died, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded *unto the many.

Is. 53:11. Matt. 20:28; 26:28.

16 And not as through one that sinned, is the gift; for the judgment was through one unto condemnation, but the free gift is from many offences unto justification.

17 For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they that receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life through the one, Jesus Christ.

IV

18 Therefore as by the offence of one the judgment came unto all men unto condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came *unto all men unto justification of life.

John 12:32. Heb. 2:9.

19 For as through one man's disobedience many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of one shall the many be made righteous.

20 Moreover *the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much *more abound:

John 15:22. Gal. 3:19, 23.
†1 Tim. 1:14.

21 That as sin hath reigned in death, even so might grace reign through right-

eousness unto eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAPTER 6.

What shall we say then? *Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

Verse 15. Chap. 3:8.

2 God forbid. How shall we *who died to sin, live any longer therein?

Verse 11. Chap. 7:4.

Gal. 2:19; 6:14.

(Epistle 6th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 3-11.)

3 Know ye not, that *all who were baptized into Jesus Christ †were baptized into his death?

Gal. 3:27. †1 Cor. 15:29.

4 Therefore we are *buried with him through baptism into death: that †like as Christ was raised from the dead by ††the glory of the Father, ††even so we also should walk in newness of life.

Col. 2:12.

†Chap. 8:11. 1 Cor. 6:14.

††John 2:11; 11:40.

†††Gal. 6:15. Eph. 4:22, 23, 24.

5 *For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

Phil. 3:10, 11.

6 Knowing this, that *our old man was crucified with him, that †the body of sin might be done away that henceforth we should no longer be enslaved to sin.

Gal. 2:20; 5:24; 6:14. Eph. 4:22.
†Col. 2:11.

7 For *he that is dead is acquitted from sin.

1 Pet. 4:1.

8 Now *if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

2 Tim. 2:11.

9 Knowing that *Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death no more hath dominion over him.

Rev. 1:18.

10 For the death that he died, *he died unto sin once for all; but the life that he liveth, †he liveth unto God.

Heb. 9:27, 28. †Luke 20:38

11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be *dead unto sin, but †to be living unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Verse 2. †Gal. 2:19

¶II

12 *Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey the lusts thereof.

Ps. 19:13; 119:133

13 Neither yield ye your *members up as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin; but †yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

Chap. 7:5. Col. 3:5. James 4:1.

†Chap. 12:1. 1 Pet. 2:24; 4:2.

14 For *sin shall not have dominion over you; for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

Chap. 7:4, 6; 8:2. Gal. 5:18.

¶III

15 What then? shall we sin *because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

1 Cor. 9:21.

16 Know ye not, that *to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? Matt. 6:24. 2 Pet. 2:19.

17 But thanks be to God that though ye were servants

of sin, ye have obeyed from the heart *that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

2 Tim. 1:13.

18 And being *made free from sin, ye became servants of righteousness.

John 8:32. Gal. 5:1.

(Epistle 7th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 19-23.)

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now present your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

20 For when ye were *servants of sin, ye were free in regard of righteousness.

John 8:34.

21 *What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for †the end of those things is death.

Chap. 7:5. †Chap. 1:32.

22 But now *being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

John 8:32.

23 For *the wages of sin is death; but †the free gift of God is eternal life in Jesus Christ our Lord.

Gen. 2:17. Chap. 5:12. James 1:15.

†Chap. 2:7; 5:17, 21.

CHAPTER 7.

Know ye not, brethren, for I speak to men that know the law, how that the law hath dominion over a man so long time as he liveth?

2 For *the woman that hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so

long as he liveth; but if the husband is dead, she is free from the law of her husband.

1 Cor. 7:39.

3 So then *if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband dieth, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

Matt. 5:32.

4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become *dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who was raised from the dead, that we should †bring forth fruit unto God.

Chap. 8:2. Gal. 2:19; 5:18.

‡ Eph. 2:15. †Gal. 5:22.

III

5 For when we were in the flesh the sinful passions which were through the law, *did work in our members †to bring forth fruit unto death.

Chap. 6:13.

†Chap. 8:21. Gal. 5:19.

6 But now we have been set free from the law, having died, to that wherein we were held; that we should serve *in newness of the spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

Verse 4. Chap. 6:2.

Chap. 2:29. 2 Cor. 3:6.

7 What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, *I had not known sin, but through the law: for I had not known covetness, except the law had said, †Thou shalt not covet.

Chap. 3:20.

†Ex. 20:17. Deut. 5:21.

8 But *sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of

evil desire. For †without the law sin was dead.

Chap. 4:15; 5:20. †1 Cor. 15:58.

9 For I was alive apart from the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment, *which was thought to be unto life, I found to be unto death.

Lev. 18:5. Ezek. 20:11, 13, 21.

11 For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore *the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

Ps. 19:8; 119:38, 137. 1 Tim. 1:8.

13 Did then that which is good become death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might be shown to be sin, working death in me through that which is good; that sin through the commandment might become exceeding sinful.

14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am as fleshly *sold under sin.

1 Kings 21:20, 25. 2 Kings 17:17.

15 For that which I do, I do not approve; for *what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

Ps. 1:6. Gal. 5:17.

16 But if I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin which dwelleth in me.

18 For I know that *in me that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. Gen. 6:5; 8:21.

19 For the good that I would I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do what I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin which dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I *delight in the law of God after †the inward man: Ps. 1:2. †2 Cor. 4:16.

23 But *I see a different law in †my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity under the law of sin which is in my members. Gal. 5:17. †Chap. 6:13, 19.

24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me out of the body of this death?

25 *I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then I myself with the mind serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin. 1 Cor. 15:57.

CHAPTER 8.

There is therefore now no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus, who *walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Verse 4. Gal. 5:16, 25.

2 For *the law of †the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus made me free from ††the law of sin of death.

Chap. 6:18, 22. Gal. 2:19.

†1 Cor. 15:45. ††Chap. 7:24, 25.

3 For *what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, †God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and as

an offering for sin, condemned sin the flesh.

Acts 13:39. Chap. 3:20.

Heb. 7:18, 19. †2 Cor. 5:21.

4 That the righteousness required of the law might be fulfilled in us, *who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. Verse 1.

5 For *they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit †the things of the Spirit. John 3:8. 1 Cor. 2:11. †Gal. 5:22, 25.

6 For *to be minded of the flesh is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

Verse 13. Chap. 6:21. Gal. 6:8.

7 Because *the fleshly mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, †neither indeed can it be. James 4:4. †1 Cor. 2:14.

8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that *the Spirit of God dwelleth in you. But if any man have not †the Spirit of Christ, he is not his.

1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19. †John 3:34.

Gal. 4:6. Phil. 1:19. 1 Pet. 1:11.

¶II

10 But if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

11 But if the Spirit of *him that raised Jesus from the dead dwell in you, †he that raised Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies through his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

Acts 2:24. †Chap. 6:4, 5.

1 Cor. 6:14. 2 Cor. 4:14. Eph. 2:5.

(Epistle 8th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 12-17.)

12 *Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh.

Chap. 6:7, 14.

13 For *if ye live in the flesh ye must die; but if ye through the Spirit do †mortalify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Verse 6. Gal. 6:8.
†Eph. 4:22. Col. 3:5.

14 For *as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are the sons of God.

John 16:13. Gal. 5:18.

¶III

15 For *ye have not received the spirit of bondage again **to fear; but ye received the †Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry ††Abba, Father.

1 Cor. 2:12.
**2 Tim. 1:7. 1 John 4:18.
†Is. 56:5. Gal. 4:5, 6. ††Mark 14:36.

16 *The Spirit himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are children of God.

2 Cor. 1:22; 5:5. Eph. 1:13; 4:30.

17 And if children, then heirs; *heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; †if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together with him.

Acts 26:18. Gal. 4:7. †Acts 14:22.
Phil. 1:29. 2 Tim. 2:11, 12.

(Epistle 4th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 18-23.)

18 For I reckon that *the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

2 Cor. 4:17. 1 Pet. 1:6, 7; 4:13.

¶IV

19 For *the earnest expectation of the creation wait-

eth for the †manifestation of the sons of God.

2 Pet. 3:13. †1 John 3:2.

20 For *the creation itself was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath made it subject in hope.

Verse 22. Gen. 3:19.

21 For the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For we know that the whole creation *groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

Mark 16:15. Col. 1:23. Jer. 12:11.

23 And not only they, but we ourselves also, who have *the firstfruits of the Spirit, **even we ourselves groan within ourselves, †waiting for our adoption, to wit, the ††redemption of our body.

2 Cor. 5:5. **2 Cor. 5:2, 4.
†Luke 20:36. ††Luke 21:28.

24 For we are saved by hope, but *hope that is seen is not hope; for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

2 Cor. 5:7. Heb. 11:1.

25 But if we hope for that which we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

¶V

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities; for *we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but †the Spirit himself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. Matt. 20:22. James 4:3.

†Zech. 12:10. Eph. 6:18.

27 And *he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession

for the saints †according to the will of God.

1 Chr. 28:9. Ps. 7:9. Acts 1:24.
Rev. 2:23. †1 John 5:14.

(Epistle on the day of St. James.
Verses 28-30.)

28 And we know that all things work together for good to those that love God, even to those *that are the called according to his purpose.

Chap. 9:11, 23, 24. 2 Tim. 1:9.

29 For whom *he did foreknew **he also foreordained †to be conformed to the image of his son, ††that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

Ex. 33:12, 17. Ps. 1:6. Jer. 1:5.
**Eph. 1:5, 11.

†John 17:22. 2 Cor. 3:18.
††Col. 1:15, 18. Heb. 1:6. Rev. 1:5.

30 Moreover whom he foreordained, them he also *call; and whom he called, them he also †justified; and whom he justified, them he also ††glorified.

Chap. 1:6; 9:24. Eph. 4:4.
†1 Cor. 6:11. ††John 17:22. Eph. 2:6.

¶VI

31 What shall we then say to these things? *If God is for us, who can be against us?

Num. 14:9. Ps. 118:6.

32 *He that spared not his own Son, but †delivered him up for us all, how shall he not also with him freely give us all things?

Chap. 5:6, 10. †Chap. 4:25.

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? *It is God that justifieth.

Is. 50:8, 9. Rev. 12:10, 11.

34 *Who is he that shall condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is

risen again, †who is even at the right hand of God, ††who also maketh intercession for us.

Job 34:29.

†Mark 16:19. Col. 3:1.

††Heb. 7:25; 9:24. 1 John 2:1.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

36 Even as it is written, *For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.

Ps. 44:22. 1 Cor. 15:30, 31.

37 *Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.

1 Cor. 15:57.

2 Cor. 2:14. Rev. 12:11.

38 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor *principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

Eph. 1:21; 6:12. Col. 1:16; 2:15.

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

CHAPTER 9.

I *say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing witness with me in the Holy Ghost,

Chap. 1:9. 2 Cor. 1:23; 11:31; 12:19.
Gal. 1:20. Phil. 1:8. 1 Tim. 2:7.

2 *That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. Chap. 10:1.

3 For *I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:

Ex. 32:32.

4 *Who are Israelites; *whose is the adoption, and ***the glory, and †the covenants, and ††the giving of the law, and †††the service of God, and the promises;

Deut. 7:6. **Ex. 4:22. Deut. 14:1. ***1 Sam. 4:21. †Acts 3:25. Heb. 8:8, 9, 10. ††Ps. 147:10. †††Heb. 9:1.

5 *Whose are the fathers, and †of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, ††who is over all, God, blessed for ever. Amen.

Deut. 10:15. Chap. 11:28. †Luke 3:23. Chap. 1:3. ††Jer. 23:6. John 1:1. Acts 20:28. Heb. 1:8. 1 John 5:20.

¶II

6 *Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For †they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

Num. 23:19. Chap. 3:3. †John 8:39. Chap. 2:28, 29.

7 *Neither, because they are of the seed of Abraham, are they all children; but, in †Isaac shall thy seed be called.

Gal. 4:23. †Gen. 21:12. Heb. 11:18.

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God; but *the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

Gal. 4:28.

9 For this is the word of promise, *At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son.

Gen. 18:10, 14.

10 And not only this; but when *Rebecca also having conceived by one, even by our father Isaac; Gen. 25:21.

11 For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of *him that calleth; Chap. 4:17; 8:28.

12 It was said unto her, *the elder shall serve the younger.

Gen. 25:23.

13 Even as it is written, *Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.

Deut. 21:15. Prov. 13:24.

Mal. 1:2, 3. Matt. 10:37.

14 What shall we say then? *Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.

Deut. 32:4. 2 Chr. 19:7.

Job 8:3; 34:10.

15 For he saith to Moses, *I have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

Ex. 33:19.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

17 For *the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, †Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

Gal. 3:8, 22. †Ex. 9:16.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will, and whom he will he hardeneth.

¶III

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For *who hath resisted his will?

2 Chr. 20:6.

Job 9:12; 23:13. Dan. 4:35.

20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? *Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

Job 33:13. Is. 29:16; 45:9; 64:8.

21 Or hath not the *potter a right over the clay, of the same lump to make ~~tone~~ ves-

sel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

Prov. 16:4. Jer. 18:6.
†2 Tim. 2:20.

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering *the vessels of wrath †fitted to destruction: 1 Thess. 5:9.

†1 Pet. 2:8. Jude 4.

23 And that he might make known *the riches of his glory upon the vessels of mercy, which he had †afore prepared unto glory,

Chap. 2:4. Eph. 1:7. Col. 1:27.
†Chap. 8:28, 29, 30.

24 Even us, whom he hath called, *not from the Jews only, but also from the Gentiles?

Chap. 3:29.

25 As he saith also in Hosea, *I will call them my people, which was not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved.

Hos. 2:23. 1 Pet. 2:10.

26 *And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God.

Hos. 1:10.

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel: *If the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, †a remnant shall be saved:

Is. 10:22, 23. †Chap. 11:5.

28 For the Lord will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: *because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

Is. 28:22.

29 And as Esaias said before, *Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, †we had been as Sodoma, and

been made like unto Gomor-rha.

Is. 1:9. Lam. 3:22.
†Is. 18:19. Jer. 50:40.

¶IV

30 What shall we say then? *That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have obtained righteousness, †even the righteousness which is of faith.

Chap. 4:11; 10:20. †Chap. 1:17.

31 But Israel, *which followed after the law of righteousness, †hath not attained to the law.

Chap. 10:2; 11:7. †Gal. 5:4.

32 Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works. For *they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

Luke 2:34. 1 Cor. 1:23.

33 As it is written, *Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and a rock of offence: and †whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

Ps. 118:22. Is. 8:14; 28:16.

1 Pet. 2:6, 7, 8. †Chap. 10:11.

CHAPTER 10.

Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they may be saved.

2 For I bear them witness *that they have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge.

Acts 21:20; 22:3. Gal. 1:14; 4:17.

3 For they being ignorant of *God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own †righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

Chap. 1:17; 9:30. †Phil. 3:9.

4 For *Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

Matt. 5:17. Gal. 3:24.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, *That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.

Lev. 18:5. Chap. 9:29.
Ezek. 20:11, 13, 21. Gal. 3:12.

6 But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, *Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? that is, to bring Christ down. Deut. 30:12, 13.

7 Or, Who shall descend into the deep? that is, to bring Christ up from the dead.

(Epistle on the day of St. Andrew.
Verses 8-18.)

8 But what saith it? *The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; Deut. 30:14.

9 That *if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

Matt. 10:32. Luke 12:8. Acts 8:27.

10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11 For the scripture saith, *Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

Is. 28:16; 49:23. Jer. 17:7.
Chap. 9:33.

12 For *there is no distinction between Jew and Greek: for †the same Lord

over all ††is rich unto all that call upon him.

Acts 15:9. Chap. 3:22. Gal. 3:28.
†Acts 10:36. Chap. 3:29. 1 Tim. 2:5.
††Eph. 1:7; 2:4, 7.

13 *For whosoever shall call †upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

Joel 2:32. Acts 2:21. †Acts 9:14.

¶¶

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear *without a preacher?

Titus 1:3.

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? Even as it is written: *How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

Is. 52:7. Nah. 1:15.

16 But *they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, †Lord, who hath believed our report?

Chap. 3:3. Heb. 4:2.
†Is. 53:1. John 12:38.

17 So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, *their sound went into all the earth, †and their words unto the ends of the world.

Ps. 19:4. Matt. 24:14; 28:19.
Mark 16:15. †1 Kings 18:10.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know. First Moses saith, *I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a †foolish nation I will anger you.

Deut. 32:21. Chap. 11:11.
†Titus 3:3.

20 But Isaiah is very bold, and saith, *I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me. Is. 65:1. Chap. 9:30.

21 But to Israel he saith, *All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people. Is. 65:2.

CHAPTER 11.

I say then, *Hath God cast off his people? God forbid. For †I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

1 Sam. 12:22. Jer. 31:37. †2 Cor. 11:22. Phil. 3:5.

2 God hath not cast off his people which *he foreknew. Know ye not what the scripture saith of Eliah? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying:

Chap. 8:29.

3 *Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and have digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. 1 Kings 19:10, 14.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? *I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to Baal. 1 Kings 19:18.

5 *Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. Chap. 9:27.

6 And *if by grace, it is no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, is it no more grace; otherwise work is no more work.

Chap. 4:4, 5. Gal. 5:4. Deut. 9:4, 5.

III

7 What then? *Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election obtained it, and the rest were blinded.

Chap. 9:31; 10:3. 2 Cor. 3:14.

8 According as it is written, *God hath given them the spirit of slumber, †eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear unto this day. Is. 29:10. †Deut. 29:4. Is. 6:9. Jer. 5:21.

9 And David saith: *Let their table be made a snare, and a trip, and a stumbling-block, and a recompence unto them. Ps. 69:22.

10 *Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see and bow thou down their back alway. Ps. 69:23.

11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather *by their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy. Acts 13:46; 18:6; 22:18, 21.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness?

13 For I speak to you that are Gentiles, inasmuch as *I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine ministry.

Acts 9:15; 13:2; 22:21. Chap. 15:16. Gal. 1:16; 2:7, 8, 9. Eph. 3:8.

14 If by any means I may provoke to jealousy them that are my flesh, and *may save some of them.

1 Cor. 7:16; 9:22.

1 Tim. 4:16. James 5:20.

15 For if the casting away

of them is the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?

16 For if *the firstfruit is holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root is holy, so are the branches.

Lev. 23:10. Num. 15:18, 19, 20, 21.

17 And if *some of the branches were broken off, †and thou, being a wild olive tree, was grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree;

Jer. 11:16.

†Acts 2:39. Eph. 2:12, 13.

18 *Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou hearest not the root, but the root thee.

1 Cor. 10:12.

19 Thou wilt say then The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well; because by their unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by thy faith, *Be not highminded, but †fear:

Chap. 12:16.

†Prov. 28:14. Is. 66:2. Phil. 2:12.

21 For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

§III

22 Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, *if thou abide in his goodness: otherwise †thou also shalt be cut off.

1 Cor. 15:2. Heb. 3:6, 14.

†John 15:2.

23 And they also, *if they abide not in unbelief, shall

be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again.

2 Cor. 3:16.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, who be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?

§IV

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye be *wise in your own conceits; that †blindness in part hath happened to Israel, ††until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

Chap. 12:16. †Verse 7. 2 Cor. 3:14.

††Luke 21:24. Rev. 7:9.

26 And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, *There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

Is. 59:20. Ps. 14:7.

27 *For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

Is. 27:9. Jer. 31:31, etc.

Heb. 8:8; 10:16.

28 As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes; but as touching the election, they are *beloved for the fathers' sakes.

Deut. 7:8; 9:5; 10:15.

29 For the gifts and the calling of God are *without repentance.

Num. 23:19.

§VI

30 For as ye *in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief;

Eph. 2:2. Col. 3:7.

31 Even so have these also now not believed, that through the mercy shown to you, they also may obtain mercy.

32 For *God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all. Chap. 3:9. Gal. 3:22.

(Epistle on Trinity Sunday. Verses 33-36.)

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! *how unsearchable are his judgments, and *his ways past finding out! Ps. 36:6.

†Job 11:7. Ps. 92:5.

34 *For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or †who hath been his counselor?

Job 15:8. Is. 40:13. Jer. 23:18.

1 Cor. 2:16. †Job 36:22.

35 Or *who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

Job. 35:7; 41:11.

36 For *of him, and through him, and unto him, are all things; †to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

1 Cor. 8:6. Col. 1:16.

†Gal. 1:5. 1 Tim. 1:17. 2 Tim. 4:18.

CHAPTER 12.

I *beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, **that ye †present your bodies ††a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2 Cor. 10:1. **1 Pet. 2:5. †Ps. 50:13, 14. Chap. 6:13, 16, 19.

2 And *be not conformed according to this world: but †be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may ††prove what is the

good and acceptable, and perfect will of God.

1 Pet. 1:14. 1 John 2:15.

†Eph. 1:18; 4:23. Col. 1:21, 22; 3:10. ††Eph. 5:10, 17.

3 For I say, *through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, †not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt ††to every man the measure of faith.

Chap. 1:5; 15:15. 1 Cor. 3:10;

†Prov. 25:27. Eccl. 7:16. Chap. 11:20. ††1 Cor. 12:7, 11.

4 For *as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

1 Cor. 12:12. Eph. 4:16.

5 So* we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

1 Cor. 10:17; 12:20, 27.

(Epistle 2d Sunday after Epiphany. Verses 6-16.)

6 *Having then gifts differing †according to the grace that is given to us whether ††prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of our faith;

1 Cor. 12:4. 1 Pet. 4:10, 11.

†Verse 3.

††Acts 11:27. 1 Cor. 12:10, 28; 13:2

7 Or ministry, let us give ourselves to our ministry, or *he that teacheth to his teaching; Acts 13:1. Gal. 6:6.

Eph. 4:11. 1 Tim. 5:17.

8 Or *he that exhorteth, to his exhortation: **he that giveth, let him do it with liberality; †he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, ††with cheerfulness.

Acts 15:32. **Matt. 6:1, 2, 3. †Acts 20:28. Heb. 13:7, 24. 1 Pet. 5:2.

††2 Cor. 9:7.

III

9 *Let love be without hypocrisy. †Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. 1 Tim. 1:5. 1 Pet. 1:22. †Ps. 34:14; 36:4; 97:10.

10 *Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; †in honour preferring one another.

Heb. 13:1. 1 Pet. 1:22; 2:17; 3:8. 2 Pet. 1:7. †Phil. 2:3.

11 Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;

12 *Rejoicing in hope; †patient in tribulation; †persevering in prayer;

Luke 10:20. Chap. 5:2; 15:13. †Luke 21:19. 1 Tim. 8:11. Heb. 10:36; 12:1. ††Luke 18:1. Acts 2:42.

13 *Distributing to the necessity of the saints; †given to hospitality.

1 Cor. 16:1. 2 Cor. 9:1, 12. Heb. 6:10; 13:16. 1 John 3:17. †1 Tim. 3:2. Titus 1:8. Heb. 13:2.

14 *Bless them that persecute you: bless, and curse not.

Matt. 5:44. Luke 6:28; 23:34. Acts 7:60. 1 Cor. 4:12. 1 Pet. 2:23; 3:9.

15 *Rejoice with them that rejoice, weep with them that weep. 1 Cor. 12:26.

16 *Be of the same mind one toward another. †Set not your mind on high things, but condescend to men of low estate.

(Epistle 3d Sunday after Epiphany. Verses 17-21.)

††Be not wise in your own conceits.

Chap. 15:5. 1 Cor. 1:10. 1 Pet. 3:8. †Ps. 131:1, 2. Jer. 45:5.

††Prov. 3:7; 26:12. Isa. 5:21.

17 *Render to no man evil for evil. †Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

Prov. 20:22. Matt. 5:39. 1 Thess. 5:15. 1 Pet. 3:9. †Matt. 5:16.

Chap. 14:16.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, *live peaceably with all men.

Mark 9:50. Chap. 14:19. Heb. 12:14.

19 Dearly beloved *avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath; for it is written: †Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

Verse 17. Lev. 19:18. †Deut. 32:35. Heb. 10:30.

20 *Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him to drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire upon his head.

Ex. 23:4, 5. Prov. 25:21. Matt. 5:44.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

CHAPTER 13.

Let every soul *be subject unto the higher powers. For †there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

Titus 3:1. 1 Pet. 2:13. †Prov. 8:15. Dan. 2:21.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth *the power, resisteth the ordinance of God; and they that resist shall receive to themselves even condemnation.

Titus 3:1. 3 For rulers are not a terror to the good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? *do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise from the same: 1 Pet. 2:14.

4 For he is a minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is a minister of God, an avenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

5 Wherefore *ye must needs be subject, not only on account of wrath, †but also for conscience sake.

EccI. 8:2. †1 Pet. 2:19.

6 For for this cause pay ye tribute also; for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7 *Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour. Matt. 22:21. Mark 12:17. Luke 20:25

¶II

(Epistle 4th Sunday after Epiphany. Verses 8-10.)

8 Owe no man any thing, save to love one another: for *he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

Verse 10. Gal. 5:14.

Col. 3:14. 1 Tim. 1:5. James 2:8.

9 For this, *Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, †Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. Ex. 20:13. Deut. 5:17. Matt. 19:18. †Lev. 19:18. Matt. 22:39.

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: *love therefore is the fulfilling of the law. Verse 8. Matt. 22:40.

¶III

(Epistle 1st Sunday in Advent. Verses 11-14.)

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time for you *to awake out of sleep; for now is our sal-

vation nearer than when we first believed.

1 Cor. 15:34. Eph. 5:14.

1 Thess. 5:5, 6.

12 The night is far spent, and the day is at hand: *let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and †let us put on the armour of light.

Eph. 5:11. Col. 3:8.

†Eph. 6:13. 1 Thess. 5:8.

13 *Let us walk honestly, as in the day; **not in rioting and drunkenness, †not in chambering and wantonness, ††not in strife and envying.

Phil 4:8. 1 Thess. 4:12. **Luke

21:34. 1 Pet. 4:8. †1 Cor. 6:9.

††James 3:14.

14 But *put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and †make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

Gal. 3:27. Eph. 4:24. Col. 3:10.

†Gal. 5:16. 1 Pet. 2:11.

CHAPTER 14.

But him that *is weak in the faith receive ye, yet not to doubtful disputations.

Chap. 15:1, 7. 1 Cor. 8:9, 11.

2 For one man believeth that he *may eat all things: he that is weak eateth herbs.

Verse 14. 1 Cor. 10:25.

3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and *let not him that eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

Col. 2:16.

4 *Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? to his own Lord he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.

James 4:12.

5 *One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day

alike. Let every man be fully assured in his own mind. Gal. 4:10. Col. 2:16.

6 He that *regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord: and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth unto the Lord, for †he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, unto the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks. Gal. 4:10.

†1 Cor. 10:31. 1 Tim. 4:3.

7 For *none of us liveth to himself, and none dieth to himself. 1 Cor. 6:19. Gal. 2:20.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or whether die, we are the Lord's.

9 For *to this end Christ died, and rose again that he might be †Lord of both the dead and living.

2 Cor. 5:15. †Acts 10:36.

10 But thou, why dost judge thy brother? or why dost thou despise thy brother? for *we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

Matt. 25:31. Acts 10:42.

11 For it is written, *As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. Is. 45:23. Phil. 2:10.

12 So then *every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

Matt. 12:36. Gal. 6:5. 1 Pet. 4:5.

¶II

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that *no man put a stumbling-

block or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

1 Cor. 8:9, 13; 10:32.

14 I know, and am persuaded in the Lord Jesus, *that nothing is unclean of itself: save that †to him who esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

Verses 2, 20. Acts 10:15.

1 Cor. 10:25. †1 Cor. 8:7.

15 But if thy brother be grieved because of thy food, now walkest thou not charitably. *Destroy not him with thy meat, him for whom Christ did die. 1 Cor. 8:11.

16 *Let not then your good be evil spoken of; Chap. 12:17.

17 *For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit.

1 Cor. 8:8.

18 For he that in these things serveth Christ *is acceptable to God, and approved of men. 2 Cor. 8:21.

19 *Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith †one may edify another.

Ps. 34:14. Chap. 12:18.

†Chap. 15:2. 1 Cor. 14:12.

20 *For meat destroy not the work of God. †All things indeed are pure; ††but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. Verse 15.

†Verse 14. Matt. 15:11.

††1 Cor. 8:9, 10, 11, 12.

21 It is good neither to eat *flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

1 Cor. 8:13.

22 Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. *Happy is he that condemn-

eth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

1 John 3:21.

23 And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for *whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

Titus 1:16.

CHAPTER 15.

Now *we that are strong ought to bear the †infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.

Gal. 6:1. †Chap. 14:1.

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for good †to his edification.

1 Cor. 9:19, 22; 10:24, 33. Phil.

2:4, 5. †Chap. 14:19.

3 *For even Christ pleased not himself: but, as it is written: †The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell upon me.

Matt. 26:39.

John 5:30. †Ps. 69:9.

(Epistle 2d Sunday in Advent. Verses 4-13.)

4 For *whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that through patience and through comfort of the scriptures we might have hope.

Chap. 4:23, 24. 1 Cor. 9:9, 10.

5 *Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be of the same mind one toward another according to Christ Jesus;

Chap. 12:16. 1 Cor. 1:10. Phil. 3:16.

6 That ye may *with one accord and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Acts 4:24, 32.

7 Wherefore *receive ye one another, †as Christ also received you to the glory of God. Chap. 14:1, 3. †Chap. 5:2.

¶II

8 Now I say that *Jesus Christ was made a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, †to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

Matt. 15:24. John 1:11. Acts 3:25, 26. †Chap. 3:3.

9 And *that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy; as it is written: †For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name.

John 10:16. Chap. 9:23.

†Ps. 18:49.

10 And again he saith, *Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people.

Deut. 32:43.

11 And again, *Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles; and laud him, all ye people.

Ps. 117:1.

12 And again, Isaiah saith, *There shall be the root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust.

Is. 11:1, 10. Rev. 5:5.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all *joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, in the power of the Holy Ghost.

Chap. 12:12.

¶III

14 And *I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, †filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

2 Pet. 1:12. 1 John 2:21.

†1 Cor. 8:1, 7, 10.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in mind, *be-

cause of the grace that is given to me of God,
Chap. 1:5. Gal. 1:15. Eph. 3:7. 8.

16 That *I should be a minister of Christ Jesus unto the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the ~~to~~ffering up of the Gentiles may be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Spirit.

Chap. 11:13. Gal. 2:7, 8, 9.
 2 Tim. 1:11. †Is. 66:20.

17 I have therefore wher- of I may glory through Jesus Christ *in those things which pertain to God.

Heb. 5:1.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things *which Christ hath not wrought through me, †to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

Acts 21:19. Gal. 2:8.
 †Chap. 1:5; 16:26.

19 *Through mighty signs and wonders, in the power of the pirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

Acts 19:11. 2 Cor. 12:12.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, *lest I should build upon another man's foundation:

2 Cor. 10:13, 15, 16.

21 But as it is written: *To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard shall understand.

Is. 52:15.

22 For which cause also *I have been much hindered from coming to you.

Chap. 1:13. 1 Thess. 2:17, 18.

23 But now having no more place in these regions,

and *having a great desire these many years to come unto you; Verse 32. Acts 19:21.

24 Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, *and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your company.

Acts 15:3.

25 But now *I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints. Acts 19:21; 20:22; 24:17.

26 For *it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem. 1 Cor. 16:1, 2. 2 Cor. 8:1.

27 It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For *if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, †their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things.

Chap. 11:17. †1 Cor. 9:11.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have scaled to them *this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

Phil. 4:17.

29 *And I am sure that, when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

Chap. 1:11.

¶IV

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and *by the love of the Spirit, †that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me;

Phil. 2:1.

†2 Cor. 1:11. Col. 4:12.

31 *That I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judaea; and that my service which I have for Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints;

2 Thess. 3:2. †2 Cor. 8:4.

32 *That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

Chap. 1:10.
†Acts 18:21. 1 Cor. 4:19. James 4:15. ††1 Cor. 16:18. 2 Cor. 7:13.

33 Now *the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

Chap. 16:20. 1 Cor. 14:33. 2 Cor. 13:11. Phil. 4:9. 1 Thess. 5:23.

CHAPTER 16.

I commend unto you Phebe our sister, who is a servant of the church that is at *Cenchrea:

Acts 18:18.

2 *That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a helper of many, and of myself also.

Phil. 2:29. 3 John 5:6.

3 Salute *Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

Acts 18:2, 18, 26. 2 Tim. 4:19.

4 Who for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.

5 Likewise salute *the church that is in their house. Salute my wellbeloved Epaenetus, who is †the firstfruits of Achaia unto Christ.

1 Cor. 16:19.
†1 Cor. 16:15.

6 Salute Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellow prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also *were in Christ before me.

Gal. 1:22.

8 Salute Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus' household.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Salute them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus the *chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. 2 John 1.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 *Salute one another with a holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you. 1 Cor. 16:20. 2 Cor. 13:12.

III

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them *which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Acts 15:1. 1 Tim. 6:3.
†1 Cor. 5:9, 11. 2 Thess. 3:6.

18 For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but *their own belly; and †by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

Phil. 3:19. 1 Tim. 6:5.
†Col. 2:4. 2 Tim. 3:6. Titus 1:10.

19 For *your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but I would have you †wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

Chap. 1:8.
†Matt. 10:16. 1 Cor. 14:20.

20 And *the God of peace †shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. ††The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

Chap. 15:33.
†Gen. 3:15. ††Verse 24. 1 Cor. 16:23. 2 Thess. 3:18. Rev. 22:21.

¶III

21 *Timotheus my work-fellow, and **Lucius, and †Jason, and ††Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you.

Acts 16:1. Phil. 2:19. Col. 1:1.
**Acts 13:1. †Acts 17:5.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 *Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. †Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

1 Cor. 1:14. †Acts 19:22.

¶IV

24 *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen. Verse 20. 1 Thess. 5:28.

25 Now *to him that is of power to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, †according to the revelation of the mystery, ††which was kept secret since the world began,

Eph. 3:20. 1 Thess. 3:13. †Eph. 1:9; 3:3. 4. 5. ††1 Cor. 2:7. Eph. 3:5, 9.

26 But *now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the comandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: Eph. 1:9. 2 Tim. 1:10.

Titus 1:2. 3. 1 Pet. 1:20.

27 To the only wise *God be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

1 Tim. 1:17; 6:16. Jude 25.

MAN'S QUESTIONS ANSWERED FROM GOD'S WORD.

Am I accountable to God?

"EVERY ONE of us shall give account of himself to God." Rom. 14:12.

Has God seen all my ways?

"All things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with whom we have to do." Heb. 4:13.

Does God charge me with sin?

"The Scripture hath concluded all under sin." Gal. 3:22. "All have sinned." Rom. 3:23.

Will God punish me on account of my sin?

"The soul that sinneth, it shall die." Ezek. 18:4. "For the wages of sin is death." Rom. 6:23.

Must I now perish?

"God is not willing that any perish, but that all should come to repentance." 2 Pet. 3:9.

How can I escape?

"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved." Acts 16:31.

Must I repent?

Yes. "Repent ye therefore, and turn again, that your sins may be blotted out." Acts 3:19.

Have I to confess and to forsake my sins?

Yes, indeed: "He that covereth his sins shall not prosper; but whose confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy." Prov. 28:13.

Is God able to save me?

"He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him" (Christ). Heb. 7:25.

Is He willing to save me?

"Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners." 1 Tim. 1:15.

Am I saved on believing?

"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life." John 3:36.

Should I be baptized?

"Repent, and be baptized every one of you." Acts 2:38.

Can I be saved now?

"Now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation." 2 Cor. 6:2.

May I be accepted?

"Him that cometh to Me I will in no wise cast out." John 6:37.

Must I also be a partaker in the Lord's Supper?

"Let a man examine himself and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that cup." 1 Cor. 11:28.

Shall I not fall away?

"Him that is able to keep you from falling." Jude 24.

Being saved, how should I live?

"They which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them." 2 Cor. 5:15.

What about death, and eternity?

"I go to prepare a place for you; that where I am, there ye may be also." John 14:2, 3.

YOU MAY HAVE THESE QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS PRINTED SEPARATELY. 15 COPIES FOR 10 CENTS.—J. R. L.

THE
FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE
TO THE
CORINTHIANS

CHAPTER 1.

Paul, *called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ †through the will of God, and ††Sosthenes our brother,

Rom. 1:1. †2 Cor. 1:1.
††Col. 1:1. Acts 18:17.

2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, even them that *are sanctified in Christ Jesus, **called to be saints, with all that in every place ***call upon the name of †our Lord, ††Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours.

John 17:19. Acts 15:9. **Rom. 1:7. ***Acts 9:14, 21; 22:16.
†Chap. 8:6. ††Rom. 3:22.

3 *Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom. 1:7. Eph. 1:2.

¶II

(Epistle 18th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 4-9.)

4 *I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God given you in Jesus Christ.

Rom. 1:8.

5 That in every thing ye were enriched in him *in all utterance, and knowledge.

Chap. 12:8. 2 Cor. 8:7.

6 Even as *the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you:

Chap. 2:1. 2 Tim. 1:8. Rev. 1:2.

7 So that ye come behind

in no gift; *waiting for the revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ: Phil. 3:20. Titus 2:13.

8 *Who shall also confirm you unto the end, †that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Thess. 3:13.
†Col. 1:22. 1 Thess. 5:23.

9 *God is faithful, through whom ye were called into †the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

Is. 49:7. Chap. 10:13. 2 Thess. 3:3.
†John 15:4.

¶III

10 Now I beseech you, brethren, through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, *that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfected together in the same mind and in the same judgment.

Rom. 12:16; 15:5. 2 Cor. 13:11.

11 For it hath been declared unto me concerning you, my brethren, by them which are of the household of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say: *that each one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of †Apollus; and I of ††Cephas; and I of Christ.

Chap. 3:4.
†Acts 18:24; 19:1. ††John 1:42.

13 *Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized into the name of Paul?

2 Cor. 11:4. Eph. 4:5.

14 I thank God that I baptized none of you, save *Crispus and †Gaius;

Acts 18:8. †Rom. 16:23.

15 Lest any men should say that ye were baptized into mine own name.

16 And I baptized also the household of *Stephanas; besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

Chap. 16:15, 17.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel; *not in wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

Chap. 2:1, 4, 13. 2 Pet. 1:16.

¶IV

18 For the preaching of the word of the cross is to *those that perish foolishness; but unto us †that are saved it is the ††power of God.

2 Cor. 2:15. Acts 17:18.

†Chap. 15:2. ††Rom. 1:16.

19 For it is written, *I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Job 5:12, 13. Is. 29:14.

20 *Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of the world? †hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?

Is. 33:18. †Job 12:17, 20, 24.

21 *For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of the preaching to save those that believe.

Luke 10:21. Rom. 1:20, 21, 28.

22 For the *Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom.

Matt. 12:38; 16:1. Mark 8:11.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, *to the Jews a stumblingblock, and to the Gentiles †foolishness;

Is. 8:14. Matt. 11:6; 13:57.

†Verse 18. Chapter 2:14.

24 But unto them that are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ *the power of God, and †the wisdom of God.

Verse 18. Rom. 1:4, 16. †Col. 2:3.

25 Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men.

¶V

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that *not many wise after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called. John 7:48.

27 But *God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty;

Matt. 11:25. James 2:5.

28 And the base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and *things that are not, †to bring to nought things that are;

Rom. 4:17. †Chap. 2:6.

29 *That no flesh should glory in God's presence.

Rom. 3:27. Eph. 2:9.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God was made unto us wisdom, and *righteousness, and †sanctification, and ††redemption;

Jer. 23:5, 6. Rom. 4:25. 2 Cor. 5:21.

†John 17:19. ††Eph. 1:7.

31 That, according as it is written: *He that glorieth let him glory in the Lord.

Jer. 9:23, 24. 2 Cor. 10:17.

CHAPTER 2.

And I, brethren, when I came unto you, *came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

Verse 4:13. 2 Cor. 10:10; 11:6.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, *Save Jesus Christ, and him crucified. Gal. 6:14. Phil. 3:8.

3 And *I was with you [†]in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.

Acts 18:1, 6, 12.
†2 Cor. 4:7; 10:1, 10.

4 And my speech and my preaching *was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, [†]but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power.

Verse 1. Chap. 1:17. 2 Pet. 1:16.
†Rom. 15:19.

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but *in the power of God.

2 Cor. 4:7; 6:7.

6 Howbeit we speak wisdom among those *that are perfect: yet not [†]the wisdom of this world, nor of the rulers of this world, that are coming to nought.

Chap. 14:20. Eph. 4:13.
†Verses 1, 13. Chap. 1:20; 3:19.

7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, *which God foreordained before the world unto our glory.

Rom. 16:25, 26. Eph. 3:5, 9.
Col. 1:26.

8 *Which none of the rulers of this world knew; for [†]had they known it, they

would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

Matt. 11:25. John 7:48.
†Luke 23:34. Acts 3:17.

¶II

9 But as it is written: *Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

Is. 64:4.

10 But *God hath revealed them unto us through his Spirit; for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

Matt. 13:11; 16:17. John 14:26.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, *save the spirit of man which is in him? [†]even so the things of God knoweth no man, save the Spirit of God.

Prov. 20:27; 27:19. †Rom. 11:33, 34.

12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but *the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

Rom. 8:15.

13 *Which things also we speak, not in words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Spirit teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

Verse 4. 2 Pet. 1:16.

14 *Now the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God; [†]for they are foolishness unto him ^{††}neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Matt. 16:23.
†Chap. 1:18, 23. ††Rom. 8:5, 6, 7.

15 *But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

Prov. 28:5.

1 Thess. 5:21. 1 John 4:1.

16 *For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he should instruct him? †But we have the mind of Christ.

Job. 15:8. Rom. 11:34.

†John 15:15.

CHAPTER 3.

And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto *spiritual, but as unto †carnal, as unto ††babes in Christ.

Chap. 2:15.

†Chap. 2:14. ††Heb. 5:13.

2 I have fed you with *milk, not with meat; †for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

Heb. 5:12, 13. †John 16:12.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for *whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk after the manner of men?

Chap. 1:11; 11:18. Gal. 5:20, 21.

4 For when one saith, *I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?

Chap. 1:12.

5 What then is Paul, and what is Apollos? *Ministers by whom ye believed, †even as the Lord gave to each man?

Chap. 4:1. 2 Cor. 3:3.

†Rom. 12:3, 6.

¶II

6 *I have planted, †Apollos watered; ††but God gave the increase.

Acts 18:4, 8, 11. Chap. 4:15; 9:1.

†Acts 18:24. ††Chap. 1:30; 15:10.

7 So then *neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.

2 Cor. 12:11. Gal. 6:8.

8 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one:

*but each man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.

Ps. 62:12. Rom. 2:6. Chap. 4:5.

¶III

9 For *we are labourers together with God; ye are God's tillage, †God's building.

Acts 15:4. 2 Cor. 6:1.

†Eph. 2:20. Col. 2:7.

10 *According to the grace of God which was given unto me, as a wise master builder, I have laid †the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But ††let every man take heed how he buildeth thereon.

Rom. 1:5; 12:3. †Verse 6.

Rom. 15:20. ††1 Pet. 4:11.

11 For other foundation can no man lay than *that which is laid, †which is Jesus Christ.

Is. 28:16. Matt. 16:18. 2 Cor. 11:4.

†Eph. 2:20.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay, stubble;

13 *Every man's work shall be made manifest; for the day †shall declare it, because ††it shall be revealed in fire; and the fire shall prove each man's work of what sort it is.

Chap. 4:5.

†1 Pet. 1:7; 4:12. ††Luke 2:35.

14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereon, † he shall receive a reward.

Chap. 4:5.

15 If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss; but he himself shall be saved; *yet so as through fire.

Jude 23.

¶IV

16* Know ye not that ye are a temple of God, and that

the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

2 Cor. 6:16.

Eph. 2:21, 22. 1 Pet. 2:5.

17 If any man destroy the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

18 *Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you thinketh himself to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may become wise.

Prov. 3:7. Is. 5:21.

19 For *the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written: †He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

Chap. 1:20; 2:6. †Job 5:13.

20 And again, *The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

Ps. 94:11.

21 Therefore *let no man glory in men. For †all things are yours;

Verses 4, 5, 6.

Chap. 1:12. †2 Cor. 4:5, 15.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

23 And *ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

Rom. 14:8. Chap. 11:3. 2 Cor. 10:7.

CHAPTER 4.

(Epistle 3d Sunday after Trinity. Verses 1-5.)

Let a man so account of us, as of *ministers of Christ, †and stewards of the mysteries of God.

Matt. 24:45. 2 Cor. 6:4.

†Luke 12:42. Titus, 1:7.

2 Herein moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment; yea, I judge not mine own self.

4 For I know nothing against myself; *yet am I not hereby justified, but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

Job. 9:2.

Ps. 130:3; 143:2. Prov. 21:2.

5 *Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, †who will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of the hearts; and ††then shall each man have praise of God.

Matt. 7:1. Rom. 2:1, 16.

†Chap. 3:13. ††Rom. 2:29.

¶II

6 Now these things, brethren, *I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; †that ye might learn not to think of men beyond that which is written that no one of you ††be puffed up the one against the other.

Chap. 1:12; 3:4.

†Rom. 12:3. ††Chap. 3:21

7 For who maketh thee to differ? and *what hast thou that thou didst not receive? but if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

John 3:27. James 1:17. 1 Pet. 4:10.

8 Now ye are filled, *now ye are become rich, ye have reigned without us, and I would to God ye did reign, that ye also might reign with you.

Rev. 3:17.

¶III

9 For I think God hath set forth us the apostles last,

*as it were appointed to death; for †we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

Ps. 44:22. Rom. 8:36. Chap. 15:30, 31. †Heb. 10:33.

10 * We are †fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; ††we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honoured, but we are despised.

Chap. 2:3.

†Acts 17:18; 26:24. ††2 Cor. 13:9.

11 *Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and †are naked, and ††are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place;

2 Cor. 4:8. †Job 22:6.

Rom. 8:35. ††Acts 23:2.

12 *And labour, working with our own hands, †being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it:

Acts 18:3; 20:34. 1 Thess. 2:9. †Matt. 5:44. Luke 6:28. Acts 7:60.

13 Being defamed, we intreat; *we are made as the filth of the world, the off-scouring of all things even until now.

Lam. 3:45.

††IV

14 I write not these things to shame you, but admonish you *as my beloved children.

1 Thess. 2:11.

15 For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers; for *in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

Acts 18:11. Rom. 15:20. Gal. 4:19.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, *be ye followers of me.

Chap. 11:1. Phil. 3:17. 1 Thess. 1:6.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you *Timotheus, **who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall put you in remembrance

of my ways which he in Christ, even as I †teach every where ††in every church.

Acts 19:22 Chap. 16:10. **1 Tim.

1:2. †Chap. 7:17. ††Chap. 14:33.

18 *Now some are puffed up, as though I were not coming to you.

Chap. 5:2.

19 *But I will come to you shortly, †if the Lord will, and will know, not the words of them which are puffed up, but the power.

Acts 19:21. 2 Cor. 1:15, 23.

†Acts 18:21.

20 For *the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power. Chap. 2:4. 1 Thess. 1:5.

21 What will ye? *shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness? 2 Cor. 10:2; 13:10.

CHAPTER 5.

It is actually reported that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as *named even among the Gentiles, †that one of you hath his ††father's wife.

Eph. 5:3.

†Lev. 18:8. ††2 Cor. 7:12.

2 *And ye are puffed up, and did not rather †mourn, that he that had done this deed might be taken away from among you.

Chap. 4:18. †2 Cor. 7:7, 10.

3 *For I verily, being absent in body, but present in spirit, have already, as though I were present judged him that hath so done this deed.

Col. 2:5.

4 In the name of our Lord Jesus, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, *with the power of our Lord Jesus,

Matt. 16:19; 18:18. John 20:23.

5 *To deliver such a one unto †Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

Job 2:6. Ps. 109:6. 1 Tim. 1:20.
†Acts 26:18.

§II

(Epistle on Easter Sunday. Verses 6-8.)

6 *Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that †a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

Chap. 3:21; 4:19. James 4:16.
†Chap. 15:33. Gal. 5:9.

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For our *passover, even †Christ, hath been sacrificed for us:

Is. 53:7. John 1:29.
1 Pet. 1:19. †John 19:14.

8 Wherefore *let us keep the feast, †not with old leaven, neither ††with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

Ex. 12:15; 13:6.
†Deut. 16:3. ††Matt. 16:6, 12.

9 I wrote unto you in my epistle *to have no company with fornicators; 2 Cor. 6:14. Eph. 5:11. 2 Thess. 3:14.

10 *Yet not altogether with the fornicators †of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go ††out of the world.

Chap. 10:27.
†Chap. 1:20. ††John 17:15.

11 But now I write you not to keep company, *if any man that is named a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extor-

tioner; with such an one †no not even to eat.

Matt. 18:17. Rom. 16:17.
†Gal. 2:12.

12 For what have I to do with judging *them that are without? do not ye judge †those that are within?

Mark 4:11. Col. 4:5.
†Chap. 6:1, 2, 3, 4.

12 But them that are without God judgeth. *Put away from among yourselves that wicked person.

Deut. 13:5; 17:7.

CHAPTER 6.

Dare any of you, having a matter against his neighbor, go to law before the unrighteous, and not before the saints?

2 Do ye not know that *the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

Ps. 49:14.
Matt. 19:28. Luke 22:30.

3 Know ye not that we shall *judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

2 Pet. 2:4. Jude 6.

4 *If then ye have to judge things pertaining to this life do you set them to judge who are of no account in the church?

Chap. 5:12.

5 I say this to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no, not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before unbelievers.

7 Now therefore there is altogether a fault among

you, because ye go to law one with another. *Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather be defrauded?

Prov. 20:22. Matt. 5:39, 40.

8 Nay, ye yourselves do wrong, and defraud, *and that your brethren.

1 Thess. 4:6.

III

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived; *neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with men,

Chap. 15:50.

Gal. 5:21. Eph. 5:5. 1 Tim. 1:9.

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And such were *some of you: †but ye were washed, but ye were sanctified, but ye were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Chap. 12:2. Eph. 2:2; 4:22; 5:8.
†Chap. 1:30.

III

12 *All things are lawful for me, but not all things are expedient; all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

Chap. 10:23.

13 *Foods for the belly, and the belly for foods, but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but †for the Lord; ††and the Lord for the body.

Matt. 15:17.

Col. 2:22, 23. †Verses 15, 19, 20.

14 And *God both raised

the Lord, and will also raise us †by his own power.

Rom. 6:5.; 8:8. †Eph. 1:19, 20.

15 Know ye not that *your bodies are members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

Rom. 12:5.

Chap. 12:27. Eph. 4:12, 15, 16.

16 Or, know ye not that he that is joined to a harlot is one body? for *the twain, saith he, shall become one flesh.

Gen. 2:24. Matt. 19:5. Eph. 5:31.

17 *But he that is joined unto the Lord in one spirit.

John 17:21, 22, 23. Eph. 4:4.

18 *Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth †against his own body.

Rom. 6:12, 13. †Rom. 1:24.

19 What? *know ye not that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, whom ye have from God, †and ye are not your own?

Chap. 3:16. 1 Cor. 6:16.
†Rom. 14:7, 8.

20 For *ye were bought with a price; therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

Acts 20:28.

Gal. 3:13. 1 Pet. 1:18, 19.

CHAPTER 7.

Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: *It is good for a man not to touch a woman. Verses 8, 26.

2 Nevertheless on account of fornication, let each man have his own wife, and let each woman have her own husband.

3 *Let the husband render unto the wife her due, and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

Ex. 21:10. 1 Pet. 3:7.

4 The wife hath not power over her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power over his own body, but the wife.

5 *Defraud ye not one the other, except it be by consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves unto fasting and prayer; and come together again, that †Satan tempt you not because of your incontinency. Joel 2:16.

1 Sam. 21:4, 5. †1 Thess. 3:5.

6 But I speak this by permission, *and not as a commandment.

Verses 12, 25. 2 Cor. 8:8; 11:17.

7 For *I would that all men were †even as I myself. But †every man hath his proper gift from God, one after this manner, and another after that. Acts 26:29.

†Chap. 9:5. ††Matt. 19:12.

8 But I say to the unmarried and widows, *It is good for them if they abide even as I. Verses 1, 26.

9 But * if they have not self-control, let them marry; for it is better to marry than to burn. 1 Tim. 5:14.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, *let the wife not depart from her husband.

Mal. 2:14, 16.

Matt 5:32; 19:6, 9. Luke 16:18.

11 But and if she should depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let the husband not leave his wife.

12 But to the rest say I, *not the Lord: If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not leave her. Verse 6.

13 And any woman who hath an unbelieving husband, and he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified in the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified in the husband: else *were your children unclean; but now are they holy. Mal. 2:15.

15 Yet if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases; but God hath called us *to peace.

Rom. 12:18; 14:19. Chap. 14:33.

16 For how knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt *save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

1 Pet. 3:1.

17 Only as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk. And *so ordain I in all the churches.

Chap. 4:17. 2 Cor. 11:28.

III

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. Is any called in uncircumcision? *let him not be circumcised.

Acts 16:1, 5, 19, 24, 28.

19 *Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but †the keeping of the commandments of God.

Gal 5:6; 6:15. †John 15:14.

20 Let each man abide in that calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a bond servant? care not for it; but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a bond servant, is *the Lord's freeman; likewise also he that is called, being free, is †Christ's servant.

John 8:36.
†Chap. 9:21. Gal. 5:13. Eph. 6:6.

23 *Ye are bought with a price; become ye not bond-servants of men.

Chap. 6:20. 1 Pet. 1:18, 19.

24 Brethren, *let each man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God. Verse 20.

¶III

25 Now concerning virgins * I have no commandment of the Lord; yet I give my judgment, as one †that hath obtained mercy of the Lord ††to be faithful.

2 Cor. 8:8, 10.
†1 Tim. 1:16. ††Chap. 4:2.

26 I think therefore that this is good because of the present distress, I say, *that it is good for a man to remain as he is. Verses 1, 8.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless such shall have bodily tribulation, but I would spare you.

¶IV

29 But *this I say, brethren, the time is short, it re-

maineth, that both they that have wives may be as though they had none.

Rom. 18:11.

1 Pet. 4:7. 2 Pet. 2:8, 9.

30 And those that weep, as though they wept not; and those that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and those that buy, as though they possessed not;

31 And those that use the world, as not *abusing it; for †the fashion of this world passeth away. Chap. 9:18.

†Ps. 39:6. 1 Pet. 1:24; 4:7.

32 But I would have you to be free from care. *He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord. 1 Tim. 5:5.

33 But he that is married is careful for the things of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 And there is a difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman *careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit; but she that is married is careful for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

Luke 10:40, etc.

35 And this I say for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is seemly, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man thinketh that he behaveth himself unseemly toward his virgin daughter, if she pass the flower of her age, if need so

requireth let him do what he will, he sinneth not; let them marry.

37 Nevertheless he that standeth steadfast in his own heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin daughter, shall do well.

38 *So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage shall do better.

Heb. 13:4.

39 *A wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; **†**only in the Lord.

Rom. 7:2. **†**2 Cor. 6:14.

40 But she is happier if she abide as she is *after my judgment; and **†**I think that I also have the Spirit of God.

Verses 25. 1 Thess. 4:8.

CHAPTER 8.

Now *as touching things offered to idols, we know that we all have **†**knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but love edifieth.

Acts 15:20, 29.

†Rom. 14:14, 22. **††**Rom. 14:3, 10.

2 *If any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth not yet as he ought to know.

Chap. 13:8, 9, 12.

Gal. 6:8. 1 Tim. 6:4.

3 But if any man loveth God, *the same is known of him.

Ex. 33:12, 17.

Matt. 7:23. 2 Tim. 2:19.

4 Concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that *an idol is nothing in the world, **†**and

that there is none other God but one.

Isa. 41:24. **†**Verses 6.

Deut. 4:39; 6:4. Isa. 44:8.

5 For though there be that are *called gods, whether in heaven or on earth, as there are gods many, and lords many,

John 10:34.

6 But *to us there is but one God, the Father, **from whom are all things, and we in him; and **†**one Lord Jesus Christ **††**through whom are all things, and we through him.

Mal. 2:10. Eph. 4:6. **Acts 17:28.

†John 18:18. Acts 2:36.

††John 1:3. Col. 1:16.

7 Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some *being accustomed to the idol eat it as a thing that has been offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak is **†**defiled.

Chap. 10:28, 29. **†**Rom. 14:14, 23.

8 But *meat will not commend us to God; for neither, if we eat, are we the better, nor, if we eat not, are we the worse.

Rom. 14:17.

9 But *take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become **†**a stumbling-block to those that are weak.

Gal. 5:13. **†**Rom. 14:13, 20.

10 For if man see thee, which hast knowledge, sitting at meat in the idol's temple, shall not *the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols.

Chap. 10:28, 32.

11 And *through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whose sake Christ died?

Rom. 14:15, 20.

12 But *when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ. Matt. 25:40, 45.

13 Wherefore, *if meat make my brother to stumble, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to stumble.

Rom. 14:21. 2 Cor. 11:29.

CHAPTER 9.

*Am I not an apostle? am I not free? †have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? ††are not ye my work in the Lord? Acts 9:15; 13:2; 26:17. †Acts 9:3, 17; 18:9. ††Chap. 3:6; 4:15.

2 If I am not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you; for *the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord. 2 Cor. 3:2; 12:12.

3 Mine defense to them that do examine me is this,

4 *Have we not right to eat and to drink? Verse 14. 1 Thess. 2:6. 2 Thess. 3:9.

5 Have we not right to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as *the brethren of the Lord, and †Cephas?

Matt. 13:55. Mark 6:3. Luke 6:15. †Matt. 8:14.

6 Or I only and Barnabas *have not we right to forbear working?

2 Thess. 3:8, 9.

7 Who *goeth a warfare any time at his own cost? who †planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock? 2 Cor. 10:4. †Deut. 20:6. Prov. 27:18.

8 Do I speak these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, *Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen? Deut. 25:4. 1 Tim. 5:18.

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that *he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that thresheth, in hope of partaking. 2 Tim. 2:6.

11 *If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?

Rom. 15:27. Gal. 6:6.

12 If others be partakers of this right over you, are not we rather? *Nevertheless we have not used this right; but suffer all things, †lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ. Verses 15, 18.

2 Cor. 11:7, 9. †2 Cor. 11:12.

13 *Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar?

Lev. 6:16, 26; 7:6, etc. Num. 5:9, 10.

14 Even so *hath the Lord ordained †that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel.

Matt. 10:10. Luke 10:7. †Gal. 6:6.

¶¶¶

15 But *I have used none of these things; neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for †it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorying void. Verse 12.

Acts 18:3; 20:34. †2 Cor. 11:10.

16 For though I preach

the gospel, I have nothing to glory of; for *necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel! Rom. 1:14.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, *I have a reward: but if against my will, †a stewardship of the gospel is committed unto me.

Chap. 3:8, 14.
†Chap. 4:1. Gal. 2:7.

18 What is my reward then? Verily that, *when I preach the gospel I will preach the gospel of Christ without charge, that I †use not to the full my power in the gospel. Chap. 10:33.

2 Cor. 4:5; 11:7. †Chap. 7:31.

¶III

19 For though I am *free from all men, yet have †I made myself servant unto all, ††that I might gain the more.

Verse 1.
†Gal. 5:13. ††Matt. 18:15.

20 *To the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to those that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain those that are under the law;

Acts 18:3; 18:18.

21 *To †those that are without law, as without law, ††being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ that I might gain those that are without law;

Gal. 3:2.
†Rom. 2:12, 14. ††Chap. 7:22.

22 *To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak; †I am made all things to all men, ††that I might by all means save some. Rom. 15:1. 2 Cor. 11:29.
†Chap. 10:33. ††Rom. 11:14.

23 And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

(Epistle on Sunday Septuagesima. Verse 24 to verse 5, Chapter 10.)

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? *Even so run, that ye may obtain.

Gal. 2:2; 5:7. Phil. 2:16; 3:14.

25 And every man that *striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we †an incorruptible.

Eph. 6:12. 2 Tim. 2:5; 4:7.
†2 Tim. 4:8. Rev. 2:10; 3:11.

26 I therefore so run, *not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

2 Tim. 2:5.

27 *But I buffet my body, and †bring it into subjection: lest by any means, after having preached to others, I myself should be ††rejected.

Rom. 8:13. Col. 3:5.
†Rom. 6:18, 19. ††Jer. 6:30.

CHAPTER 10.

For I would not that he should be ignorant, brethren, how that our fathers were all under *the cloud, and all passed through †the sea;

Ex. 13:21; 40:34. Num. 9:18; 14:14.
†Ex. 14:22. Num. 33:8.

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea;

3 And did eat the same *spiritual meat; Ex. 16:15, 35.
Neh. 9:15, 20. Ps. 78:24.

4 And did drink the same *spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock

that followed them, and that Rock was Christ.

Ex. 17:6. Num. 20:11.
Ps. 78:15. Deut. 9:21.

5 But with the most of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

Num. 14:29,
32, 35: 26:64, 66. Ps. 106:26.

(Epistle on 9th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 6-13.)

6 Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.

Num. 11:4, 33, 34. Ps. 106:14.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

Verse 14. †Ex. 32:6.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

Chap. 6:18. Rev. 2:14.
†Num. 25:1, 9.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.

Ex. 17:2, 7.
Num. 21:5. †Num. 21:6.

10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

Ex. 16:2; 17:2.
†Num. 14:37. †Ex. 12:23.

11 Now these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages are come.

Rom. 15:4. Chap. 9:10.
†Chap. 7:29. 1 John 2:18.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.

Rom. 11:20.

¶II

13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

Chap. 1:9.

†Ps. 125:3. †Jer. 29:11.

14 Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

Verse 7.

2 Cor. 6:17. 1 John 5:21.

15 I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say.

Chap. 8:1.

¶III

16 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not a communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not a communion of the body of Christ?

Matt. 26:26, 27, 28. †Acts 2:42, 46.

17 For we being many are one bread, and one body; for we are all partakers of the one bread.

Rom. 12:5. Chap. 12:27.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh; are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

Rom. 4:12. Gal. 6:16.

†Rom. 4:1. †Lev. 3:3; 7:16.

19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

Chap. 8:4.

20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God; and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.

Lev. 17:7. Deut. 32:17. Ps. 106:37.

21 *Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and †the cup of devils; ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

2 Cor. 6:15, 16. †Deut. 32:38.

¶IV

22 Or do we *provoke the Lord to jealousy? †are we stronger than he?

Deut. 32:21. †Ezek. 22:14.

23 *All things are lawful, but all things are not expedient; all things are lawful, but not all things edify.

Chap. 6:12.

24 *Let no man seek his own good only, but that of the others also.

Verse 33. Rom. 15:1, 2.

Chap. 13:5. Phil. 2:4, 21.

25 *Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

1 Tim. 4:4.

26 For *the earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof.

Verse 28. Ex. 19:5. Deut. 10:14.

27 If any of them that believe not biddeth you to a feast, and ye are disposed to go; *whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

Luke 10:7.

28 But if any man say unto you, This has been offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not *for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake; for †the earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof:

Chap. 8:10, 12.

†Verse 26. Deut. 10:14.

29 Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the others; for *why is my liberty judged of another conscience?

Rom. 14:16.

30 If I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that *for which I give thanks?

Rom. 14:6. 1 Tim. 4:3, 4.

31 *Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

Col. 3:17. 1 Pet. 4:11.

32 *Give no cause of offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to †the church of God.

Rom. 14:13. Chap. 8:13.

2 Cor. 6:3. †Acts 20:28.

33 Even as * I please all men in all things, †not seeking mine own profit, but that of many, that they may be saved.

Rom. 15:2.

Chap. 9:19, 22. †Verse 24.

CHAPTER 11.

Be *ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

Chap. 4:16. Eph. 5:1. Phil. 3:17.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, *that ye remember me in all things, and †hold fast the instructions I delivered to you.

Chap. 4:17.

†Chap. 7:17. 2 Thess. 2:15; 3:6.

3 But I would have you know, that *the head of every man is Christ; and †the head of the woman is the man; and ††the head of Christ is God.

Eph. 5:23.

†Gen. 3:16. ††John 14:28.

4 Every man praying or *prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

Chap. 12:10, 28; 14:1, etc.

5 But *every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head: for that is even the same thing as if she were †shorn.

Acts 21:9. †Deut. 21:12.

6 For if the woman is not covered, let her also be shorn; but if it be *a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.

Num. 5:18. Deut. 22:5.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as *he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. Gen. 1:26, 27; 5:1; 9:6.

8 For *the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. Gen. 2:21.

9 *Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man.

Gen. 2:18, 21, 23.

10 For this cause ought the woman *to have cover on her head †because of the angels.

Gen. 24:65. Verse 13. †Eccl. 5:6.

11 Nevertheless *neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

Gal. 3:28.

12 For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; *but all things are of God. Rom. 11:36.

13 Judge ye in yourselves: is it seemly that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a dishonor unto him?

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering.

16 But *if any man seemeth to be contentious, we have no such custom, †neither the churches of God.

1 Tim. 6:4. †Chap. 7:17.

17 Now in giving you this

charge, I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, *I hear that there are divisions among you; and I partly believe it.

Chap. 1:10, 11, 12; 3:3.

19 For *there must be also heresies among you, †that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.

Matt. 18:7. Luke 17:1. Acts 20:30. †Luke 2:35. Deut. 13:3.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, it is not to eat the Lord's supper.

21 For in eating every one taketh before other his own supper; and one is hungry, and *another is drunken.

2 Pet. 2:13. Jude 12.

22 What? have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye *the church of God, and †shame them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not. Chap. 10:32. †James 2:6.

(Epistle on Maundy Thursday.
Verses 23 to 32.)

23 For *I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, †That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread; Chap. 15:3.

Gal. 1:1, 11. †Matt. 26:26.

24 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said: Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

25 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, say-

ing: This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as often as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew forth the Lord's death *till he come.

John 14:3; 21:22. Acts 1:11.
2 Thess. 1:10.

27 *Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and the blood of the Lord.

Num. 9:10, 13. John 6:51, 63, 64.

28 But *let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

2 Cor. 13:5. Gal. 6:4.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, if he discern not the Lord's body.

Rom. 13:2.

30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

†II

31 For *if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

Ps. 32:5. 1 John 1:9.

32 But when we are judged, *we are chastened of the Lord, that we may not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.

34 And if any man is *hungry let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when ††I come.

Verse 21. †Verse 22. ††Chap. 4:19.

CHAPTER 12.

(Epistle 10th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 1-11.)

Now *concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

Chap. 14:1, 37.

2 Ye know *that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these †dumb idols, even as ye were led.

Chap. 6:11. Eph. 2:11, 12.

1 Thess. 1:9. †Ps. 115:6.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand, *that no man speaking by the Spirit of God saith Jesus is accursed: and †no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but in the Holy Spirit.

Mark 9:39. 1 John 4:2, 3.

†Matt. 16:17. John 15:26.

(Epistle on St. Matthew's Day. Verses 4-11.)

4 Now *there are diversities of gifts, but †the same Spirit.

Rom. 12:4, etc.

Heb. 2:4. †Eph. 4:4.

5 And there are diversities of administrations, but the same Lord.

Rom. 12:6, 7, 8. Eph. 4:11.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God *who worketh all things in all.

Eph. 1:23.

7 *But to each the manifestation of the Spirit is given to profit withal.

Rom. 12:6, 7, 8.

Chap. 14:26. Eph. 4:7.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit *the word of wisdom; to another †the word of knowledge by the same Spirit.

Chap. 2:6, 7.

†Chap. 1:5; 13:2. 2 Cor. 8:7.

9 *To another faith by the same Spirit; to another †the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;

Matt. 17:19, 20.

Chap. 13:2. †Mark 16:18.

10 *To another the working of miracles; to another **prophecy; †to another discerning of spirits; to another ††various kinds of tongues; and to another the interpretation of tongues:

Verses 28, 29. Mark 16:17. **Rom. 12:6. Chap. 13:2 †Chap. 14:29. ††Acts 2:4.

11 But all these worketh that one and the same Spirit, *dividing to each one severally †as he will.

Rom. 12:6. Chap. 7:7. 2 Cor. 10:13. Eph. 4:7. †John 8:8. Heb. 2:4.

12 For *as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: †so also is Christ.

Rom. 12:4, 5. Eph. 4:4, 16. †Verse 27. Gal. 3:16.

13 For *by one Spirit were we all baptized into one body, †whether we be Jews or Greeks, whether we be bond or free; and ††were all made to drink of one Spirit.

Rom. 6:5. †Gal. 3:28. Eph. 2:13, 14, 16. ††John 6:63.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath *God set the members every one of

them in the body, †even as it pleased him.

Verse 28. †Verse 11. Rom. 12:3. Chap. 3:5.

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But now they are many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of thee; or again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness.

24 For our comely parts have no need; but God hath tempered the body together, giving more abundant honour to that part which lacked;

25 That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

¶II

27 Now *ye are the body of Christ, and †members in particular.

Rom. 12:5. Eph. 1:23. †Eph. 5:30.

28 And *God hath set some in the church, first **apostles, secondly

prophets, thirdly teachers, after that *miracles, then *****gifts of healing, helps, ††governments, diversities of tongues.

Eph. 4:11. **Eph. 2:20. ***Acts 13:1. ****Verse 10. *****Verse 9.

†Num. 11:17. ††Rom. 12:8, 1.

29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?

30 Have all gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But *desire earnestly the best gifts; and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

Chap. 14:1, 39.

CHAPTER 13.

(Epistle on Sunday Quingagesima. Verses 1-13.)

Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not love, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have the gift of *prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, †so that I could remove mountains, and have not love, I am nothing.

Chap. 12:8, 9, 10, 28.

†Matt. 17:20.

3 And *though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not love, it profiteth me nothing.

Matt. 6:1, 2.

4 *Love suffereth long, and is kind; love envieth not; love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up,

Prov. 10:12. 1 Pet. 4:8.

5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, *seeketh not its

own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;

Chap. 10:24. Phil. 2:4.

6 *Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but †rejoiceth in the truth;

Ps. 10:3. Rom. 1:32. †2 John 4.

7 *Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

Rom. 15:1. Gal. 6:2. 2 Tim. 2:24.

8 Love never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 *For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

Chap. 8:2.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For *now we see through a glass, darkly; but then †face to face, now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I have been known.

2 Cor. 3:18; 5:17.

Phil. 3:12. †Matt. 18:10.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, and love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

CHAPTER 14.

Follow after love, and *desire spiritual gifts, †but rather that ye may prophesy.

Chap. 12:31. †Num. 11:25, 29.

2 For he that *speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God; for no man understandeth;

but in the spirit he speaketh mysteries. Acts 2:4; 10:46.

3 But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men edification, exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by way of *revelation, or of knowledge, or of prophesying, or of doctrine? Verse 26.

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?

9 So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian, and

he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also; *I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing †with the understanding also. Eph. 5:19.

Col. 3:16. †Ps. 47:7.
16 Else when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen *at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest? Chap. 11:24.

17 For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank God, I speak with tongues more than ye all:

19 Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

20 Brethren, *be not children in understanding; howbeit in malice †be ye children, but in understanding be men. Ps. 131:2. Matt. 11:25. †Matt. 18:3. 1 Pet. 2:2.

21 *In the law it is †written: By men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.

John 10:34. †Is. 28:11, 12.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to the unbelievers; but prophesying is not for the unbelievers, but for the believers.

¶II

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, *will they not say that ye are mad?

Acts 2:13.

24 But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convicted by all, he is judged by all:

25 The secrets of his heart are made manifest; and so falling down on his face he will worship God, and declare *that God is in you of a truth.

Is. 45:14. Zech. 8:23.

26 How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, *hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. †Let all things be done unto edifying.

Verse 6. Chap. 12:8, 9, 10.

†Chap. 12:7. 2 Cor. 12:19.

27 If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that in turn; and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no in-

terpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God.

¶III

29 Let the prophets speak by two or three, and *let the others discern.

Chap. 12:10.

30 If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, *let the first hold his peace.

1 Thess. 5:19, 20.

31 For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

32 And *the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.

1 John 4:1.

33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, *as in all the churches of the saints.

Chap. 11:16.

34 *Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but †they are commanded to be in subjection, as also saith the ††law.

1 Tim. 2:11, 12. †Chap. 11:3.

Eph. 5:22. ††Gen. 3:16.

35 And if they would learn any thing, let them ask their own husbands at home: for it is shameful for women to speak in the church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you alone?

37 *If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.

2 Cor. 10:7. 1 John 4:6.

38 But if any man is ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore, my brethren, *desire earnestly to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

Chap. 12:31. †Thess. 5:20.

40 But *let all things be done decently and in order.

Verse 33.

CHAPTER 15.

(Epistle on 11th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 1, 10.)

Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel *which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and †wherein ye stand;

Gal. 1:11. †Rom. 5:2.

2 *By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

Rom. 1:16. Chap. 1:21.

3 For *I delivered unto you first of all that †which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins †according to the scriptures;

Chap. 11:2, 23. †Gal. 1:12. †Ps. 22:15, etc. †Pet. 1:11; 2:24.

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day *according to the scriptures.

Ps. 2:7; 16:10. Is. 53:10. Hos. 6:2. Luke 24:26, 46. Acts 2:25-31.

5 *And that he appeared to Cephas, then †to the twelve;

Luke 24:34. †Matt. 28:17. Mark 16:14.

6 After that he appeared to above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain until now, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that, he appeared to James; then *to all the apostles.

Luke 24:50. Acts 1:3, 4.

8 *And last of all he appeared to me also, as of one born out of due time.

Acts 9:4, 17; 22:14, 18. Chap. 9:1.

9 For I am *the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because †I persecuted the church of God.

Eph. 3:8. †Acts 8:3; 9:1. Gal. 1:13.

10 But *by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but †I laboured more abundantly than they all; †yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

Eph. 3:7, 8. †2 Cor. 11:23. †Matt 10:20. Rom. 15:18, 19.

11 Therefore whether it be I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

¶¶¶

12 Now if Christ is preached that he hath been raised from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, *then Christ hath not been raised.

1 Thess. 4:14.

14 And if Christ hath not been raised, then is our preaching vain, and your faith also is vain.

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God; because *we have testified of God that he raised up Christ, whom he raised not up, if it be so that the dead are not raised.

Acts 2:24, 32; 4:10, 33; 13:30.

16 For if the dead are not raised then Christ hath not been raised;

17 And if Christ hath not been raised, your faith is vain; *ye are yet in your sins.

Rom. 4:25.

18 Then they also who have fallen asleep in Christ are perished.

19 *If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

2 Tim. 3:12.

¶III

20 But now *hath Christ been risen from the dead, and become †the firstfruits of them that are asleep.

1 Pet. 1:3. †Verse 23.

Acts 26:23. Col. 1:18.

21 For *since by man came death, †by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

Rom. 5:12, 17.

†John 11:25. Rom. 6:23.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so also in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But *every man in his own order; Christ the firstfruits, afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.

Verse 20. 1 Thess. 4:15, 16, 17.

24 Then cometh the end, when he shall deliver up *the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.

Dan. 7:14, 27.

25 For he must reign, *till he hath put all his enemies under his feet.

Ps. 110:1. Acts 2:34, 35. Eph. 1:22.

26 *The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

2 Tim. 1:10. Rev. 20:14.

27 For he *hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest

that he is excepted, who did put all things under him.

Ps. 8:6.

Matt. 28:18. Heb. 2:8. 1 Pet. 3:22.

28 *And when all things shall be subjected unto him, then †shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

Phil. 2:21. †Chap. 3:23; 11:3.

¶IV

29 Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead are not raised at all? why are they then baptized for them?

30 And *why stand we in jeopardy every hour?

2 Cor. 11:26. Gal. 5:11.

31 I protest by *your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, †I die daily.

1 Thess. 2:19.

†Rom. 8:36. Chap. 4:9.

32 If after the manner of men *I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me? If the dead rise not, †let us eat and drink, they say, for tomorrow we die.

2 Cor. 1:8.

†Ecc. 2:24. Is. 22:13.

33 Be not deceived; *evil company corrupt good manners.

Chap. 5:6.

34 *Awake to righteousness, and sin not; †for some have no knowledge of God; ††I speak this to your shame.

Rom. 13:11.

†1 Thess. 4:5. ††Chap. 6:5.

35 But some man will say, *How are the dead raised? and with what manner of body to they come?

Ezek. 37:3.

36 Thou foolish one, *that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die;

John 12:24.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not the body that shall be, but a bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain:

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 *So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption:

Dan. 12:3. Matt. 13:43.

43 *It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power. Phil. 3:21.

44 It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is also a spiritual body.

¶IV

45 So it is written: The first man Adam *became a living soul; †the last Adam is ††a quickening spirit.

Gen. 2:7.

†Rom. 5:14. ††John 5:21: 6:33.

46 Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual, but

that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

47 *The first man is of the earth, †earthy: the second man is the Lord ††of heaven.

John 8:31.

†Gen. 2:7. ††John 8:13, 31.

48 As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: *and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. Phil. 3:20, 21.

49 And *as we have borne the image of the earthy, †we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

Gen. 5:3. †Rom. 8:29. 2 Cor. 3:18.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that *flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

Matt. 16:17. John 3:3, 5.

¶VI

51 Behold, I tell you a mystery; *We shall not all sleep, †but we shall all be changed,

1 Thess. 4:15, 16, 17. †Phil. 3:21.

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; *for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

Zech. 9: 14.

Matt. 24:31. 1 Thess. 4:16.

¶VII

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and *this mortal must put on immortality. 2 Cor. 5:4.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass

the saying that is written,
*Death is swallowed up in
victory. 1a. 25:8. Heb. 2:14, 15.

55 *O death, where is thy
sting? O hell, where is thy
victory? Hos. 13:14.

56 The sting of death is
sin; and *the power of sin is
the law.

Rom. 4:15; 5:13; 7:5, 13.

57 *But thanks be to God,
which giveth us †the victory
through our Lord Jesus
Christ.

Rom. 7:25. †1 John 5:4, 5.

58 *Therefore, my beloved
brethren, be ye steadfast, un-
moveable, always abounding
in the work of the Lord, for-
asmuch as ye know †that
your labour is not in vain in
the Lord.

2 Pet. 3:14. †Chap. 3:8.

CHAPTER 16.

Now concerning *the col-
lection for the saints, as I
gave order to the churches
of Galatia, even so do ye.

Acts 11:29. Gal. 2:10.

2 *Upon the first day of
the week let each one of you
lay by him in store, as God
hath prospered him, that
there be no collections when
I come. Acts 20:7. Rev. 1:10.

3 And when I come,
*whomsoever ye shall ap-
prove by your letters, them
will I send to bring your
bounty unto Jerusalem.

2 Cor. 8:19. 2 Cor. 8:4, 6, 19.

4 *And if it be desirable
that I go also, they shall go
with me. 2 Cor. 8:4.

5 Now I will come unto
you, *when I have passed
through Macedonia; for I do
pass through Macedonia.

Acts 19:21. 2 Cor. 1:16.

6 And it may be that I
will abide, yea, and winter
with you, that ye may *bring
me on my journey whither-
soever I go.

Acts 15:3; 17:15; 21:5.

Rom. 15:24. 2 Cor. 1:16.

7 For I do not wish to see
you now by the way; but I
trust to tarry a while with
you, *if the Lord permit.

Acts 18:21. Chap. 4:19. James 4:15.

8 But I will tarry at Ephe-
sus until Pentecost.

9 For *a great door and
effectual is opened unto me,
and †there are many adver-
saries. Acts 14:27. 2 Cor. 2:12.

Col. 4:3. Rev. 3:8. †Acts 19:9.

¶II

10 Now *if Timotheus
come, see that he be with
you without fear; for †he
worketh the work of the
Lord, as I also do. Acts 19:22.

†Rom. 16:21. Phil. 2:20, 22.

11 *Let no man therefore
despise him; but conduct
him forth †in peace, that he
may come unto me, for I
look for him with the breth-
ren. 1 Tim. 4:12. †Acts 15:33.

12 But touching our broth-
er *Apollos, I greatly desired
him to come unto you with
the brethren; but his will
was not at all to come at this
time; but he will come when
he shall have convenient
time. Chap. 1:12.

¶III

13 *Watch ye, †stand fast
in the faith, quit you like
men, ††the strong.

Matt. 24:42; 25:13.

1 Thess. 5:6. †Chap. 15:1. 2 Thess.
2:15. ††Eph. 6:10. Col. 1:11.

14 *Let all things be done
in love. Chap. 14:1. 1 Pet. 4:8.

15 I beseech you, brethren, ye know *the house of Stephanas, that it is †the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have devoted themselves to ††the ministry of the saints,

Chap. 1:16.

†Rom. 16:5. ††2 Cor. 8:4.

16 *That ye submit yourselves unto such, and to every one that helpeth us in the †work, and laboureth with us. Heb. 13:17. †Heb. 6:10.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus: *for that which was lacking on your part they supplied.

2 Cor. 11:9. Phil. 2:30.

18 *For they refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore †acknowledge ye them that are such.

Col. 4:8.

†Phil. 2:29. 1 Thess. 5:12.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, *with the church that is in their house. Rom. 16:5.

20 All the brethren salute you. *Salute ye one another with an holy kiss. Rom. 16:16.

21 *The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

Col. 4:18. 2 Thess. 3:17.

22 If any man *loveth not the Lord Jesus Christ, †let him be Anathema ††Maran-atha.

Eph. 6:24.

†Gal. 1:8, 9. ††Jude 14, 15.

23 *The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

Rom. 16:20.

24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

THE
SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE
TO THE

CORINTHIANS

CHAPTER 1.

Paul, *an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, †with all the saints which are in all Achaia:

1 Cor. 1:1. Eph. 1:1. †Phil. 1:1.

2 *Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom. 1:7. 1 Cor. 1:3. Phil. 1:2.

¶II

3 *Blessed be God, and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort;

Eph. 1:3. 1 Pet. 1:3.

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, through the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

5 For as *the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth through Christ.

Acts 9:4. Chap. 4:10. Col. 1:24.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

Chap. 4:15.

7 And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing that *as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so also are ye of the consolation.

Rom. 8:17. 2 Tim. 2:12.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of *our tribulation which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

Acts 19:23. 1 Cor. 15:32; 16:9.

9 Yea, we had the sentence of death in our own selves, that we should *not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead. Jer. 17:5, 7.

10 *Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us;

2 Pet. 2:9.

11 Ye also *helping together by prayer for us, that †for the gift bestowed upon us by means of many persons thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

Rom. 15:30. Phil. 1:19. †Chap. 4:15.

12 For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and *godly sincerity, †not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have conducted ourselves in the world, and more abundantly toward you.

Chap. 2:17; 4:2. †1 Cor. 2:4, 13.

13 For we write none other things unto you, than what ye read or acknowledge; and I trust ye will acknowledge even to the end;

14 As also ye have acknowledged us in part, *that we are your rejoicing, even as †ye also are ours in the day of our Lord Jesus.

Chap. 5:12. †Phil. 2:16; 4:1.

III

15 And in this confidence *I was minded to come before unto you that ye might have †a second benefit.

1 Cor. 4:19. †Rom. 1:11.

16 And to pass by you into Macedonia, and *to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be set forward on my way toward Judæa.

1 Cor. 16:5, 6.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use levity? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose *according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

Chap. 10:2.

18 But as God is faithful, that our word toward you is not yea and nay.

19 For *the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, †but in him is yea.

Mark 1:1. Luke 1:35. †Heb. 13:8.

20 *For all the promises of God in him are yea, and through him Amen, unto the glory of God through us.

Rom. 15:8, 9.

21 Now he that stablisheth us with you in Christ, and *anointed us, is God;

1 John 2:20, 27.

22 Who *also sealed us, and †gave us the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

Eph. 1:13; 4:30.

2 Tim. 2:19. †Chap. 5:5.

23 But *I call God as a witness upon my soul, †that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

Rom. 1:9. Chap. 11:31.

†1 Cor. 4:21. Chap. 2:3.

24 Not *that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for †by faith ye stand. 1 Cor. 3:5.

1 Pet. 5:3. †Rom. 11:20.

CHAPTER 2.

But I determined this for myself, *that I would not come again to you in sorrow.

Chap. 1:23; 12:20, 21.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same that is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote you this very thing, lest, when I came, *I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; †having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

Chap. 12:21.

†Chap. 7:16; 8:22.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears; *not that ye should be made sorry, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

Chap. 7:8, 9, 12.

5 But *if any have caused grief, he hath not †grieved me, but in part, that I may not be too severe to you all.

1 Cor. 5:1. †Gal. 4:12.

6 Sufficient to such a one is this punishment, which was inflicted *by many.

1 Cor. 5:4, 5. 1 Tim. 5:20.

7 *So that contrariwise ye should rather forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with too much sorrow. Gal. 6:1.

8 Wherefore I beseech you that ye will confirm your love toward him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye are *obedient in all things. Chap. 7:15; 10:6.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I have forgiven any thing, I have forgiven it for your sakes in the person of Christ.

11 Lest Satan should gain advantage of us, for we are not ignorant of his devices.

¶II

12 Now, *when I came to Troas to preach the gospel of Christ, a door was opened unto me of the Lord.

Acts 16:8. †1 Cor. 16:9.

13 *I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leave of them, I went forth into Macedonia.

Chap. 7:5, 6.

14 Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest *the savour of his knowledge through us in every place. Cant. 1:3.

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, *in them that are saved, and †in them that perish:

1 Cor. 1:18. †Chap. 4:3.

16 *To the one we are the savour from death unto death; and to the other the savour from life unto life.

And †who is sufficient for these things?

Luke 2:34.

John 9:39. †1 Cor. 15:10.

17 For we are not as many, who *corrupt the word of God: but as †of sincerity, but as of God in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

Chap. 4:2; 11:13.

2 Pet. 2:3. †Chap. 1:12; 4:2.

CHAPTER 3.

Do *we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some, letters †of commendation to you, or from you?

Chap. 5:12; 10:8, 12. †Acts 18:27.

2 *Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men. 1 Cor. 9:2.

3 Forasmuch as ye are manifestly shown to be the letter of Christ *ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not †in tables of stone, but †in fleshy tables of the heart.

1 Cor. 3:5. †Ex. 24:12; 34:1.

††Ps. 40:8. Jer. 31:33.

(Epistle on the 12th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 4-11.)

4 And such trust have we through Christ toward God:

5 *Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as from ourselves; but †our sufficiency is from God;

John 15:5. Chap. 2:16.

†1 Cor. 15:10.

6 Who also made us sufficient as *ministers of **the new testament; not ***of the letter, but of the spirit; for †the letter killeth, ††but the spirit giveth life.

Col. 1:25, 29. **Jer. 31:31. Matt. 26:28. ***Rom. 2:27, 29; 7:6. †Rom. 3:20; 4:15; 7:9. Gal. 3:10. ††John 6:63. Rom. 8:2.

7 But if *the ministration of death, †written and engraven in stones, was glorious ††so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was passing away: Rom. 7:10. †Ex. 34:1, 28.

Deut. 10:1. ††Ex. 34:29, 30, 35.

8 How shall not rather *the ministration of the spirit be glorious. Gal. 3:5.

9 For if the ministration of condemnation hath glory, much more doth the ministration *of righteousness exceed in glory. Rom. 1:17.

10 For even that which was made glorious hath no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have such hope, *we use great boldness of speech.

Chap. 7:4. Eph. 6:19.

13 And not as Moses, *which put a vail upon his face, that the children of Israel should not steadfastly look to †the end of that which was passing away.

Ex. 34:33. †Rom. 10:4. Gal. 3:23.

14 But *their minds were blinded; for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which vail is done away in Christ.

Is. 6:10. Matt. 13:11. John 12:40.

Acts 28:26. Rom. 11:7, 8, 25.

Chap. 4:4.

15 But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail lieth upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless *when Israel shall turn to the Lord, †the vail shall be taken away.

Ex. 34:34.

Rom. 11:23, 26. †Is. 25:7.

17 Now *the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

Verse 6. 1 Cor. 15:45.

18 But we all, with unveiled face reflecting *as a mirror †the glory of the Lord, ††are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even from the Lord who is the Spirit.

1 Cor. 13:12. †Chap. 4:4, 6. 1 Tim.

1:11. ††Rom. 8:29. 1 Cor. 15:49.

CHAPTER 4.

Therefore seeing we have *this ministry, †as we have obtained mercy, we faint not;

Chap. 3:6.

†1 Cor. 7:25. 1 Tim. 1:13.

2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, *nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but †by manifestation of the truth ††commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

Chap. 2:17. 1 Thess. 2:3, 5.

†Chap. 6:4. ††Chap. 5:11.

3 But if our gospel be veiled, *it is veiled to them that are lost:

1 Cor. 1:18. 2 Thess. 2:10.

4 In whom *the god of this world **hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest †the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, ††who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

John 12:31.

**Is. 6:10. John 12:40. †Verse 6.

Chap. 3:8. ††John 1:18; 12:45.

5 *For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the

Lord; and yourselves as your servants for Jesus' sake.

1 Cor. 1:13, 23. †1 Cor. 9:19.

6 For God, *who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath †shined in our hearts to give ††the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

Gen. 1:3. †2 Pet. 1:19. ††Verse 4.
(Epistle on St. Bartholomew's Day.
Verses 7-10.)

7 But we have this treasure in *earthen vessels, †that the surpassing greatness of the power may be of God, and not of us.

Chap. 5:1.

†1 Cor. 2:5. Chap. 12:9.

8 We are *troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; Chap. 7:5.

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; *cast down, but not destroyed;

Ps. 37:24.

10 *Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, †that the life also of Jesus may be manifested in our body.

1 Cor. 15:31. Chap. 1:5, 9.

†Rom. 8:17. 1 Pet. 4:13.

11 For we which live *are always delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus may be manifested in our mortal flesh.

Ps. 44:22. Rom. 8:36.

12 So then *death worketh in us, but life in you.

Chap. 13:9.

13 And having *the same spirit of faith, according as it is written †I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore we speak; Rom. 1:12. †Ps. 116:10.

14 Knowing that *he which raised the Lord Jesus shall raise us also through Jesus,

and shall present us with you.

Rom. 8:11. 1 Cor. 6:14.

15 For *all things are for your sakes, that †the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God.

1 Cor. 3:21. Chap. 1:6.

†Chap. 1:11; 8:19.

16 For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet *the inward man is renewed day by day.

Rom. 7:22. Eph. 3:16.

17 For *our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;

Matt. 5:12. 1 Pet. 1:6; 5:10.

18 *While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal; but things which are not seen are eternal.

Rom. 8:24. Chap. 5:7. Heb. 11:1.

CHAPTER 5.

For we know that if *our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

Joh. 4:19. 2 Pet. 1:13, 14.

2 For in this *we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven;

Rom. 8:23.

3 If so be that *being clothed we shall not be found naked.

Rev. 3:18; 16:15.

4 For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened; not for that we would be unclothed, but *clothed upon, that mortal-

ity might be swallowed up of life. 1 Cor. 15:53, 54.

5 Now *he that wrought us for this very thing is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit. Is. 29:23. †Rom. 8:23. Chap. 1:22.

6 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 For *we walk by faith, not by sight.

Rom. 8:24, 25. 1 Cor. 13:12.

¶II

8 We are confident, I say, and *willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be at home with the Lord.

Phil. 1:23.

9 Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

10 *For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; †that every one may receive according to that he hath done in the body, whether it be good or bad.

Matt. 25:31, 32.

†Rom. 2:6. Gal. 6:7.

11 Knowing therefore *the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but †we have been made manifest unto God; and I trust also that we have been made manifest in your consciences.

Job 31:23. Heb. 10:31. †Chap. 4:2.

12 For *we commend not ourselves again unto you, but give you occasion †to glory on our behalf, that ye may have somewhat to answer them which glory in appearance, and not in heart. Chap. 3:1. †Chap. 1:14.

13 For *whether we are

beside ourselves, it is unto God: or whether we are sober, it is for you.

Chap. 11:1, 16, 17; 12:6, 11.

14 For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that *if one died for all, then all died.

Rom. 5:15.

15 And he died for all, *that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him who died for their sakes and rose again.

Rom. 6:11, 12; 14:7, 8.

1 Cor. 6:19. Gal. 2:20.

16 *Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh; yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, †yet now henceforth know we him no more.

Matt. 12:50. John 15:14.

Gal. 5:6. Col. 3:11. †John 6:68.

17 Therefore if any man *be in Christ, he is †a new creature; †old things are passed away; behold all things are become new.

Rom. 8:9; 16:7. Gal. 6:15. †Gal. 5:6; 6:15. ††Is. 43:18, 19; 66:17.

Eph. 2:15.

18 And all things are of God, *who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

Rom. 5:10. Eph. 2:16.

Col. 1:20. 1 John 2:2; 4:10.

19 To wit, that *God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

Rom. 3:24, 25.

20 Now then we are *ambassadors for Christ, as †though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in

Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

Job 33:23. Mal. 2:7. Chap. 3:6.
Eph. 6:20. †Chap. 6:1.

21 For *he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Is. 53:6, 9, 12. Gal. 3:13.
1 Pet. 2:22, 24. †Rom. 1:17.

CHAPTER 6.

(Epistle 1st Sunday in Lent. Invo-
cavit, Verses 1-10.)

We then, as *workers together with him, †beseech you also ††that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

1 Cor. 3:9.
†Chap. 5:20. ††Heb. 12:15.

2 For he saith: *I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succored thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.

Is. 49:8.

3 *Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed,

Rom. 14:13. 1 Cor. 9:12; 10:32.

4 But in all things approving ourselves *as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

Chap. 4:2. 1 Cor. 4:1.

5 *In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings;

Chap. 11:23, etc.

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,

7 *By the word of truth, by †the power of God, by ††the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,

Chap. 4:2; 7:14.

†1 Cor. 2:4. ††Chap. 10:4.

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report; as deceivers, and yet true;

9 As unknown, and *yet well known; †as dying, and, behold, we live; ††as chastened, and not killed.

Chap. 4:2; 5:11; 11:6. †1 Cor. 4:9.
Chap. 1:9; 4:10, 11. ††Ps. 118:18.

10 As sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

III

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, *our heart is enlarged. Chap. 7:3.

12 Ye are not straitened in us, but *ye are straitened in your own affections.

Chap. 12:15.

13 Now for a recompense in the same kind, *I speak as unto my children, be ye also enlarged.

1 Cor. 4:14.

14 *Be not unequally yoked with unbelievers: for †what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

Deut. 7:2, 3. 1 Cor. 5:9.

†1 Sam. 5:2, 3. Eph. 5:7, 11.

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath a temple of God with idols? for *we are a temple of the living God; as God hath said, †I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

1 Cor. 3:16. Eph. 2:21, 22.

†Ex. 29:45. Lev. 26:12.

17 *Wherefore come out

from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch no unclean thing, and I will receive you,

Is. 52:11. Chap. 7:1. Rev. 18:4.

18 *And will be a Father to you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

Jer. 31:1, 9. Rev. 21:7.

CHAPTER 7.

Having *therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from every pollution of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

Chap. 6:17, 18. 1 John 3:3.

2 Understand us: we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, *we have defrauded no man.

Acts 20:33. Chap. 12:17.

3 I speak not this to condemn you; for *I have already said that ye are in our hearts to live and die together.

Chap. 6:11, 12.

4 *Great is my boldness of speech toward you, †great is my glorying of you; ††I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

Chap. 3:12. †1 Cor. 1:4. Phil. 2:17.

5 For, *when we were come into Macedonia, we had no rest, but †we were troubled on every side; ††without were fightings, within were fears. Chap. 2:13.

†Chap. 4:8. ††Deut. 32:25.

6 Nevertheless *God, that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by †the coming of Titus;

Chap. 1:4. †See Chap 2:13.

7 And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted

in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with an epistle, I do not regret, *though I did regret; for I perceive that the same epistle hath made you sorry, though only for a season.

Chap. 2:4.

9 Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed unto repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that in nothing ye might receive harm from us.

10 For *godly sorrow worketh repentance unto salvation, not to be regretted, †but the sorrow of the world worketh death. 2 Sam. 12:13.

Matt. 26:75. †Prov. 17:22.

11 For behold this very thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what earnest desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, I did it not for the cause of him that had done the wrong, nor for the cause of him that suffered wrong, *but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

Chap. 2:4.

13 Therefore we have been comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy

of Titus, because his spirit
*hath been refreshed by you
all.

Rom. 15:32.

14 For if I have boasted
any thing to him of you, I
was not put to shame; but as
we spake all things to you in
truth, even so our boasting,
which I made before Titus,
is found to be truth.

15 And his inward affec-
tion is more abundantly to-
ward you, whilst he remem-
bereth *the obedience of you
all, how with fear and trem-
bling ye received him.

Chap. 2:9. Phil. 2:12.

16 I rejoyce therefore that
*I have confidence concern-
ing you in all things.

2 Thess. 3:4. Philcm. 8:21.

CHAPTER 8.

Moreover, brethren, we
make known to you of the
grace of God bestowed on the
churches of Macedonia;

2 How that in a great trial
of affliction the abundance
of their joy and *their deep
poverty abounded unto the
riches of their liberality.

Mark 12:44.

3 For according to their
power, I bear testimony, yea,
and beyond their power they
gave willing of themselves;

4 Praying us with much
intreaty that we would re-
ceive the gift, and take upon
us *the fellowship in the
ministering to the saints.

Acts 11:29; 24:17. Rom. 15:25, 26.

5 And this they did, not
as we hoped, but first gave
they their own selves to the
Lord, and unto us by the will
of God.

6 Insomuch that *we ex-
horted Titus, that as he had

begun, so he would also finish
in you the same grace also.

Versc 17. Chap. 12:18.

7 Therefore, as *ye abound
in every thing, in faith, and
utterance, and knowledge,
and in all diligence, and in
your love to us, see †that ye
abound in this grace also.

1 Cor. 1:5; 12:13. †Chap. 9:8.

8 *I speak not by the way
of commandment, but by oc-
casion of the earnestness of
others, and to prove the sin-
cerity of your love. 1 Cor. 7:6.

9 For ye know the grace
of our Lord Jesus Christ,
*that, though he was rich,
yet for your sakes he be-
came poor, that through his
poverty ye might become rich.

Matt. 8:20. Luke 9:58. Phil. 2:6, 7.

10 And herein *I give my
advice: for †this is expedient
for you, who have begun a
year ago, not only to do, but
also to be willing.

1 Cor. 7:25. †Prov. 19:17.

Matt. 10:42. 1 Tim. 6:18, 19.

11 Now therefore perform
the doing also; that as there
was a readiness to will, so
there may be a performance
out of that which ye have.

12 For *if there be first a
willing mind, it is accepted
according to that a man
hath, and not according to
that he hath not.

Mark 12:43, 44. Luke 21:3.

13 I mean not that other
men be eased, and ye bur-
dened;

14 But by an equality,
that now at this time your
abundance may be a supply
for their want, that their
abundance also may be a
supply for your want; that
there may be equality.

15 As it is written: *He that gathered much had nothing over; and he that gathered little had no lack.

Ex. 16:18.

16 But thanks be to God, who put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted *our exhortation; but being very zealous, of his own accord he went unto you.

Verse 6.

18 And we have sent with him *the brother, whose praise in the gospel is spread through all the churches.

Chap. 12:18.

19 And not that only, but who was also *chosen of the churches to travel with us in the matter of this grace, which is administered by us †to the glory of the Lord, and declaration of your ready mind.

1 Cor. 16:3, 4. †Chap. 4:15.

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in the matter of this bounty which is administered by us;

21 *Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

Rom. 12:17. Phil. 4:8. 1 Pet. 2:12.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which he has in you.

23 Whether any do enquire about Titus, he is my partner and fellowhelper concerning you; or our brethren, they are *the messen-

gers of the churches, and of the glory of Christ. Phil. 2:25.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our *glorying on your behalf. Chap. 7:14; 9:2.

CHAPTER 9.

For as touching *the ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you. Acts 11:29. Rom. 15:26.

1 Cor. 16:1. Chap. 8:4. Gal. 2:10.

2 For I know *the readiness of your mind, †for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that ††Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many. Chap. 8:19.

†Chap. 8:24. ††Chap. 8:10.

3 *Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready;

Chap. 8:6, 17, 18, 22.

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, we, that we say not, ye should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to entreat the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand your bounty, whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready, as a matter of bounty and not as of covetousness.

Gen. 33:11.

1 Sam. 25:27. 2 Kings 5:15.

(Epistle on St. Laurentius' Day. Verses 6-10.)

6 *But this I say, He that soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he that

soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. Prov. 11:24; 19:17; 22:9. Gal. 6:7, 9.

7 Let each one give according as he purposeth in his heart; *not grudgingly, or of necessity, for †God loveth a cheerful giver.

Deut. 15:7.
†Ex. 25:2; 35:5. Prov. 11:25.

8 *And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound unto every good work;

Prov. 11:24, 25; 28:27. Phil. 4:19.

9 As it is written: *He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor, his righteousness abideth for ever.

Ps. 112:9.

¶II

10 Now he that *supplieth seed to the sower, and bread for food, will supply and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your †righteousness.

Is. 55:10. †Hos. 10:12. Matt. 6:1.

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, *which worketh through us thanksgiving to God.

Chap. 1:11; 4:15.

12 For the ministration of this service not only *supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God;

Chap. 8:14.

13 While by the experiment of this ministration they *glorify God for your professed submission unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal †distribution unto them, and unto all men;

Matt. 5:16. †Heb. 13:16.

14 And by their prayer for you, who long after you for

the exceeding *grace of God in you.

Chap. 8:1.

15 Thanks be to God *for his unspeakable gift.

James 1:17.

CHAPTER 10.

Now *I Paul myself beseech you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, †who in your presence am lowly among you, but being absent am bold toward you.

Rom. 12:1.

†Verse 10. Chap. 12:5, 7, 9.

2 But I beseech you, *that I may not be bold when I am present with that confidence, wherewith I think to be bold against some, which think of us as if we walked according to the flesh.

1 Cor. 4:21. Chap. 13:2, 10.

3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh:

4 *For the weapons **of our warfare are not carnal, but †mighty through God ††to the pulling down of strongholds;

Eph. 6:13. ** 1 Tim. 1:18. †Acts 7:22. 1 Cor. 2:5. ††Jer. 1:10.

5 *Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

1 Cor. 1:19; 3:19.

6 *And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when †your obedience is fulfilled.

Chap. 13:2, 10. †Chap. 2:9; 7:15.

¶II

7 *Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? †If any man trust to himself that he is Christ's, let him of himself think this

again, that, as he is Christ's, even so are ††we Christ's.

John 7:24. Chap. 5:12.

†1 Cor. 14:37. ††1 Cor. 3:23; 9:1.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more *of our authority, which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction, †I should not be put to shame;

Chap. 13:10. †Chap. 7:14; 12:6.

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by my letters.

10 For his letters, they say, are weighty and powerful; but *his bodily presence is weak, and his †speech contemptible.

1 Cor. 2:3, 4.

Chap. 12:5, 7, 9. †1 Cor. 1:17.

11 Let such an one think this, that, such as we are in word by letters when we are absent, such will we be also in deed when we are present.

12 *For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.

Chap. 3:1; 5:12.

13 *But we will not boast of things beyond our measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

Verse 15.

14 For we stretch not ourselves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you; *for we are come as far as to you also in preaching the gospel of Christ. 1 Cor. 3:5, 10; 4:15; 9:1.

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, *in other men's labours; but having hope, that when your faith is increased, we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly.

Rom. 15:20.

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to glory in another man's line of things made ready to our hand.

17 *But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

Is. 65:16. Jer. 9:24. 1 Cor. 1:31.

18 For *not he that commendeth himself is approved, but †whom the Lord commendeth.

Prov. 27:2.

†Rom. 2:28. 1 Cor. 4:5.

CHAPTER 11.

Would to God ye that could bear with me a little in *my folly: and indeed bear with me. Verse 16. Chap. 5:18.

2 For I am *jealous over you with godly jealousy: for **I have espoused you to one husband, †that I may present you ††as a pure virgin to Christ.

Gal. 4:17, 18. **Rom. 2:19, 20.

†Col. 1:28. ††Lev. 21:13.

3 But I fear, lest by any means, as *the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds †should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

Gen. 3:4. John 8:44.

†Eph. 6:24. Col. 2:4, 8, 18.

4 For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or *another gospel, which ye have not accepted,

ye might well bear with him.

Gal. 1:7, 8.

5 For I suppose *I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles.

1 Cor. 15:10. Chap. 12:11. Gal. 2:6.

6 But though *I be rude in speech, yet not *in* knowledge; but *††*we have been thoroughly made manifest among you in all things.

1 Cor. 1:17; 2:1, 13.

†Eph. 3:4. ††Chap. 4:2; 5:11.

7 Or have I committed an offence *in abasing myself that ye might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God free of charge?

Acts 18:3. 1 Cor. 9:6, 12.

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages of them, to do you service.

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, *I was chargable to no man: for that which was lacking to me *†*the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied; and in all things I have kept myself *††*from being burdensome unto you, and so will I keep myself.

Acts 20:33. Chap. 12:13. †Phil. 4:10, 15, 16. ††Chap. 12:14, 16.

10 *As the truth of Christ is in me, *†*no one shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

Rom. 9:1. †1 Cor. 9:15.

11 Wherefore? *because I love you not? God knoweth.

Chap. 6:11; 7:3; 12:15.

¶II

12 But what I do, that I will do, *that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

1 Cor. 9:12.

13 For such *are false apostles, *†*deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.

Acts 15:24. Rom. 16:18. Gal. 1:7; 6:12. †Chap. 2:17. Phil. 3:2.

14 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into *an angel of light.

Gal. 1:8.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the *ministers of righteousness; *†*whose end shall be according to their works.

Chap. 3:9. †Phil. 3:19.

¶III

16 *I say again, Let no man think me foolish if otherwise, yet as foolish receive me, that I may boast myself a little.

Verse 1. Chap. 12:6, 11.

17 That which I speak, *I speak it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly, *†*in this confidence of boasting.

1 Cor. 7:6, 12. †Chap. 9:4.

18 *Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

Phil. 3:3, 4.

(Epistle Sunday Septuagesima. Verse 19 to Verse 9, Chap. 12.)

19 For ye suffer fools gladly, *seeing ye yourselves are wise.

1 Cor. 4:10.

20 For ye suffer, *if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

Gal. 2:4; 4:9.

21 I speak as concerning reproach, *as though we had been weak. Howbeit *†*whereinsoever any is bold, I speak foolishly, I am bold also.

Chap. 10:10. †Phil 3:4.

22 Are they Hebrews?

* so am I. Are they Israelites? so am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? so am I.
Acts 22:3. Rom. 11:1. Phil. 3:5.

23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speak as a fool, I am more; *in labours more abundant, †in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, ††in deaths oft.

1 Cor. 15:10. †Acts 9:16; 20:23.
††1 Cor. 15:30, 31, 32.

24 Of the Jews five times received I *forty stripes save one.
Deut. 25:3.

25 Thrice was I *beaten with rods, †once was I stoned, thrice I ††suffered shipwreck, a night and a day have I been in the deep.

Acts 16:22.
†Acts 14:19. ††Acts 27:41.

26 In journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, *in perils from mine own countrymen, †in perils from the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; Acts 9:23; 13:50; 14:5; 17:5. †Acts 14:5; 19:23.

27 In weariness and painfulness, *in watchings often, †in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.
Acts 20:31.
Chap. 6:5. †1 Cor. 4:11.

28 Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, *the care of all the churches.
Rom. 1:14.

29 *Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

1 Cor. 8:13; 9:22.

¶IV

30 If I must needs glory, *I will glory of the things

which concern mine infirmities.

Chap. 12:5, 9, 10.

31 *The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, †which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

Rom. 1:9; 9:1. Chap. 1:23.
Gal. 1:20. †Rom 9:5.

32 *In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king kept the city of the Damascenes with a garrison, desirous to apprehend me;

Acts 9:24, 25.

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAPTER 12.

It is not expedient for me doubtless to glory. I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man *in Christ fourteen years ago, whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth; such an one †caught up to the third heaven.

Rom. 16:7. Chap. 5:17.
Gal. 1:22. †Acts 22:17.

3 *And I knew such a man, whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;

Acts 14:6.

4 How that he was caught up into *paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

Luke 23:43.

5 Of such an one will I glory; *yet of myself I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

Chap. 11:30.

6 For *though I would desire to glory, I shall not be foolish; for I will say the truth: but now I forbear, lest any man should think

of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me.

Chap. 10:8; 11:16.

7. And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a *thorn in the flesh, †the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

Gal. 4:13, 14. †Job 2:7. Luke 13:16.

8 *For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

Deut. 3:23-27. Matt. 26:44.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore *will I rather glory in my infirmities, †that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

Chap. 11:30. †1 Pet. 4:14.

10 Therefore *I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake; †for when I am weak, then am I strong.

Rom. 5:3. Chap. 7:4. †Chap. 13:4.

11 I am become *foolish in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended by you; for †in nothing am I behind the very chieftest apostles, though ††I be nothing.

Chap. 11:1, 16, 17. †Chap. 11:5.

††1 Cor. 3:7; 15:8, 9.

12 *Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

Rom. 15:18, 19.

1 Cor. 9:2. Chap. 4:2; 6:4; 11:6.

13 *For what is it wherein

ye were inferior to other churches, except it be that †I myself was not burdensome to you? forgive me ††this wrong!

1 Cor. 1:7. †1 Cor. 9:12.

Chap. 11:9. ††Chap. 11:7.

14 *Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you: for †I seek not yours, but you: ††for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

Chap. 13:1. †Acts 20:33. 1 Cor.

10:33. ††1 Cor. 4:14, 15.

15 And *I will very gladly spend and be spent †for you: though ††the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

Phil. 2:17.

1 Thess. 2:8. †John 10:11. Chap.

1:6. Col. 1:24. 2 Tim. 2:10.

16 But be it so, *I did not burden you; nevertheless, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

Chap. 11:9.

17 *Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

Chap. 7:2.

18 *I desired Titus, and with him I sent a †brother. Did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

Chap. 8:6, 16, 22. †Chap. 8:18.

19 *Again, think ye that we excuse ourselves unto you? †we speak before God in Christ: ††but we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

Chap. 5:12. †Rom. 9:1.

Chap. 11:31. ††1 Cor. 10:33.

20 For I fear, lest, when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and that *I shall be found unto you such as ye would not; lest

there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults;

1 Cor. 4:21. Chap. 10:2; 13:2, 10.

21. And lest, when I come again, my God *will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many †who have sinned already, and not repented of the uncleanness and †fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed. Chap. 2:1, 4.

†Chap. 13:2. ††1 Cor. 5:1.

CHAPTER 13.

This is *the third time I am coming to you. †In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

Chap. 12:14. †Num. 35:30. Deut. 17:6; 19:15. Matt. 18:16.

2 *I told you before, and foretell you, as if I were present, the second time; and being absent now I write to them †which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that, if I come again, ††I will not spare. Chap. 10:2.

†Chap. 12:21. ††Chap. 1:23.

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ *speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is powerful †in you.

Matt. 10:20.

1 Cor. 5:4. †1 Cor. 9:2.

4 *For though he was crucified through weakness, yet †he liveth by the power of God. For ††we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you. Phil. 2:7, 8.

†Rom. 6:4. ††Chap. 10:3, 4.

5 *Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves.

Know ye not your own selves, †how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be ††reprobate? 1 Cor. 11:28.

†Rom. 8:10. ††1 Cor. 9:27.

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though *we be as reprobates. Chap. 6:9.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad, *when we are weak, and ye are strong; and this also we wish, †even your perfection.

1 Cor. 4:10. Chap. 11:30;

12:5, 9, 10. †1 Thess. 3:10.

10 *Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present †I should use sharpness, ††according to the authority which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.

1 Cor. 4:21.

Chap. 2:3. †Titus 1:13.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, *be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love †and peace shall be with you.

Rom. 12:16, 18; 15:5.

1 Cor. 1:10. †Rom. 15:33.

12 *Greet one another with an holy kiss. Rom. 16:16.

1 Cor. 16:20. 1 Pet. 5:14.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 *The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and †the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

Rom. 16:24. †Phil. 2:1.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE GALATIANS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, an apostle, *not from men, neither through man, but †through Jesus Christ, and God our Father, **who raised him from the dead;

*Verses 11, 12.
**Acts 9:6; 22:10, 15, 21.
†Acts 2:24.

2 And all the brethren *which are with me, †unto the churches of Galatia:

*Phil. 2:22; 4:21. †1 Cor. 16:1.

3 *Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,

*Rom. 1:7. 1 Cor. 1:3. 2 Cor. 1:2. Eph. 1:2. 2 Thess. 1:2.

4 *Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us †out of the present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father; *Matt. 20:28. Rom. 4:25. Chap. 2:20. †Is. 65:17. John 15:19; 17:14.

5 To whom be all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

¶II.

6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed *from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel;

*Chap. 5:8.

7 *Which is not another gospel but there are some †that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

*2 Cor. 11:4. †Acts 15:1, 24. 2 Cor. 2:17. Chap. 5:10, 12.

8 But though *we, or an angel from heaven should preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. *1 Cor. 16:22.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, if any man preacheth any gospel unto you other *than that ye have received, let him be accursed. *Deut. 4:2. Prov. 30:6. Rev. 22:18.

¶III.

10 For *do I now †persuade men, or God? or **do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

†1 Sam. 24:7. Matt. 28:14. **1 Thess. 2:4. James 4:4.

11 *But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached by me is not after man. *1 Cor. 15:1.

12 For *I neither received it from man, neither was I taught it, but †through the revelation of Jesus Christ.

*Verse 1. 1 Cor. 15:1, 3. †Eph. 3:3.

13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, how that *beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and †wasted it; *Acts 9:1; 22:4; 26:11. 1 Tim. 1:13. †Acts 8:3.

14 And I advanced in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own na-

tion, *being more exceedingly zealous †of the traditions of my fathers.

*Acts 22:3. Phil 3:6.
†Jer. 9:14. Matt. 15:2. Mark 7:5.

15 But when it pleased God, *who separated me even from my very beginning, and called me by his grace,

*Is. 49:1. 5. Jer. 1:5. Acts 9:15.

16 *To reveal his Son in me, that †I might preach him among the gentiles; immediately I conferred not with **flesh and blood:

*2 Cor. 4:6. †Acts 9:15; 22:21. Eph. 3:8. **Matt. 16:17. Eph. 6:12.

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them who were apostles before me; but I went away into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

18 Then after three years *I went up to Jerusalem to visit Peter, and abode with him fifteen days. *Acts 9:26.

19 But *other of the apostles saw I none, save †James the Lord's brother. *1 Cor. 9:5. †Matt. 13:55. Mark 6:3.

20 Now as touching the things which I write unto you, *behold, before God, I speak the truth. *Rom. 9:1.

21 *Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia; *Acts 9:30.

22 And was still unknown by face *unto the churches of Judæa which †were in Christ:

*1 Thess. 2:14. †Rom. 16:7.

23 But all they had heard was, That he which persecuted us in times past now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAPTER 2.

1 Then after a space of fourteen years *I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. *Acts 15:2.

2 And I went up by revelation, *and laid before them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of repute, lest by any means †I should run, or had run, in vain. *Acts 15:12.

†Phil. 2:16. 1 Thess. 3:5.

3 But not even Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised;

4 And that because of *false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our †liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, **that they might bring us into bondage:

*Acts 15:1, 24. 2 Cor. 11:26. †Chap. 3:25; 5:1, 13. **2 Cor. 11:20.

5 To whom we gave place in the way of subjection, no, not for an hour; that *the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

*Verse 14. Chap. 3:1.

¶II.

6 But from those *reputed to be somewhat, whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me. †God accepteth no man's person: for those, I say, who were of repute imparted nothing to me;

*Chap. 6:3. †Acts 10:34. Rom. 2:11. **2 Cor. 12:11.

7 But on the contrary, *when they saw that the

gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter;

*Acts 13:46. Rom. 1:5.
1 Tim. 2:7. †1 Thess. 2:4.

8 For he that wrought effectually in Peter unto the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles:

*Acts 9:15; 13:2; 22:21; 26:17, 18.
1 Cor. 15:10. †Chap. 3:5.

9 And James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, gave to me and to Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the Gentiles, and they unto the circumcision.

*Matt. 16:18. Eph. 2:20. Rev. 21:14.
†Rom. 1:5; 12:3, 6; 15:15.

10 Only they would that we should remember the poor; which I also was zealous to do.

*Acts 11:30; 24:17.
Rom. 15:25. 1 Cor. 16:1. 2 Cor. 8:9.

III.

11 But when Peter came to Antioch, I resisted him to the face, because he was not blameless.

*Acts 15:36.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles; but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them that were of the circumcision.

*Acts 10:28; 11:3.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that even Barnabas was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all: If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews? Verse 5.

†1 Tim. 5:20. *Acts 10:28; 11:3.

15 We being Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

*Acts 15:10, 11.
†Matt. 9:11. Eph. 2:3, 12.

16 Yet knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but through the faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed on Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

*Acts 13:38, 39. †Rom. 1:17; 3:22, 28; 8:3 *Ps. 143:2. Rom. 3:20.

17 But if, while seeking to be justified in Christ, we ourselves also have been found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

*1 John 3:8, 9.

18 For if I build up again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.

19 For I through the law have died to the law, that I might live unto God.

*Rom 8:2. †Rom. 6:14. *Rom. 6:11.
2 Cor. 5:15. 1 Thess. 5:10.

20 I am crucified with Christ, nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me, and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith in the Son of

God, ****who loved me, and gave himself for me.**

***Rom. 6:6.**

Chap. 5:24; 6:14. †2 Cor. 5:15; 1 Pet. 4:2. ****Chap. 1:4. Eph. 5:2.**

21 I do not set aside the grace of God; for ***if righteousness come by the law, then Christ died in vain.**

***Chap. 3:21.**

Heb. 7:11. Rom. 11:6. Chap. 5:4.

CHAPTER 3.

1 O ye imprudent Galatians, ***who did bewitch you, that ye should not obey †the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified before you?**

***Chap. 5:7. †Chap. 2:14; 5:7.**

2 This only would I learn from you, Received ye ***the Spirit by the works of the law, †or by the hearing of faith?**

***Verse 14. Acts 2:38; 8:15; 10:47. †Rom. 10:16, 17.**

3 Are ye so unwise? ***having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by †the flesh?**

***Chap. 4:9. †Heb. 7:16; 9:10.**

4 ***Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if indeed it be in vain.**

***Heb. 10:35, 36. 2 John 8.**

5 He therefore ***that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?**

***2 Cor. 3:8.**

6 Even as ***Abraham believed God, and it was reckoned unto him for righteousness.**

***Gen. 15:6.**

Rom. 4:3, 9, 21, 22. James 2:23.

7 Know ye therefore that ***they which are of faith, the**

same are the children of Abraham.

***John 8:39. Rom. 4:11, 12, 16.**

8 And ***the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles through faith, preached beforehand the gospel unto Abraham, saying: †In thee shall all nations be blessed. *Verse 22. Rom. 9:17.**

†Gen. 12:3; 18:18; 22:18.

9 So then they that are of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law are under a curse, for it is written: ***Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.**

***Deut. 27:26. Jer. 11:3.**

11 Now ***that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident; for, †The just shall live by faith.**

***Chap. 2:16.**

12 And ***the law is not of faith, but: †The man that doeth them shall live in them. *Rom. 4:4, 5; 10:5, 6; 11:6. †Lev. 18:5. Ezek. 20:11. Rom. 10:5.**

13 ***Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written: †Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree.**

***Rom. 8:3. 2 Cor. 5:21.**

†Deut. 21:23.

14 ***That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive †the promise of the Spirit through faith.**

***Rom. 4:9, 16.**

†Is. 32:15; 44:3. Jer. 31:33; 32:40. John 7:39. Acts 2:38.

(Epistle on the 13th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 15-22.)

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; *Even a man's covenant, when it hath been confirmed, no one setteth aside, or addeth thereto. *Heb. 9:17.

16 Now *to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is †Christ. *Verse 8. Gen. 12:3, 7; 17:7. †1 Cor. 12:12.

17 Now this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, *which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, †that it should make the promise of none effect. *Ex. 12:40, 41. †Verse 21. Rom. 4:13, 14.

18 For if *the inheritance is of the law, †it is no more of promise; but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

*Rom. 8:17. †Rom. 4:14.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law? *It was added because of transgressions, till †the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was **ordained through angels by the hand †of a mediator.

*John 15:22. Rom. 4:15. †Verse 16. **Acts 7:53. Heb. 2:2. †Ex. 20:19, 21, 22. John 1:17. Acts 7:38.

20 Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, *but God is one. *Rom. 3:29, 30.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid; *for if there had been a law given which could

have given life, verily righteousness should have been of the law. *Chap. 2:21.

22 But *the scripture hath shut up †all under sin, in **that the promise by faith Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

*Verse 8. †Rom. 3:9, 19, 23; 11:32. **Rom. 4:11, 12, 16.

(Epistle on New Year's Day. Verses 23-29.)

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore *the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, †that we might be justified by faith.

*Matt. 5:17. Rom. 10:4. Col. 2:17. †Acts 13:39. Chap. 2:16.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

26 For ye *are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

*John 1:12. Rom. 8:14, 15, 16. Chap. 4:5.

27 For *as many of you as have been baptized into Christ †have put on Christ.

*Rom. 6:3. †Rom. 13:14.

28 *There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all †one in Christ Jesus.

*Rom. 10:12. 1 Cor. 12:13. †John 10:16, 17; 20:21. Eph. 2:14, 15.

29 And *if ye are Christ's then are ye Abraham's seed, and †theirs according to the promise.

*Gen. 21:10, 12. Rom. 9:7. †Rom. 8:17.

CHAPTER 4.

(Epistle on Sunday after Christmas.
Verses 1-7.)

1 Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all;

2 But is under guardians and stewards until the time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, *were in bondage under the rulings of the law. *Col. 2:8, 20. Heb. 9:10.

4 But *when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, †born **of a woman, ††being under the law,

*Gen. 49:10. Mark 1:15. †John 1:14. Rom. 1:3. **Gen. 3:15. Isa. 7:14. Luke 1:31; 2:7. ††Matt. 5:17.

5 *To redeem them which were under the law, †that we might receive the adoption of sons. Matt. 20:28. Chap. 3:13. Eph. 1:7. †John 1:12. Eph. 1:5.

6 And because ye are sons, God sent forth *the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

*Rom. 8:15; 8:15.

7 Wherefore thou art no longer a servant, but a son; *and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

*Rom. 8:16, 17. Chap. 3:29.

¶II.

8 Howbeit then, *when ye knew not God, †ye did service unto them that by nature are no gods. *Eph. 2:12. 1 Thess. 4:5. †Rom. 1:25. 1 Cor. 12:2.

9 But now, that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, †how turn ye

again to **the weak and beggarly rudiments, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

*1 Cor. 8:3; 13:12. 2 Tim. 2:19. †Chap. 3:3. Col. 2:20. **Rom. 8:3.

10 *Ye observe days, and months, and seasons, and years. *Rom. 14:5. Col. 2:16.

11 I am afraid of you, *lest I have bestowed labour upon you in vain.

*Chap. 2:2; 5:2, 4. 1 Thess. 3:5.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are; *ye have done me no wrong at all. *2 Cor. 2:5.

13 But know how *through infirmity of the flesh I preached the gospel unto you †at the first. *1 Cor. 2:3. 2 Cor. 11:80; 12:7, 9. †Chap. 1:6.

14 And my afflictions which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me *as an angel of God, †even as Christ Jesus.

*2 Sam. 19:27. Mal. 2:7. †Matt. 10:40. Luke 10:16.

15 Where is then the blessedness ye spake of? for I bear you record, that, if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your eyes, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, *because I tell you the truth? *Chap. 2:5, 14.

17 They *zealously seek you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might seek them.

*Rom. 10:2. 2 Cor. 11:2.

18 But it is good to be zealously sought always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

19 *My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, *1 Cor. 4:15. Philem. 10. James 1:18.

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you.

III.

(Epistle on the 4th Sunday in Lent. Verses 21-31.)

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, *the one by the bondmaid, †the other by a freewoman.

*Gen. 16:15. †Gen. 21:2.

23 But he who was by the bondwoman *was born after the flesh; †but he by the free-woman was through promise. *Rom. 9:7, 8. †Gen. 18:10; 14:21.

24 Which things are an allegory: for these women are the two covenants; the one from the mount *Sinai, gendering to bondage, which is Agar. *Deut. 33:2.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem that now is, for she is in bondage with her children.

26 But the *Jerusalem that is above is free, which is the mother of us all. *Is. 2:2.

Heb. 12:22. Rev. 3:12; 21:2, 10.

27 For it is written: *Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not; for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband. *Is. 54:1.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the *children of promise.

*Acts 3:26. Rom. 9:8. Chap. 3:29.

29 But as then *he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, †even so it is now.

*Gen. 21:9. †Chap. 5:11; 6:12.

30 Nevertheless what saith *the scripture: †Cast out the bondwoman and her son; for **the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman.

*Chap. 3:8, 22.

†Gen. 21:10, 12. **John 8:35.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, *but of the free.

*John 8:36. Chap. 5:1, 13.

CHAPTER 5.

1 Stand fast therefore in *the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again †with the yoke of bondage.

*John 8:32. Rom. 6:18.

1 Pet. 2:16. †Acts 15:10.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that *if ye be come circumcised, Christ will profit you nothing.

*Acts 15:1. Acts 16:3.

3 For I testify again to every man that becomes circumcised, *that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

*Chap. 3:10.

4 *Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you would be justified by the law; †ye are fallen from grace.

*Rom. 9:31, 32.

Chap. 2:21. †Heb. 12:15.

5 For we, by faith through

the Spirit, *wait for the hope of righteousness.

*Rom. 8:24, 25. 2 Tim. 4:8.

6 For *in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but †faith which worketh through love.

*1 Cor. 7:19.
Col. 3:11. †1 Thess. 1:3.

¶II.

7 Ye *did run well; †who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth?

*1 Cor. 9:24. †Chap. 3:1.

8 This persuasion came not of him *that calleth you.

*Chap. 1:6.

9 *A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

*1 Cor. 5:6; 15:33.

10 *I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded; but †he that troubleth you **shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be.

*2 Cor. 2:3; 8:22.
†Chap. 1:7. **2 Cor. 10:6.

11 *But I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, †why do I yet suffer persecution? then is **the offence of the cross ceased.

*Chap. 6:12. †1 Cor. 15:30.
Chap. 4:29; 6:17. **1 Cor. 1:23.

12 *I would they were even cut off †which trouble you.

*Josh. 7:25. 1 Cor. 5:13.
Chap. 1:8, 9. †Acts 15:1, 2, 24.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only *use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but †by love serve one another.

*1 Cor. 8:9. 1 Pet. 2:16. 2 Pet. 2:19. Jude 4. †1 Cor. 9:19. Chap. 6:2.

14 For *the whole law is

fulfilled in one word, even in this; †Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

*Matt. 7:12; 22:40. James 2:8.
†Lev. 19:18. Matt. 22:39.

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

¶III.

(Epistle on the 14th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 16-24.)

16 But this I say; *Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

*Verse 25. Rom. 6:12;
8:1, 4; 13:14. 1 Pet. 2:11.

17 For *the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary the one to the other; †that ye may not do the things that ye would.
*Rom. 7:23; 8:6, 7. †Rom. 7:15, 19.

18 But *if ye are led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

*Rom. 6:14; 8:2.

19 Now *the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

*1 Cor. 6:13. Eph. 5:3.
Col. 3:5. James 3:14, 15.

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like; of which I told you before, as I have also told you in time past, that *they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

*1 Cor. 6:9.
Eph. 5:5. Col. 3:6. Rev. 22:15.

22 But *the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, †gentleness, **goodness, ††faith,

*John 15:2. †Col. 3:12.
**Rom. 15:14. ††1 Cor. 13:7.

23 Meekness, temperance; *against such there is no law.
*1 Tim. 1:9.

24 And they that are Christ's *have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

*Rom. 6:6; 13:14.
Chap. 2:20. 1 Pet. 2:11.

(Epistle on the 15th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 26 to Chap. 6:10.)

25 *If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

*Verse 16. Rom. 8:4, 5.

26 *Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.
*Phil. 2:3.

CHAPTER 6.

1 Brethren, *if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye †which are spiritual, restore such an one **in the spirit of meekness; considering yourself, ††lest you also be tempted.

*Rom. 14:1; 15:1. James 5:19.
†1 Cor. 2:15. **1 Cor. 4:21.
2 Tim. 2:25. ††1 Cor. 7:5.

2 *Bear ye one another's burden, and so fulfil †the law of Christ.

*Rom. 15:1. Chap. 5:13.
†John 13:14, 15, 34; 15:12.

3 For *if a man thinketh himself to be something, when †he is nothing, he deceiveth himself. *Rom. 12:3. 1 Cor. 8:2.
Chap. 2:6. †2 Cor. 3:5; 12:11.

4 But *let each one prove his own work, and then shall

he have glory in himself alone, and †not in another.

*1 Cor. 11:28.
2 Cor. 13:5. †Luke 18:11.

5 For *each one shall bear his own burden.

*Rom 2:6. 1 Cor. 8:8.

6 But *let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.

*Rom. 15:27. 1 Cor. 9:11, 14.

7 *Be not deceived: †God is not mocked; for **whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. *1 Cor. 6:9; 15:33.
†Job. 13:9. **Luke 16:25.

8 *For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

*Job. 4:8. Prov. 11:18;
22:8. Hos. 8:7; 10:12.

9 And *let us not be weary in well doing, for in due season we shall reap, †if we faint not.

*1 Cor. 15:58.
†Matt. 24:13. Rev. 2:10.

10 *As we have therefore opportunity, †let us do good unto all, especially unto them who are of **the household of faith. *John 9:4; 12:35.
†1 Thess. 5:15. **Eph. 2:19.

III.

11 See how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, *they constrain you to be circumcised; †only that they should not **suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.

*Chap. 2:3, 14.
†Phil. 3:18. **Chap. 5:11.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to

have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 *But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

*Phil. 3:3, 7, 8.
†Rom. 6:6. Chap. 2:20.

15 For *in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but **†a** new creature.

*1 Cor. 7:19.
Chap. 5:6. †2 Cor. 5:17.

16 *And as many as walk **†**according to this rule, peace be upon them, and mercy, and upon **the Israel of God.

*1s. 125:5.
†Phil. 3:16. **Rom. 2:29; 4:12.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me, for *I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.

*2 Cor. 1:5; 4:10; 11:23. Chap. 5:11. Col. 1:24.

18 Brethren, *the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

*2 Tim. 4:22. Philem. 25.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ *by the will of God, †to the Saints which are at Ephesus, **and the faithful in Christ Jesus:

*2 Cor. 1:1. †Rom. 1:7. 2 Cor. 1:1. **1 Cor. 4:17. Col. 1:2.

2 *Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Gal. 1:3. Titus 1:4.

¶II.

(Epistle on St. Thomas Day. Verses 3-6.)

3 *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with every spiritual blessing in heavenly places in Christ.

*2 Cor. 1:3. 1 Pet. 1:3.

4 According as *he chose us in him †before the foundation of the world, that we should **be holy and without blemish before him in love. *Rom. 8:28.

2 Thess. 2:13. †1 Pet. 1:2, 20.

**Luke 1:75. Chap. 2:10; 5:27.

5 *Having predestinated us unto †the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, **according to the good pleasure of his will,

*Verse 11. Rom. 8:29, 30. †John 1:12. Rom. 8:15; 2 Cor. 6:18. **Verse 9. Matt. 11:26.

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, *wherein he hath made us accepted in †the Beloved.

*Rom. 3:24; 5:15. †Matt. 3:17; 17:5. John 3:35; 10:17.

7 *In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to †the riches of his grace.

*Acts 20:28. Rom. 3:24. 1 Pet. 1:18, 19. Rev. 5:9. †Rom. 2:4; 3:24; 9:23.

8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

9 *Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure †which he purposed in himself:

*Rom. 16:25. Chap. 3:4, 9. Col. 1:26. †Chap. 3:11. 2 Tim. 1:9.

10 That in the dispensation of *the fulness of times †he might gather together in one **all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him:

*Gal. 4:4. 1 Pet. 1:20. †1 Cor. 3:22, 23; 11:3. **Phil. 2:9, 10. Col. 1:20.

11 *In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, †being predestinated according to **the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will,

*Acts 20:32; 26:18. Rom. 8:17. Col. 1:12. †Verse 5. **Is. 46:10, 11.

12 *That we should be to the praise of his glory, †who before this had hoped in Christ.

*Verses 6, 14. 2 Thess. 2:13. †James 1:18.

13 In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard *the word

of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom after ye believed, †ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise.

*John 1:17.

2 Cor. 6:7. †2 Cor. 1:22.

14 *Which is the earnest of our inheritance †unto the redemption of **the purchased possession, to the praise of his glory.

*2 Cor. 1:22; 5:5. †Luke 21:28.

Rom. 8:23. **Acts 20:28.

15 Wherefore I also, *after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, *Col. 1:4. Philem. 5.

16 *Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

*Rom. 1:9. Phil. 1:3, 4. Col. 1:3.

17 That *the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, †may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him; *John 20:17. †Col. 1:9.

18 *The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is †the hope of his calling, and the riches of the glory of his **inheritance in the saints,

*Acts 26:18.

†Chap. 2:12; 4:4. **Verse 11.

19 And what the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, *according to the working of his mighty power.

*Chap. 3:7. Col. 1:29; 2:12.

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when *he raised him from the dead, and †made him sit at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

*Acts 2:24, 33. †Ps. 110:1.

Acts 7:55, 56. Col. 3:1.

21 *Far above all †princi-

pality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come,

*Phil. 2:9, 10. Col. 2:10.

Heb. 1:4. †Rom. 8:38.

22 And *hath put all things under his feet, and gave him †to be the head over all things to the church,

*Ps. 8:6. Matt. 28:18. 1 Cor.

15:27. †Col. 1:18. Heb. 2:7.

23 *Which is his body, †the fulness of him **that filleth all in all.

*Rom. 12:5. 1 Cor. 12:12, 27. †Col.

2:9. **1 Cor. 12:6. Col. 3:11.

CHAPTER 2.

1 And *you hath he made alive †who were dead in trespasses and sins;

*John 5:24. Col. 2:13.

†Verse 5. Chap. 4:13.

2 *Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to †the prince of the power of air, the spirit that now worketh in **the children of disobedience;

*1 Cor. 6:11. Col. 1:21; 3:7. †Chap.

6:12. **Chap. 5:6. Col. 3:6.

3 *Among whom also we all had our manner of life in times past in †the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and **were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

*Titus 3:3. 1 Pet. 4:3.

†Gal. 5:16. **Ps. 51:5.

4 But God, *being rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us.

*Verse 7. Rom. 10:12. Chap. 1:7.

5 *Even when we were dead in sins, hath †given us

life together with Christ; for by grace ye are saved.

*Verse 1. Rom. 5:6, 8, 10.
†Rom. 6:4, 5. Col. 2:12.

6 And hath raised us up with him, and made us sit with him *in heavenly places in Christ Jesus, *Chap. 1:20.

7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in *his kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. *Titus 3:4.

8 *For by grace have ye been saved †through faith, and that not of yourselves, **it is the gift of God;

*Rom. 3:24, 2 Tim. 1:9.
†Rom. 4:16. **Math. 16:17;
Rom. 10:14, 15, 17. Phil. 1:29.

9 *Not of works, lest any man should boast.

*Rom. 3:20, 27, 28; 4:2; 9:11;
11:6. 1 Cor. 1:29, 30, 31.

10 For we are *his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, unto which God hath before ordained us that we should walk in them.

*Deut. 32:6. Ps. 100:3. Is. 19:25; 29:23; 44:21. John 3:8, 5. 1 Cor. 3:9.

¶II.

11 Wherefore *remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called †the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands;

*1 Cor. 12:2. Chap. 5:8. Col. 1:21; 2:13. †Rom. 2:28, 29.

12 *That at that time ye were without Christ, †being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from **the covenants of promise, ††having no hope,

***and without God in the world;

*Chap. 4:18.
Col. 1:21. †Ezek. 13:9. **Rom. 9:4, 8. ††1 Thess. 4:13. ***Gal. 4:8. 1 Thess. 4:15.

13 *But now being in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were †far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

*Gal. 3:28.
†Verse 17. Acts 2:39.

14 For *he is our peace, †who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us;

*Mic. 5:5. John 16:33. Acts 10:36.
Col. 1:20. †John 10:16. Gal. 3:28.

15 *Having abolished †in his flesh the enmity, the law of commandments contained in ordinances that he might make in himself one **new man of the two, so making peace;

*Col. 2:14, 20.
†Col. 1:22. **2 Cor. 5:17.

16 And that he might *reconcile both unto God in one body through the cross, †having slain the enmity thereby;

*Col. 1:20, 21, 22.
†Rom. 6:6; 8:3. Col. 2:14.

17 And came *and preached peace to you that were afar off, and to †them that were nigh.

*Verses 13, 14.
Is. 57:19. Zech. 9:10. Acts 2:39; 10:36. Rom. 5:1. †Ps. 148:14.

18 For *through him we both have access †by one Spirit unto the Father.

*John 10:9; 14:6.
Rom. 5:2. Chap. 3:12. 1 Pet. 3:18. †1 Cor. 12:13.

¶III.

(Epistle on the day of St. Philip and James. Verses 19-22.)

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and for-

eigners, but *fellowcitizens with the saints, and of †the household of God;

*Phil. 3:20. Heb. 12:22, 23. †Gal. 6:10. Chap. 3:15.

20 And are *built †upon the foundation of the **apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being ††the chief corner stone;

*1 Cor. 3:9, 10. 1 Pet. 2:4, 5. †Matt. 16:18. Rev. 21:14. **1 Cor. 12:28. ††Ps. 118:22. Is. 28:16.

21 *In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth into †a holy temple in the Lord. *Chap. 4:15, 16.

†1 Cor. 3:17; 6:19. 2 Cor. 6:16.

22 *In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

*1 Pet. 2:5.

CHAPTER 3.

1 For this cause I Paul, *the prisoner of Jesus Christ †for you Gentiles,

*Acts 21:33. Chap. 4:1. Phil. 1:7, 13, 14, 16. †Gal. 5:11. Col. 1:24.

2 If ye have heard of *the dispensation of the grace of God †which is given me to you-ward,

*Rom. 1:5. 1 Cor. 4:1; Chap. 4:7. †Verse 8. Acts 9:15. Gal. 1:16.

3 *How that †by revelation **was made known unto me the mystery; ††as I wrote afore in a few words,

*Acts 22:17, 21. †Gal. 1:12. **Rom. 16:25. ††Chap. 1:9, 10.

4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may perceive my knowledge *in the mystery of Christ, *1 Cor. 4:1. Chap. 6:19.

5 *Which in other generations was not made known unto the sons of men, †as it is now revealed unto his holy

apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

*Verse 9. Acts 10:28. Rom. 16:25. †Chap. 2:20.

6 To wit that the Gentiles *are fellowheirs, and †of the same body, and **partakers of his promise in Christ through the gospel,

*Gal. 3:28. Chap. 2:14. †Chap. 2:15, 16. **Gal. 3:14.

7 *Whereof I was made a minister, †according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by **the effectual working of his power.

*Rom. 15:16. Col. 1:23, 25. †Rom. 1:5. **Rom. 15:18.

8 Unto me, *who am less than the least of all saints, was this grace given, that †I should preach among the Gentiles **the unsearchable riches of Christ;

*1 Cor. 15:9. †Gal. 1:16; 2:8, 1 Tim. 2:7. **Chap. 1:7. Col. 1:27.

9 And to make all men see what is the dispensation of *the mystery, †which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, **who created all things by Jesus Christ,

*Verse 3. Chap. 1:9. †Verse 5. Rom. 16:25. 1 Cor. 2:7. **Ps. 33:6. John 1:3. Col. 1:16.

10 *To the intent that now †unto the principalities and powers in the heavenly places **might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

*1 Pet. 1:12. †Rom. 8:38. Chap. 1:21. 1 Pet. 3:22. **1 Cor. 2:7. 1 Tim. 3:16.

11 *According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord;

*Chap. 1:9.

12 In whom we have boldness and *access †with confidence by the faith of him.

*Chap. 2:18. †Heb. 4:16.

III.

(Epistle on the 16th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 13-21.)

13 *Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations †for you, **which are your glory.

*Acts 14:22. Phil. 1:14. 1 Thess. 3:3. †Verse 1. **2 Cor. 1:6.

14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 From whom *the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

*Chap. 1:10. Phil. 2:9, 10, 11.

16 That he would grant you, *according to the riches of his glory, †to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in **the inner man;

*Rom. 9:23.

Chap. 1:7. Phil. 4:19. †Chap. 6:10. Col. 1:11. **Rom. 7:22.

17 *That Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that ye, †being rooted and grounded in love, *John 14:23.

Chap. 2:22. †Col. 1:23; 2:7.

18 *May be able to comprehend with all saints †what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

*Chap. 1:18. †Rom. 10:3, 11, 12.

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled *with all the fulness of God.

*John 1:16. Chap. 1:23. Col. 2:9, 10.

20 Now *unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly †above all that we ask or think, **according to the power that worketh in us,

*Rom. 16:25. Jude 24.

†1 Cor. 2:9. **Verse 7. Col. 1:29.

21 *Unto him be glory in the church in Christ Jesus

throughout all generations, world without end. Amen.

*Rom. 11:36; 16:27. Heb. 13:21.

CHAPTER 4.

1 I therefore, *the prisoner in the Lord, beseech you that ye †walk worthy of the calling wherewith ye were called,

*Chap. 3:1. Philem. 1:9.

†Phil. 1:27. Col. 1:10.

2 *With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; *Acts 20:19. Gal. 5:22, 23.

3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit *in the bond of peace. *Col. 3:14.

4 *There is one body, and †one Spirit, even as ye were called in one **hope of your calling;

*Rom. 12:5. 1 Cor. 12:12, 13.

†1 Cor. 12:4, 11. **Chap. 1:18.

5 *One Lord, †one faith, **one baptism,

*1 Cor. 1:13; 8:6; 12:5. †Verse

13. Jude 3. **Gal. 3:27, 28.

6 *One God and Father of all, who is above all, and †through all, and in all.

*Mal. 2:10.

1 Cor. 8:6; 12:6. †Rom. 11:36.

7 But *unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

*Rom. 12:3, 6. 1 Cor. 12:11.

8 Wherefore he saith, *When he ascended on high, †he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

*Ps. 68:18. †Judg. 5:12. Col. 2:15.

9 *Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

*John 3:13; 6:33, 62.

10 He that descended is the

same also *that ascended far above the heavens, †that he might fill all things.

*Acts 1:9, 11. 1 Tim. 3:16. Heb. 4:14; 7:26. †Acts 2:33.

11 *And he gave some, to be apostles; and some, prophets; and some, †evangelists; and some, **pastors and ††teachers;

*1 Cor. 12:28. †Acts 21:8. **Acts 20:28. ††Rom. 12:7.

12 *For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, †for the building up of **the body of Christ.

*1 Cor. 12:7. †1 Cor. 14:26. **Col. 1:24.

13 Till we all come unto the unity of the faith, *and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto †a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ;

*Col. 2:2. †1 Cor. 14:20. Col. 1:28.

14 That we henceforth be no longer *children, †tossed to and fro, and carried about with every **wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, in cunning craftiness, ††whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

*Is. 28:9. 1 Cor. 14:20. †Heb. 13:9. **Matt. 11:7. ††Rom. 16:18.

15 But *speaking the truth in love, †may grow up into him in all things, **who is the head, even Christ,

*Zech 8:16. 2 Cor. 4:2. 1 John 3:18. †Chap. 1:22. **Col. 1:18.

16 *From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body

unto the edifying of itself in love.

*Col. 2:19.

III.

17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that *ye henceforth walk no longer as Gentiles walk, †in the vanity of their mind,

*Verse 22. Chap. 2:1, 2, 3. 1 Pet. 4:3. †Rom. 1:21.

18 *Having the understanding darkened, †being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the **blindness of their heart,

*Acts 26:18. †Chap. 2:12. Gal. 4:8. **Rom. 1:21.

19 *Who being past feeling †have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

*1 Tim. 4:2. †Rom. 1:24, 26. 1 Pet. 4:3.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ;

21 *If so be that ye heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus;

*Chap. 1:13.

(Epistle on the 19th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 22-28.)

22 That ye *put away concerning †the former conversation **the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

*Col. 2:11; 3:8, 9. †Verse 17. Chap. 2:2, 3. 1 Pet. 4:3. **Rom. 6:6.

23 That ye *be renewed in the spirit of your mind,

*Rom. 12:2. Col. 3:10.

24 And that ye *put on the new man, which after God †is created in righteousness and true holiness.

*Rom. 6:4. 2 Cor. 5:17. Gal. 6:16. †Chap. 2:10.

III.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, *speak every man truth with his neighbour: for †we are members one of another.

*Verse 15.
Zech 8:16. Col. 3:9. †Rom. 12:5.

26 *Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath;

*Ps. 4:4; 37:8.

27 *Neither give place to the devil.

*2 Cor. 2:10, 11.
James 4:7. 1 Pet. 5:9.

28 Let him that stole steal no more: but rather *let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give †to him that needeth.

*Acts 20:35.
1 Thess. 4:11. †Luke 8:11.

29 *Let nō corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but †that which is good to the use of edifying, **that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

*Matt. 12:36. Chap. 5:4. †Col. 4:6.
1 Thess. 5:11. **Col. 3:16.

30 And *grieve not the holy Spirit of God, †in whom ye are sealed unto the day of **redemption.

*Is. 7:13; 63:10. Ezek. 16:43.
†Chap. 1:18. **Luke 21:28.

31 *Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and †evil speaking, be put away from you, **with all malice.

32 And *be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, †forgiving one another, even as God also for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

*2 Cor. 2:10. Col. 3:12, 13. †Matt. 6:14. Mark 11:25.

CHAPTER 5.

(Epistle on the 3d Sunday after Trinity. Verses 1-9.)

1 Be *ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; *Matt. 5:45. Luke 6:36. Chap. 4:32.

2 And *walk in love, even †as Christ also loved us, and gave himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God **for a sweet-smelling savour.

*John 13:34. 1 Thess. 4:9. †Gal. 1:4. Heb. 7:27. 1 John 3:16.
**Gen. 8:21.

3 But *fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, †let it not even be once named among you, as becometh saints;

*Rom. 6:13. 1 Cor. 6:18. 2 Cor. 12:21. †1 Cor. 5:1.

4 *Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, or jesting, †which are not befitting; but rather giving of thanks.

*Matt. 12:35.
Chap. 4:29. †Rom. 1:28.

5 For this ye surely know, that *no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, †who is an idolater, **hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

*1 Cor. 6:9. Gal. 5:19, 21.
†Col. 3:5. **Gal. 5:21.

6 *Let no man deceive you with vain words; for because of these things †cometh the wrath of God **upon the children of disobedience.

*Jer. 29:8. Matt. 24:4. Col. 2:4, 8.
18. †Rom. 1:18. **Chap. 2:2.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 *For ye were at one time darkness, but †are now light in the Lord; walk as **children of light.

*Is. 9:2. Matt. 4:16. Acts 26:18.
†John 8:12; 12:46. 2 Cor. 3:18. **Luke 16:8.

9 For *the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth,

*Gal. 5:22.

10 *Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

*Rom. 12:2. Phil. 1:10.

1 Thess. 5:21. 1 Tim. 2:3.

11 And *have no fellowship with †the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather **reprove them.

*1 Cor. 5:9, 11; 10:20. †Rom. 6:21. Gal. 6:8. **Lev. 19:17.

12 *For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done by them in secret.

*Verse 3. Rom. 1:24.

13 But *all things that are reprov'd are made manifest by the light; for whatsoever doth make manifest is light.

*John 3:20. Heb. 4:13.

14 Wherefore he saith: *Awake thou that sleepest, and †arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

*Isa. 60:1. Rom. 13:11, 12. †John 5:25. Rom. 6:4, 5.

(Epistle on the 20th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 15-21.)

15 *See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as unwise, but as wise,

*Col. 4:5.

16 *Redeeming the time, †because the days are evil.

*Gal. 6:10. Col. 4:5. †Eccl. 11:2; 12:1. John 12:35. Chap. 6:13.

17 *Wherefore be ye not unwise, but †understanding **what the will of the Lord is.

*Col. 4:5. †Rom. 12:2. **1 Thess. 4:3; 5:18.

¶II.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;

*Prov. 20:1; 23:20, 30. Is. 5:11, 22.

19 Speaking one to another *in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; *Acts 16:25. 1 Cor. 14:26. Col. 3:16. James 5:13.

20 *Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father †in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;

*Ps. 34:1.

Is. 63:7. Col. 3:17. †Heb. 13:15.

21 *Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

*Phil. 2:3. 1 Pet. 5:5.

¶III.

22 *Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

*Gen. 3:16.

1 Cor. 14:34. Col. 3:18.

23 For *the husband is the head of the wife, as †Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of **the body.

*1 Cor. 11:3. †Chap.

1:22; 4:15. **Chap. 1:23.

24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands *in every thing.

*Col. 3:20, 22. Titus 2:9.

¶IV.

25 *Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and †gave himself up for it;

*Col. 3:19. 1 Pet. 3:7. †Verse 2. Acts 20:28.

26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it *with the washing of water †by the word,

*John 3:5. Titus 3:5. Heb. 10:22. 1 John 5:6. †John 15:3; 17:17.

27 *That he might present to himself a glorious church, †not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; **but that

it should be holy and without blemish. *2 Cor. 11:2. Col. 1:22. †Cant. 4:7. **Chap. 1:4.

28 Even so ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.

29 For no man ever hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

30 For *we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

*Gen 2:23. Rom. 12:5. 1 Cor. 6:15.

31 *For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave unto his wife, and they †two shall become one flesh. *Gen. 2:24.

Matt. 19:5. †1 Cor. 6:16.

32 This mystery is great, but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

33 Nevertheless *let each one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she †reverence her husband.

*Verse 25. Col. 3:19. †1 Pet. 3:6.

CHAPTER 6.

1 Children, *obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. *Prov. 23:22. Col. 3:20.

2 *Honor thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise;

*Ex. 20:12. Deut. 5:16; 27:16. Jer. 35:18. Ezek. 22:7.

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

4 And, *ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath, but †bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. *Col. 3:21. †Gen. 18:19.

Deut. 4:9; 6:7, 20; 11:19.

¶II.

5 *Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, †with fear and trembling, **in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ;

*Col. 3:22. 1 Tim. 6:1. †2 Cor. 7:15. **1 Chr. 29:17.

6 *Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;

*Col. 3:22, 23.

7 With good will doing service as unto the Lord, and not unto men,

8 *Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, †whether he be bond or free. *Rom. 2:6.

2 Cor. 5:10. †Gal. 3:28.

9 And, ye *masters, do the same things unto them, †forbearing threatening: knowing that **your Master also is in heaven; †neither is there respect of persons with him.

*Col. 4:1. †Lev. 25:43.

**John 13:13. ††Rom. 2:11.

¶III.

(Epistle on the 21st Sunday after Trinity. Verses 10-17.)

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and *in the power of his might.

*Chap. 1:19; 3:16. Col. 1:11.

11 *Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. *Verse 13. Rom. 13:12. 2 Cor. 6:7. 1 Thess. 5:8.

12 For we wrestle not against *flesh and blood, but againsts †principalities, against powers, against **the rulers of the darkness of

this world, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in heavenly places.

*Matt. 16:17. 1 Cor. 15:50. †Rom. 8:38. **Luke 22:53. John 12:31.

13 *Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand †in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

*Verse 11. 2 Cor. 10:4. †Chap. 5:16.

14 Stand therefore, *having your loins girt about with truth, and †having on the breastplate of righteousness;

*Luke 12:35. 1 Pet. 1:13. †In. 59:17. 2 Cor. 6:7.

15 *And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

*Is. 52:7. Rom. 10:15.

16 Above all, taking *the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

*1 John 5:4.

17 And *take the helmet of salvation, and †the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

*Is. 59:17. 1 Thess. 5:8. †Heb. 4:12. Rev. 1:16.

18 *Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and †watching thereunto with all perseverance and **supplication for all the saints;

*Luke 18:1. Rom. 12:12. †Matt. 26:41. **Chap. 1:16. Phil. 1:4.

19 *And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth †boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel,

*Acts 4:29. Col. 4:3. 2 Thess. 3:1. †2 Cor. 3:12.

20 For which *I am an ambassador †in bonds: that therein **I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

*2 Cor. 5:20. †Acts 26:29; 28:20. Chap. 3:1. **Phil. 1:20. 1 Thess. 2:2.

§IV.

21 But *that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, †Tychicus, the beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things:

*Col. 4:7. †Acts 20:4. 2 Tim. 4:12.

22 *Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts. *Col. 4:3.

23 *Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. *1 Pet. 5:14.

24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ *in sincerity. Amen.

*Titus 2:7.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul and Timotheus the servants of Christ Jesus, to all the saints *in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with bishops and deacons:

*1 Cor. 1:2.

2 *Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Rom. 1:7. 2 Cor. 1:2. 1 Pet. 1:2.

¶II.

(Epistle on the 22nd Sunday after Trinity. Verses 3-11.)

3 *I thank my God upon every remembrance of you,

*Rom. 1:8, 9.

1 Cor. 1:4. Eph. 1:15, 16.

4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy,

5 *For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now;

*Rom. 12:13; 15:26. 2 Cor. 8:1.

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which began *the good work in you will perfect it [†]until the day of Jesus Christ;

*John 6:29.

1 Thess. 1:3. [†]Verse 10.

7 Even as it is right for me to think this of you all, because I have you *in my heart; inasmuch as both in [†]my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers with me of grace.

*2 Cor. 3:2; 7:3. [†]Eph. 3:1; 6:20.

Col. 4:3, 18. 2 Tim. 1:8.

8 For *God is my witness, [†]how greatly I long after you all in the tender mercies of Jesus Christ.

*Rom. 1:9; 9:1. Gal. 1:20.

1 Thess. 2:5. [†]Chap. 2:26; 4:1.

9 And this I pray, *that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and all judgment;

*1 Thess. 3:12. Philem. 6.

10 That *ye may approve things that are excellent; [†]that ye may be sincere and blameless unto the day of Christ;

*Rom. 2:18; 12:2. Eph. 5:10. [†]Acts 24:16. 1 Thess. 3:13; 5:23.

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, *which are through Jesus Christ, [†]unto the glory and praise of God.

*John 15:4, 5. Eph. 2:10. [†]John 15:8.

¶III.

12 But I would have you understand, brethren, that what happened unto me, have tended rather unto the furtherance of the gospel;

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest *in the court of the palace and in other places;

*Chap. 4:22.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach

Christ even through envy and *strife; and some also through good will. *Chap. 2:3.

16 These indeed preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds.

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am appointed for *the defence of the gospel. *Verse 7.

18 What then? notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation *through your prayer, and the supply of †the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

*2Cor. 1:11. †Rom. 8:9.

20 According to my *earnest expectation and hope, that †in nothing I shall be put to shame, but that **with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether by life, or by death. *Rom. 8:19. †Rom. 5:5. **Eph. 6:19, 20.

¶IV.

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22 But to live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour, yet what I shall choose I know not.

23 For *I am in a strait betwixt the two, having a desire to †depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better. *2Cor. 5:8. †2 Tim. 4:6.

24 Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for your sake.

25 And *having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you for your furtherance and joy in the faith; *Chap. 2:24.

26 That *your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me through my coming to you again.

*2 Cor. 1:14; 5:12.

¶V.

27 Only *let your manner of life be worthy of the gospel of Christ; that whether I come and see you, or be absent, I may hear of your state †that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel.

*Eph. 4:1. Col. 1:10.

1 Thess. 2:12; 4:1. †Chap. 4:1.

28 And in nothing terrified by the adversaries, *which is to them an evident token of perdition, †but to you of salvation, and that of God.

*2 Thess. 1:5. †Rom. 8:17.

29 Because to you *it is given in the behalf of Christ, †not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

*Acts 5:41. Rom. 5:3. †Eph. 2:8.

30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

*Acts 16:19, etc.

CHAPTER 2.

1 If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, *if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any †tender mercies and compassions, *2 Cor. 13:14. †Col. 3:12.

2 *Fulfil ye my joy, †that ye be of the same mind hav-

ing the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

*John 3:29.
†Rom. 12:16; 15:5. 1 Cor. 1:10.

3 *Let nothing be done through strife or vain glory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem the other better than themselves.

*Gal. 5:26. Chap. 1:15, 16. James 3:14. †Rom. 12:10, Eph. 5:21. 1 Pet. 5:5.

4 *Look not each one on his own things, but each of you also on the things of others. *1 Cor. 10:24, 33; 13:5.

¶II.

(Epistle on Palm Sunday. Verses 5-11.)

5 *Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, *Matt. 11:29. John 13:15. 1 Pet. 2:21. 1 John 2:6.

6 Who, *being in the form of God, †thought it not robbery to be equal with God; *John 1:1, 2; 17:5. 2 Cor. 4:4. †John 5:18; 10:33.

7 *But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form †of a servant, **being made in the likeness of men.

*Ps. 22:6. Is. 53:3. †Is. 42:1. Zech. 3:8. Matt. 20:28. Luke 22:27. **John 1:14. Rom. 1:3; 8:3.

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and *became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

*Matt. 26:39, 42. John 10:18. Heb. 5:8; 12:2.

9 Wherefore also God highly exalted him, and †given him a name which is above every name,

*John 17:1, 2, 5. Acts 2:33. Heb. 2:9. †Eph. 1:20, 21. Heb. 1:4.

10 *That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and earth, and under the earth; *Is. 45:23. Matt. 29:18. Rom. 14:11. Rev. 5:13.

11 And *that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

*John 13:13. Acts 2:36. Rom. 14:9. 1 Cor. 8:6; 12:3.

¶III.

12 Wherefore, my beloved, *as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with †fear and trembling. *Chap. 1:5. †Eph. 6:5.

13 For *it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. *2 Cor. 3:5. Heb. 13:21.

14 Do all things *without murmurings and †disputings; *1 Cor. 10:10. †Rom. 14:1.

15 That ye may be blameless and harmless, *sons of God, without blemish, †in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world;

*Matt. 5:45. Eph. 5:1. †1 Pet. 2:12. Matt. 5:14, 16. Eph. 5:8.

16 Holding forth the word of life, that *I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that †I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

*2 Cor. 1:14. 1 Thess. 2:19. †Gal. 2:2. 1 Thess. 3:5.

¶IV.

17 Yea, and if *I am offered upon the sacrifice †and service of your faith, **I joy, and rejoice with you all.

*2 Tim. 4:6. †Rom. 15:16. **2 Cor. 7:4.

18 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoice with me.

19 But I hope in the Lord Jesus to send *Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

*Rom. 16:21. 1 Thess. 3:2.

20 For I have no man *like-minded, who will truly care for your state. *Ps. 55:13.

21 For they all *seek their own, not the things which are of Jesus Christ.

*1 Cor. 10:24, 33; 13:5. 2 Tim. 4:10, 16.

22 But ye know the proof of Timotheus, *that, as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

*1 Cor. 4:17. 1 Tim. 1:2. 2 Tim. 1:2.

23 Him therefore I hope to send forthwith, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But *I trust in the Lord that I shall myself also come shortly. *Chap. 1:25. Philem. 22.

25 Yet I deemed it necessary to send to you *Epaphroditus, my brother, and fellowworker, and fellow soldier, but your messenger, and minister to my need.

*Chap. 4:18. †Philem. 2.

26 *For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he was sick. *Chap. 1:8.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death, but God had mercy on him, and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more eagerly, that, when ye

see him again, ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness; and *hold such men in honor;

*1 Cor. 16:18.

1 Thess. 5:12. 1 Tim. 5:17.

30 Because for the work of Christ he came nigh unto death, not regarding his life, *to supply that which was lacking in your service toward me. *1 Cor. 16:17. Chap. 4:10.

CHAPTER 3.

1 Finally, my brethren, *rejoice in the Lord. To be writing the same things to you, to me indeed is not burdensome, but for you it is safe.

*2 Cor. 13:11.

Chap. 4:4. 1 Thess. 5:16.

2 *Beware of the dogs, beware of the evil workers, **beware of the concision.

*Is. 56:10.

†2 Cor. 11:13. **Rom. 2:28.

3 For we are *the circumcision, †which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

*Deut. 10:16; 30:6. Jer. 4:4. Rom. 2:29. †John 4:23. 24. Rom. 7:6.

III.

4 Though *I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more. *2 Cor. 11:18. 21.

5 *Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, †of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; *Gen. 17:12. †2 Cor. 11:22.

6 Concerning zeal, *persecuting the church; †touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

*Acts 8:3; 9:1. †Rom 10:5.

7 But *what things were gain to me, these I counted loss for Christ. *Matt. 13:44.

8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss *for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may gain Christ,

*Is. 53:11. Jer. 9:23, 24. John 17:3.

9 And be found in him, not having *mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but †that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith,

*Rom. 10:3, 5. †Rom. 1:17.

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and *the fellowship of his sufferings, being made comformable unto his death;

*Rom. 6:3, 4, 5;

8:17. 2 Cor. 4:10, 11.

11 If by any means I might *attain unto the resurrection from the dead. *Acts 26:7.

¶III.

12 Not as though I had already *attained, either were already †perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

*1 Tim. 6:12. †Heb. 12:28.

13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, *for getting the things which are behind, and †treaching forth

unto the things which are before.

*Ps. 45:10.

Luke 9:62. †1 Cor. 9:24, 26.

14 *I press toward the mark for the prize of †the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. *2 Tim. 4:7, 8.

Heb. 12:1. †Heb. 8:1.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be *perfect, †be thus minded, and if in any are otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

*1 Cor. 2:6; 14:20. †Gal. 5:10.

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, *let us walk †by the same steps let us mind the same thing.

*Rom. 12:16; 15:5. †Gal. 6:16.

¶IV.

(Epistle on 23d Sunday after Trinity. Verses 17-21.)

17 Brethren, *be followers together of me, and mark them which so walk as †ye have us for an example.

*1 Cor. 4:16; 11:1.

Chap. 4:9. †1 Pet. 5:3.

18 For many walk, of whom I told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are *the enemies of the cross of Christ; *Gal. 1:7;

2:21; 6:12. Chap. 1:16, 16.

19 *Whose end is destruction, †whose God is their belly, and **whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.

*2 Cor. 11:15. 2 Pet. 2:1.

†Rom. 16:18. 1 Tim. 6:5. **Hos. 4:7. 2 Cor. 11:12. Gal. 6:13.

20 For *our conversation is in heaven; †from whence also we **wait for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ,

*Eph. 2:6, 19. †Acts 1:11.

**1 Cor. 1:7. 1 Thess. 1:10.

21 *Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, †according to the working whereby he is able **even to subdue all things unto himself.

*1 Cor. 15:43, 48, 49.
†Eph. 1:19. **1 Cor. 15:26, 27.

CHAPTER 4.

1 Therefore, my brethren dearly beloved and *longed for, †my joy and crown, so **stand fast in the Lord, beloved.

*Chap. 1:8.
†2 Cor. 1:14. **Chap. 1:27.

2 I exhort Euodia, and exhort Syntyche, *to be of the same mind in the Lord.

*Chap. 2:2; 3:16.

3 And I entreat thee also, true yokefellow, help these women for they *laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and other of my fellowlabourers, whose names are in †the book of life.

*Rom. 16: 3. Chap. 1:27. †Ex. 32:32. Ps. 69:28; Rev. 3:5; 13:8; 20:12; 21:27.

(Epistle on 4th Sunday in Advent. Verses 4-7.)

4 *Rejoice in the Lord alway; and again I say, Rejoice.

*Rom. 12: 12.
Chap. 3:1. 1 Pet. 4:13.

5 Let your gentleness be known unto all men. *The Lord is at hand. *Heb. 10:25.
1 Pet. 4:7. 2 Pet. 3:8, 9.

6 *Be anxious in nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

*Ps. 55: 22. Prov. 16:3. 1 Pet. 5:7.

7 And *the peace of God,

which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

*John 14:27. Rom. 5:1. Col. 3:15.

GIL.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, *whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.

*1 Thess. 5:22.

9 *The things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do; and †the God of peace shall be with you.

*Chap. 3:17. †Rom. 15:33; 16:20. 1 Cor. 14:33.

10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last *your thought of me hath revived, wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

*2 Cor. 11:9.

11 Now that I speak in respect of want, for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, *therein to be content.

*1 Tim. 6:6, 8.

12 *I know how to be abased, and I know how to abound; every where and in all things I have learned both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

*1 Cor. 4:11. 2 Cor. 6:10; 11:27.

13 I can do all things *through Christ who strengtheneth me.

*John 15:5. 2 Cor. 12:9.

¶III.

14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that *ye did share with me in my affliction.

*Chap. 1:7.

15 And ye Phillippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, *no church shared with me concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

*2 Cor. 11:8, 9.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my need.

17 Not because I desire a gift, but I desire *fruit that may abound to your account.

*Rom. 15:28. Titus 3:14.

18 But I have all things, and abound: I am full supplied, having received *of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you,

†an odour of a sweet smell, **a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

*Chap. 2:25. †Heb. 13:16. **2 Cor. 9:12.

19 And my God *shall supply all your need †according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

*Ps. 23:1. 2 Cor. 9:8. †Eph. 1:7; 3:16.

¶IV.

20 *Now unto our God and Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

*Rom. 16:27. Gal. 1:5.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren *which are with me salute you.

*Gal. 1:2.

22 All the saints salute you, *especially they that are of Cæsar's household.

*Chap. 1:13.

23 *The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

*Rom. 16:24.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE

COLOSSIANS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, *an apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

*Eph. 1:1.

2 To the saints *and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: †grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*1 Cor. 4:17. Eph. 6:21. †Gal. 1:3.

¶II.

3 *We give thanks to God the Father of our Lord Jesus

Christ, praying always for you.

*1 Cor. 1:4. Eph. 1:16. Phil. 1:3, 4, 6.

4 *Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of †the love which ye have to all the saints,

*Verse 9. Eph. 1:15. Philcm. 5. †Heb. 6:10.

5 For the hope *which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel; *2 Tim. 4:8. 1 Pet. 1:4.

6 Which is come unto you, *as it is in all the world;

and †bringeth forth fruit, as also in you, since the day ye heard and knew **the grace of God in truth:

*Verse 23. Matt. 24:14. Mark 16:15.
†Mark 4:8. **2 Cor. 6:1. Eph. 3:2.

7 As ye also learned of *Epaphras our dear fellow-servant, who is for you †a faithful minister of Christ;

*Chap. 4:12. Philem. 23.
†2 Cor. 11:23.; 1 Tim. 4:6.

8 Who also declared unto us your *love in the Spirit.

*Rom. 15:30.

III.

9 *For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, †that ye may be filled with the knowledge of his will **in all spiritual wisdom and understanding;

*Verses 3. 4. Eph. 1:15, 16.
†1 Cor. 1:5. **Eph. 1:8.

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord †unto all pleasing, **being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God,

*Eph. 4:1. Phil. 1:27. †1 Thess. 4:1.
**John 15:16. 2 Cor. 9:8.

11 *Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, †unto all patience and longsuffering **with joyfulness;

*Eph. 3:16; 6:10.
†Eph. 4:2. **Acts 5:41.

12 *Giving thanks unto the Father, who made us meet to be partakers of †the inheritance of the saints in light,

*Eph. 5:20.
Chap. 3:15. †Acts 26:18.

13 Who delivered us out of *the power of darkness, †and

translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son;

*Eph. 6:12. Heb. 2:14. 1 Pet. 2:9.
†1 Thess. 2:12. 2 Pet. 1:11.

14 *In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

*Eph. 1:7.

15 Who is *the image of the invisible God, †the first-born of all creation,

*2 Cor. 4:4. Heb. 1:3. †Rev. 3:14.

16 For *by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or †dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him;

*John 1:3. 1 Cor. 8:6.
†Rom. 8:38. Eph. 1:21. 1 Pet. 3:22.

17 *And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

*John 1:1, 3; 17:5. 1 Cor. 8:6.

18 And *he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, †the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

*1 Cor. 11:3. Eph. 1:10, 22; 4:15.
†Acts 26:23. Rev. 1:5.

IV.

19 For it pleased the Father that *in him should all fulness dwell;

*John 1:16; 3:34. Chap. 2:9; 3:11.

20 And *having made peace through the blood of his cross, †by him to reconcile **all things unto himself; through him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

*Eph. 2:14, 15, 16.
†2 Cor. 5:18. **Eph. 1:10.

¶V.

21 And you, *that were in time past alienated and enemies in your mind †by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

*Eph. 2:1, 2, 12, 19; 4:18. †Titus 1:15, 16.

22 *In the body of his flesh through death, †to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight.

*Eph. 2:15, 16. †Luke 1:75. Eph. 1:4; 5:27. 1 Thess. 4:7.

23 If ye continue in the faith *grounded and settled, and be †not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, **and which was preached ††in all creation under the heavens; ***whereof I Paul am made a minister;

*Eph. 3:17; Chap. 2:7. †John 15:6. **Rom. 10:18. ††Verse 6. ***Acts 1:17.

24 *Now I rejoice in my sufferings †for you, and fill up **that which is lacking of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church,

*Rom. 5:3. 2 Cor. 7:4. †Eph. 3:1, 13. **2 Cor. 1:5, 6. Phil. 3:10.

25 Whereof I was made a minister, according to *the dispensation of God which was given to me for you, to fulfil the word of God;

*Verse 23. 1 Cor. 9:17. Gal. 2:7. Eph. 3:2. Rom. 15:19.

26 Even *the mystery which hath been hid from all ages and generations, †but now is made manifest to his saints,

*Rom. 16:25. 1 Cor. 2:7. Eph. 3:9. †Matt. 13:11. 2 Tim. 1:10.

27 *To whom God would

make known among the Gentiles; what is †the riches of the glory of this mystery; which is Christ in you, **the hope of glory,

*2 Cor. 2:14. †Rom. 9:23. Eph. 1:7; 3:8. **1 Tim. 1:1.

28 Whom we preach, *warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; †that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus,

*Acts 20:20, 27, 31. †Verse 22. Eph. 5:27.

29 *To which end I also labour, †striving **according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

*1 Cor. 15:10. †Chap. 2:1. **Eph. 1:19; 3:7, 20.

CHAPTER 2.

1 For I wish you to know what great *conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh;

*Phil. 1:30. Chap. 1:29. 1 Thess. 2:2.

2 *That their hearts might be comforted, †being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, **to the full knowledge of the mystery of God, the Father, even Christ;

*2 Cor. 1:6. †Chap. 3:14. **Phil. 3:8. Chap. 1:9.

3 *In whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

*1 Cor. 1:24; 2:6, 7. Eph. 1:8. Chap. 1:9.

¶II.

4 And this I say, *lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

*Verses 8, 18. Rom. 16:18. 2 Cor. 11:13. Eph. 4:14; 5:6.

5 For *though I am absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding †your order, and the **steadfastness of your faith in Christ.

*1 Cor. 5:3. 1 Thess. 2:17.
†1 Cor. 14:40. **1 Pet. 5:9.

6 *As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk in him;

*1 Thess. 4:1. Jude 3.

7 *Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

*Eph. 2:21, 22; 3:17. Chap. 1:23.

¶III.

8 *Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, †the tradition of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

*Verse 18. Jer. 29:8. Rom. 16:17. †Verse 22. Matt. 15:2.

9 For *in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. *John 1:14. Chap. 1:19.

10 *And ye are complete in him, †who is the head of all *principality and power;

*John 1:16. †Eph. 1:20, 21. 1 Pet. 3:22. **Chap. 1:16.

11 In whom ye were also *circumcised with the circumcision not made with hands, in †putting off the body of sins of the flesh in the circumcision of Christ;

*Deut. 10:16; 30:6. Jer. 4:4. Rom. 2:29. †Rom. 6:6. Eph. 4:22.

12 *Buried with him in baptism, wherein also †ye have been raised with him, through **the faith in the

working of God, ††who raised him from the dead.

*Rom. 6:4. †Chap. 3:1.
**Eph. 1:19; 3:7. ††Acts 2:24.

13 *And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he brought to life together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; *Eph. 2:1, 5, 6, 11.

14 *Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; *Eph. 2:15, 16.

15 *Having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

*Gen. 3:15. Ps. 68:18. Is. 53:12.
Matt. 12:29. Luke 10:18; 11:22.

¶IV.

16 Let no one, therefore *judge you †in meat, or in drink, or in respect **of an holyday, or a new moon, or a sabbath day,

*Rom. 14:3, 10, 13. †Rom. 14:2, 17.
1 Cor. 8:8. **Rom. 14:5. Gal. 4:10.

17 *Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

*Heb. 8:5; 9:9; 10:1.

18 *Let no man defraud you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of the angels, intruding into things †which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

*Verse 4. †Ezek. 18:3. 1 Tim. 1:7.

19 And not holding fast *the Head, from whom all the body of joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

*Eph. 4:15, 16.

20 If ye be *dead with Christ from †the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, do you put yourselves under ordinances: *Rom. 6:3, 5; 7:4, 6. Gal. 2:19. †Verse 8.

21 *Touch not, taste not, handle not; *1 Tim. 4:3.

22 Which are all to perish with the using, *after the commandments and doctrines of men?

*Is. 29:13. Matt. 15:9. Titus 1:14.

23 *Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in self imposed worship and humiliations and neglect of the body; but are without value against the satisfying of the flesh. *1 Tim. 4:8.

CHAPTER 3.

1 If ye then *be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where †Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. *Rom. 6:5. Eph. 2:6. †Rom. 8:34. Eph. 1:20.

2 Set your affection on things above, not on things upon the earth.

3 *For ye are dead, †and your life is hid with Christ in God. *Rom. 6:2. Gal. 2:20. Chap. 2:20. †2 Cor. 5:7.

4 *When Christ, who is †our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him **in glory.

*1 John 3:2. †John 11:25; 14:6.

**1 Cor. 15:43. Phil. 3:21.

5 *Mortify therefore †your members which are upon the earth; **fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil desire, and covetousness, ††which is idolatry.

*Rom. 8:13. Gal. 5:24. †Rom. 6:13.

**Eph. 5:3. ††1 Thess. 4:5.

6 *For which things' sake cometh the wrath of God on †the children of disobedience;

*Rom. 1:18. Eph. 5:6. Rev. 22:15. †Eph. 2:2.

7 *In which ye also walked afore time, when ye lived in these things.

*Rom. 6:19, 20; 7:5.

1 Cor. 6:11. Eph. 2:2. Titus 3:3.

8 *But now ye also put away all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, †filthy communication out of your mouth. *Eph. 4:22. Heb. 12:1.

1 Pet. 2:1. †Eph. 4:29; 5:4.

9 *Lie not one to another. †seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

*Lev. 19:11.

Eph. 4:25. †Eph. 4:22, 24.

10 And have put on the new man, being renewed unto knowledge †after the image of him that **created him;

*Rom. 12:2.

†Eph. 4:23, 24. **Eph. 2:10.

11 Where there is neither *Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bondman nor free: †but Christ is all, and in all.

*Rom. 10:12. 1 Cor. 12:13.

Gal. 3:28; 5:6. †Eph. 1:23.

III.

(Epistle 5th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 12-17.)

12 *Put on therefore, †as the elect of God, holy and beloved, **tenderheartedness, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering;

*Eph. 4:24. †1 Thess. 1:4. 1 Pet. 1:2.

**Gal. 5:22. Eph. 4:2, 32.

13 *Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as

Christ forgave you, so also do ye. *Mark 11:25. Eph. 4:2, 32.

14 *And above all these things †put on charity, which is the **bond of perfectness.

*1 Pet. 4:8. †John 13:34. Rom. 12:8. 1 Tim. 1:5.

15 And let *the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, †to the which also ye are called **in one body; and be ye thankful.

*Rom. 14:17. Phil. 4:7.

†1 Cor. 7:15. **Eph. 2:16, 17.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another *with psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing †with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

*1 Cor. 14:26. Eph. 5:19. †Chap. 4:6.

17 And *whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, †giving thanks to God and the Father through him.

*1 Cor. 10:31. †Rom. 1:8. Eph. 5:20. Chap. 1:12; 2:7. 1 Thess. 5:18.

¶III.

18 *Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, †as it is fitting in the Lord.

*Eph. 5:22. Titus 2:5. 1 Pet. 3:1. †Eph. 5:3.

19 *Husbands, love your wives, and be not †bitter against them *Eph. 5:25, 28, 33.

1 Pet. 3:7. †Eph. 4:31.

20 *Children obey your parents †in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

*Eph. 6:1. †Eph. 5:24. Titus 2:9.

21 *Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, that they be not discouraged.

*Eph. 6:4.

22 *Servants, obey in all things your masters †according to the flesh; not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God;

*Eph. 6:5, etc. 1 Tim. 6:1. Titus 2:9. †Philem. 16.

¶IV.

23 *And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men,

*Eph. 6:6, 7.

24 *Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the recompense of the inheritance, †for ye serve the Lord Christ.

*Eph. 6:8. †1 Cor. 7:22.

25 But he that doeth wrong shall receive accordingly for the wrong which he hath done; *there is no respect of persons.

*Rom. 2:11. Eph. 6:9. 1 Pet. 1:17.

CHAPTER 4.

1 *Masters, render unto your servants that which is just and equal; knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

*Eph. 6:9.

2 *Continue in prayer, watching in the same with thanksgiving;

*Luke 18:1. Rom. 12:12. Eph. 6:18. 1 Thess. 5:17, 18.

3 *Withal praying for us also, that God may †open unto us a door of utterance, to speak **the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds.

*Eph. 6:19. 2 Thess. 3:1. †1 Cor. 16:9. **Matt. 13:11. 1 Cor. 4:1.

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 *Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, †redeeming the time. *Eph. 5:16.
1 Thess. 4:12. †Eph. 5:16.

6 Let your speech be always *with grace, †seasoned with salt, **that ye may know how ye ought to answer each one.

*Eccl. 10:12. Chap. 3:16.
†Mark 9:20. **1 Pet. 3:15.

¶II.

7 *All my affairs shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithful minister and fellowservant in the Lord;

*Eph. 6:21.

8 *Whom I have sent unto you for this very purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts;

*Eph. 6:22.

9 Together with *Onesimus, the faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which have been done here. *Philem. 10.

10 *Aristarchus my fellowprisoner saluteth you, and †Marcus, the cousin of Barnabas, concerning whom ye received commandments, if he come unto you, receive him;

*Acts 19:29; 20:4.
27:2. †Acts 15:37. 2 Tim. 4:11.

11 And Jesus, who is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellowworkers unto the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort unto me.

12 *Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always †labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand **perfect and complete in all the will of God.

*Chap. 1:7. Philem.
23. †Rom. 15:30. **Matt. 5:48.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

¶II.

14 *Luke, the beloved physician, and †Demas, salute you.

*2 Tim. 4:11.
†2 Tim. 4:10. Philem. 24.

15 Salute the brethren that are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and *the church which is in their house.

*Rom. 16:5. 1 Cor. 16:19.

16 And when *this epistle has been read among you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

*1 Thess. 5:27.

17 And say to *Archippus, Take heed to †the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

*Philem 2. †1 Tim. 4:6.

¶III.

18 *The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand. †Remember my bonds. **Grace be with you! Amen.

*1 Cor. 16:21.
†Heb. 13:3. **Heb. 13:25.

MEMORANDUM

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, and *Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ: †Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. *2 Cor. 1:12. 1 Pet. 5:12. †Eph. 1:2.

2 *We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers;

*Rom. 1:8. Eph. 1:16. Philem. 4.

3 *Remembering without ceasing †your work of faith, **and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, before God and our Father; *Chap. 2:13. †John 6:29. Gal. 5:6. **Rom. 16:6.

4 Knowing, brethren beloved of God *your election. *Col. 3:12. 2 Thess. 2:13.

5 For *our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and †in the Holy Ghost, **and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

*Mark 16:20. 1 Cor. 2:4. †2 Cor. 6:6. **Col. 2:2.

6 And *ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, †with joy of the Holy Ghost: *1 Cor. 4:16. †Acts 5:41. Heb. 10:34.

7 So that ye became examples to all that believe in Macedonia and in Achaia.

8 For from you *sounded forth the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but †in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak any thing.

*Rom. 10:18.

†Rom. 1:8. 2 Thess. 1:4.

9 For they themselves relate in regard to us *what manner of entering in we had unto you, †and how ye turned unto God from idols to serve the living and true God;

*Chap. 2:1.

†1 Cor. 12:2. Gal. 4:8.

10 And *to wait for his Son †from heaven, **whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, who delivereth us ††from the wrath to come.

*Rom. 2:7. Phil. 3:20. 2 Pet. 3:12. †Acts 1:11. **Acts 2:24 ††Matt. 3:7.

CHAPTER 2.

1 For *yourselves, brethren, know our entering in unto you, that it was not in vain; *Chap. 1:5, 9.

2 But even after we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at *Philippi, †we waxed bold in our God **to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

*Acts 16:22.

†Chap. 1:5. **Acts 17:2.

3 *For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

*Verse 5. 2 Cor. 7:2. 2 Pet. 1:16.

4 But as *we were allowed of God †to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; **not as pleasing men, but God, who trieth our hearts.

*1 Cor. 7:25. 1 Tim. 1:11, 12.
†1 Cor. 9:17. **Gal. 1:10.

5 For *neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness; †God is witness:

*Acts 20:33.
2 Cor. 2:17; 4:2. †Rom. 1:9.

6 *Nor sought we glory of men, neither of you, nor yet of others, when †we might have been **burdensome, ††as apostles of Christ.

*John 5:41, 44. 1 Tim. 5:17. †1 Cor. 9:4, 6. 2 Cor. 10:1, 2, 10. **2 Cor. 11:9. ††1 Cor. 9:1, 2, 5.

7 But *we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her own children:

*1 Cor. 2:3; 9:22.
2 Cor. 13:4. 2 Tim. 2:24.

8 Even so being affectionately desirous of you, we were pleased *to impart unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also †our own souls, because ye were dear unto us.

*Rom. 1:11; 15:29. †2 Cor. 12:15.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail, *labouring night and day, †not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God. *Acts 20:34.

†1 Cor. 4:12. †2 Cor. 12:13, 14.

10 *Ye are witnesses, and God also, †how holily and justly and unblameably we

behaved ourselves among you that believe:

*Chap. 1:5.
†2 Cor. 7:2. 2 Thess. 3:7.

11 As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you as a father his children,

12 *That ye would walk worthy of God, †who hath called you into his kingdom and glory.

*Eph. 4:1. Phil. 1:27.
†1 Cor. 1:9. 2 Thess. 2:14.

III.

13 For this cause also thank we God *without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it †not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

*Chap. 1:3.
†Matt. 10:40. 2 Pet. 3:2.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers *of the churches of God which are in Judæa in Christ Jesus: for †ye also suffered like things of your own countrymen, **even as they did of the Jews:

*Gal. 1:22.
†Acts 17:5, 18. **Heb. 10:33, 34.

15 *Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and †their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

*Acts 2:23; 3:15. †Matt. 5:12;
23:34, 37. Luke 13:33, 34.

16 *Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved, †to fill up their sins alway: **for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

Luke 11:52. Acts 13:50; 14:5.
19. †Gen. 15:16. **Matt. 24:6, 14.

III.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time *in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly †to see your face with great desire. *1 Cor. 5:3. Col. 2:5. †Chap. 3:10.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but *Satan hindered us.

*Rom. 1:13; 15:22.

19 For *what is our hope, or joy, or †crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ **at his coming?

*2 Cor. 1:14. Phil. 2:16. †Prov. 16:21. **1 Cor. 15:23. Rev. 1:7; 22:12.

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

CHAPTER 3.

1 Wherefore *when we could no longer forbear, †we thought it good to be left behind at Athens alone;

*Verse 5. †Acts 17:15.

2 And sent *Timotheus, our brother, and minister of God, and our fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

*Rom. 16:21. 1 Cor. 16:10.

3 *That no man be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that †we are appointed thereunto. *Eph. 3:13.

†Acts 9:16; 14:22; 20:23.

4 *For verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

*Acts 20:24.

5 For this cause, *when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, †lest

by some means the tempter have tempted you, and **our labour be in vain. *Verse 1.

†1 Cor. 7:5. **Gal. 2:2; 4:11.

6 *But when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and love, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, †as we also to see you: *Acts 18:1, 5. †Phil. 1:8.

7 Therefore, brethren, *we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress through your faith:

*2 Cor. 1:4; 7:6, 7, 13.

8 For now we live, if ye *stand fast in the Lord.

*Phil. 4:1.

9 *For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God;

*Chap. 1:2.

10 *Night and day †praying exceedingly that we may see your face, and may perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

*Acts 26:7.

†Rom. 1:10, 11; 15:32.

11 Now may God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, *direct our way unto you. *Mark 1:3.

12 And the Lord *make you to increase and abound in love †one toward another, and toward all men, even as we also do toward you:

*Chap. 4:10.

†Chap. 4:9; 5:15. 2 Pet. 1:7.

13 To the end he may *stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before our God and Father, at the commanding of our Lord Jesus Christ †with all his saints.

*1 Cor. 1:8. Phil. 1:10. Chap. 5:23. †Zech. 14:5.

CHAPTER 4.

(Epistle. Sunday Reminiscences
Verses 1-1.)

1 Finally then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lord Jesus, *that as ye have received of us **†**how ye ought to walk and to please God, even walk so that ye would abound more and more. *Phil 1:27.

Col. 2:6. **†**Chap. 2:12.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you through the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is *the will of God, even **†**your sanctification, **that ye abstain from fornication: *Rom. 12:2. **†**Eph. 5:27. **1 Cor. 6:15, 18. Col. 3:5.

4 *That every one of you should know how to possess his own vessel in sanctification and honour;

*Rom. 6:19. 1 Cor. 6:15, 18.

5 *Not in the lust of evil passions, **†**even as the Gentiles who know not God:

*Rom. 1:24, 26. **†**Eph. 4:17, 18.

6 *That no man go too far to defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord **†**is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

*Lev. 19:11, 13.

1 Cor. 6:8. **†**2 Thess. 1:8.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, *but unto holiness. *Lev. 11:44; 19:2. 1 Cor. 1:2. 1 Pet. 1:14, 15.

8 *He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, **†**who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

*Luke 10:16.

†1 Cor. 2:10; 7:40. 1 John 3:24.

¶II.

9 But as touching brotherly love ye need not that I write unto you: for *ye yourselves are taught of God **†**to love one another. *Jer. 31:34. John 6:45; 14:26. Heb. 8:11. **†**Matt. 22:29. John 13:34; 15:12. Eph. 5:2.

10 *And indeed ye do it toward all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, **†**that ye abound more and more;

*Chap. 1:7. **†**Chap. 3:12.

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and *to do your own business, and **†**to work with your own hands, even as we commanded you;

*2 Thess. 3:11. 1 Pet. 4:15. **†**Acts 2:35. Eph. 4:28.

12 *That ye walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye have lack of nothing. *Rom. 13:13.

2 Cor. 8:21. Col. 4:5. 1 Pet. 2:12.

(Epistle 25th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 13-18.)

¶III.

13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them that are asleep, that ye sorrow not, *even as others **†**which have no hope.

*Deut. 14:1, 2.

2 Sam. 12:20. **†**Eph. 2:12.

14 For *if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so **†**them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus will God bring with him.

*1 Cor. 15:18. **†**1 Cor. 15:18, 23.

15 For this we say unto you *by the word of the Lord, that **†**we that are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not go before them which are asleep.

*1 Kings 13:17, 18; 20:35. **†**1 Cor. 15:51.

16 For *the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with †the trump of God: **and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

*Matt. 24:30, 31. Acts 1:11.
†1 Cor. 15:52. **1 Cor. 15:23, 52.

17 *Then we that are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them up †in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so **shall we ever be with the Lord.

*1 Cor. 15:51. †Acts 1:9. Rev. 11:12. **John 12:26; 14:3; 17:24.

18 *Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

*Chap. 5:11.

CHAPTER 5.

(Epistle 27th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 1 to 11.)

1 But of *the times and the seasons, brethren, †ye have no need that I write unto you.

*Matt. 24:3, 36.
Acts 1:7. †Chap. 4:9.

2 For yourselves know perfectly that *the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

*Matt. 24:43, 44; 25:13. Luke 12:39, 40.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then *sudden destruction cometh upon them, †as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

*Is. 13:6-9. Luke 17:27, 28, 29. †Jer. 13:21. Hos. 13:13.

4 *But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

*Rom. 13:12, 13. 1 John 2:8.

5 Ye are all *the children of light, and the children of the day: ye are not of the night, nor of darkness.

*Eph. 5:8.

6 *Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but †let us watch and be sober.

*Matt. 25:5. †Matt. 24:42; 25:13.

7 For *they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night.

*Luke 21:34, 36.
Rom. 13:13. 1 Cor. 15:34.

8 But let us, who are of the day, be sober, *putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for a helmet, the hope of salvation.

*Is. 59:10. Eph. 6:14, 16, 17.

9 For *God hath not appointed us to wrath, †but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

*Rom. 9:22.
1 Pet. 2:8. †2 Thess. 2:13, 14.

10 *Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

*Rom. 14:8, 9. 2 Cor. 5:15.

11 *Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do.

*Chap. 4:18.

¶II.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, *to know them that labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;

*1 Cor. 16:18.
Phil. 2:29. Heb. 13:7, 17.

13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. *And be at peace among yourselves.

*Mark 9:50.

14 Now we exhort you, brethren, *warn them that are unruly, †comfort the feebleminded, **support the weak, be patient toward all.

*2 Thess. 3:11, 12. †Heb. 12:12. **Rom. 14:1; 15:1. Gal. 6:1, 2.

15 *See that none render evil for evil unto any; but

ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all.

*Lev. 19:18. Matt. 5:39, 44. Rom. 12:17. †Gal. 6:10. Chap. 3:12.

16 *Rejoice evermore.

*2 Cor. 6:10. Phil. 4:4.

17 *Pray without ceasing.

*Luke 18:1; 21:36. Rom. 12:12.

18 *In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

*Eph. 5:20. Col. 3:17.

19 *Quench not the Spirit.

*Eph. 4:30. 1 Tim. 4:14.

20 *Despise not prophesyings.

*1 Cor. 14:1, 39.

21 *Prove all things; †hold fast that which is good.

*1 Cor. 2:11, 15. †Phil. 4:8.

22 *Abstain from every form of evil.

*Chap. 4:12.

III.

23 And *the very God of peace †sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

*Phil. 4:9. †Chap. 3:13.

24 *Faithful is he that calleth you, who will also do it.

*1 Cor. 1:9; 10:13. 2 Thess. 3:3.

25 Brethren, *pray for us.

*Col. 4:3. 2 Thess. 3:1.

26 *Salute all the brethren with a holy kiss.

*Rom. 16:16.

27 I charge you by the Lord that *this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren.

*Col. 4:16. 2 Thess. 3:14.

28 *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

*Rom. 16:20, 24.
2 Thess. 3:18.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, *and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians †in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:

*2 Cor. 1:19. †1 Thess. 1:1.

2 *Grace to you, and peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. *1 Cor. 1:3.

(Epistle, 26th Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 3 to 10.)

3 *We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because

that your faith groweth exceedingly, and that charity of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth;

*1 Thess. 1:2, 3; 3:6, 9. Chap. 2:13.

4 So that *we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God †for your patience and faith **in all your persecutions and tribulations which ye endure:

*2 Cor. 7:14. 1 Thess. 2:19.

†1 Thess. 1:3. **1 Thess. 2:14.

5 Which is *a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be

counted worthy of the kingdom of God, †for which ye also suffer:

*Phil. 1:28. †1 Thess. 2:14.

6 *Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; *Rev. 6:10.

7 And to you who are troubled *rest with us, when †the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels,

*Rev. 14:13. †1 Thess. 4:16.

8 *In flaming fire taking vengeance on them †that know not God, and **that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

*Heb. 10:27. 2 Pet. 3:7. †Ps. 79:6. 1 Thess. 4:5. **Rom. 2:8.

9 *Who shall be punished even with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and †from the glory of his might;

*Phil. 3:10. 2 Pet. 3:7. †Deut. 33:2. Is. 2:19.

10 *When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, †and to be admired in all them that believe because our testimony among you was believed in that day. *Ps. 89:7. †Ps. 68:35.

11 Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would *count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and †the work of faith with power:

*Verse 5. †1 Thess. 1:3.

12 *That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*1 Pet. 1:7.

CHAPTER 2.

1 Now we beseech you, brethren, *as touching the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, †and our gathering together unto him,

*1 Thess. 4:16.

†Matt. 24:31. Mark 13:27.

2 *That ye be not quickly shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as the day of Christ is at hand.

*Matt. 24:4. Eph. 5:6. 1 John 4:1.

3 *Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, †except there come a falling away first, and **the man of sin be revealed, †the son of perdition;

*Matt. 24:4. †1 Tim. 4:1. **Dan. 7:25. 1 John 2:18. †John 17:12.

4 Who opposeth and *exalteth himself †above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he sitteth in the temple of God; shewing himself that he is God.

*Is. 14:13. Ezek. 28:2, 6, 9. Dan. 7:25. Rev. 13:6. †1 Cor. 8:5.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For *the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only there is one who restraineth now until he is taken out of the way.

*1 John 2:18.

¶II.

8 And then shall that Wicked be revealed, *whom the Lord shall consume †with

the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy ****with** the brightness of his coming:

***Dan. 7:10, 11.**
†Job. 4:9. Is. 11:4. Hos. 6:5. Rev. 2:16. ****Chap. 1:8, 9. Heb. 10:27.**

9 Even him, whose coming is ***according to the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders,**

***John 8:41. Eph. 2:2.**
†Matt. 24:24. Rev. 13:13; 19:20.

10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in ***them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.**

***2 Cor. 2:15; 4:3.**

11 And ***for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:**

***Rom. 1:24, etc. Ezek. 14:9.**
†Matt. 24:5, 11. 1 Tim. 4:1.

12 That they all might be judged who believed not the truth, but ***had pleasure in unrighteousness.**

***Rom. 1:32.**

¶III.

13 But ***we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath ****from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:****

***Chap. 1:3. †1 Thess. 1:4.**
****Eph. 1:4. ††Luke 1:75. 1 Pet. 1:2.**

14 Whereunto he called you through our gospel, to ***the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

***John 17:22.**
1 Thess. 2:12. 1 Pet. 5:10.

15 Therefore, brethren, ***stand fast, and hold the rules which ye have been**

taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

***1 Cor. 16:13.**
Phil. 4:1. †1 Cor. 11:2.

¶IV.

16 ***Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our Father, who loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation and ****good hope through grace,****

***Chap. 1:1, 2.**
†1 John 4:10. Rev. 1:5. ****1 Pet. 1:3.**

17 Comfort your hearts, ***and stablish them in every good word and work.**

***1 Cor. 1:8.**
1 Thess. 3:13. 1 Pet. 5:10.

CHAPTER 3.

1 Finally, brethren, ***pray for us, that the word of the Lord may run free, and be glorified, even as it is with you:**

***Eph. 6:19.**
Col. 4:3. 1 Thess. 5:25.

2 And ***that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men; for all have not faith.**

***Rom. 15:31. †Acts 28:24.**

3 But ***the Lord is faithful, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.**

***1 Cor. 1:9.**
†John 17:15. 2 Pet. 2:9.

4 And ***we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command.**

2 Cor. 7:16. Gal. 5:10.

5 And ***the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patience of Christ.**

***1 Chr. 29:18. 1 Thess. 1:3.**

¶II.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, ***that ye**

withdraw yourselves †from every brother that walketh **disorderly, and not after the rules which they received of us.

*Verse 14.
Rom. 16:17. †1 Cor. 5:11. **Verses 11, 12, 14. 1 Thess. 4:11; 5:14.

7 For yourselves know *how ye ought to follow us: for †we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you;

*1 Cor. 4:16; 11:1.
†1 Thess. 2:10.

8 Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought; but *wrought him labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you:

*Acts 18:3; 20:34.
2 Cor. 11:9. 1 Thess. 2:9.

9 *Not because we have not power, but to make ourselves an example unto you to follow us.

*1 Cor. 9:6. 1 Thess. 2:6.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you: *if any would not work, neither should he eat.

*Gen. 3:19. 1 Thess. 4:11.

11 For we hear that there are some *who walk among you disorderly, †working not at all, but are busy-bodies.

*Verse 6.
†1 Thess. 4:11. 1 Tim. 5:18.

12 *Now them that are such we command and exhort in our Lord Jesus Christ, †that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.

*1 Thess. 4:11. †Eph. 4:28.

¶III.

13 But ye, brethren, *be not weary in well doing.

*Gal. 6:9.

14 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and *have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

*Verse 6.
Matt. 18:17. 1 Cor. 5:9, 11.

15 *Yet count him not as an enemy, †but admonish him as a brother.

*Lev. 19:17.
1 Thess. 5:14. †Titus 3:10.

¶IV.

16 Now *the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.

*Rom. 15:33; 16:20. 1 Cor. 14:38.

17 *The salutation of me Paul, with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle, so I write.

*1 Cor. 16:21. Col. 4:18.

18 *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

*Rom. 16:24.

MEMORANDUM

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO

TIMOTHY

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ *by the commandment †of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, who is our hope;

*Acts 9:15. †Chap. 2:3; 4:10.
Titus 1:3; 2:10; 3:4.

2 Unto *Timothy, †my own son in the faith: **Grace, mercy, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Acts 18:1. 1 Cor. 4:17. †Titus 1:4. **Gal. 1:3. 2 Tim. 1:2.

¶II.

3 Even as I besought thee to tarry at Ephesus, *when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some †not to teach other doctrines.

*Acts 20:1, 3.
Phil. 2:24. †Gal. 1:6, 7.

4 *Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, †which minister questionings, rather than a dispensation of God which is in faith.

*Chap. 4:7; 6:4, 20.
2 Tim. 2:14, 16, 23. †Chap. 6:4.

5 But *the end of the commandment is love †out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

*Rom. 13:8, 10.
Gal. 5:14. †2 Tim. 2:22.

6 From which some having swerved have turned aside unto *vain talking;

*Chap. 6:4, 20.

7 Desiring to be teachers

of the law; *understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

*Chap. 6:4.

8 But we know that *the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;

*Rom. 7:12

9 *Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers,

*Gal. 3:19; 5:23.

10 For fornicators, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and whatever else is contrary *to sound doctrine;

*Chap. 6:3. 2 Tim. 4:3.

11 According to the glorious gospel of *the blessed God, †which was committed to my trust.

*Chap. 6:15. †1 Cor. 9:17.
2 Tim. 1:11. Titus 1:3.

12 I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, *who hath enabled me, †that he counted me faithful, **putting me into the ministry;

*2 Cor. 12:9. †1 Cor. 7:25. **2 Cor. 3:5, 6; 4:1.

13 *Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: but I obtained mercy, because †I did it ignorantly in unbelief.

*Acts 8:3; 9:1. 1 Cor. 15:9.
†Luke 23:34. John 9:39, 41.

14 *And the grace of our Lord was exceedingly abundant †with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

*Rom. 5:20.
1 Cor. 15:10. †2 Tim. 1:13.

III.

15 *This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that *Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

*Chap. 3:1; 4:9. 2 Tim. 2:11
Titus 3:8. †Matt. 9:13.
Mark 2:17. 1 John 3:5.

16 Howbeit for this cause *I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all longsuffering, †for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

2 Cor. 4:1. †Acts 18:39.

17 Now unto *the King eternal, †immortal, **invisible, the only God, ***be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

*Ps. 10:16; 145:13. †Rom. 1:23. **John 1:18. Heb. 11:27.
1 John 4:12. ***1 Chr. 29:11.

IV.

18 This charge *I commit unto thee, son Timothy, †according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou mightest **war a good warfare;

*Chap. 6. 2 Tim. 2:2. †Chap. 4:14. **Chap. 6:12. 2 Tim. 2:3.

19 *Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some have thrust away, concerning faith, †have made shipwreck:

*Chap. 3:9. †Chap. 6:9.

20 Of whom is *Hymenæus and †Alexander; whom I have **delivered unto

Satan, that they may learn not to ††blaspheme.

*2 Tim. 2:17. †2 Tim. 4:14.

**1 Cor. 5:5. ††Acts 13:45.

CHAPTER 2.

1 I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men;

2 *For kings, and †all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

*Ezra 6:10. Jer. 29:7. †Rom. 13:1.

3 For this is *good and acceptable in the sight †of God our Saviour,

*Rom. 12:2. Chap. 5:4. †Chap. 1:1. 2 Tim. 1:9.

4 *Who would have all men to be saved, †and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. *Ezek 18:23. John 3:16, 17.
2 Pet. 3:9. †John 17:3.

5 *For there is one God, also †one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

*Rom. 8:29, 30; 10:12. Gal. 3:20. †Heb. 8:6; 9:15.

6 *Who gave himself a ransom for all, †to be testified in due time. *Matt. 20:28. Mark 10:45. Eph. 1:7. †1 Cor. 1:6.
2 Thess. 1:10. 2 Tim. 1:8.

7 *Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, †I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not; **a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity. *Eph. 3:7, 8. †Rom. 9:1. **Rom. 11:13; 15:16.

8 I therefore desire that men pray *everywhere, †lifting up holy hands, without wrath or doubting. *Mal. 1:11. John 4:21. †Ps. 134:2. Is. 1:16.

¶II.

9 In like manner, that *women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefastness and sobriety; not with braided hair, and gold, or pearls, or costly array;

*1 Pet. 3:3.

10 *But, which becometh women professing godliness with good works. *1 Pet. 3:4.

11 Let a woman learn in quietness with all subjection.

12 But *I suffer not a woman to teach, †nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in quietness.

*1 Cor. 14:34. †Eph. 5:24.

13 For *Adam was first formed, then Eve.

*Gen. 1:27; 2:18, 22.

14 And *Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived hath fallen in transgression.

*Gen. 3:6. 2 Cor. 11:3.

15 Notwithstanding they shall be saved through the childbearing, if they continue in faith and love and sanctification with sobriety.

CHAPTER 3.

1 This *is a faithful saying, If a man desire the office of a †bishop, he desireth a good work.

*Chap. 1:15.

†Acts 20:28. Phil. 1:1.

2 *A bishop therefore must be blameless, †the husband of one wife, discrete, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt in teaching;

*Titus 1:6, etc. †Chap. 5:9.

3 *Not given to wine, †no striker, **not greedy of questionable gain; but ††patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

*Verse 8. Titus 1:7. †2 Tim. 2:24.

**1 Pet. 5:2. ††2 Tim. 2:24.

4 One that ruleth well his own house, *having his children in subjection with all gravity;

*Titus 1:6.

5 For if a man not knoweth how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?

6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride *he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

*Isa. 14:12.

7 Moreover he must have a good testimony *from them which are without; lest he fall into reproach †and the snare of the devil.

*Acts 22:12.

1 Thess. 4:12. †Chap. 6:9.

¶III.

8 Likewise must *a deacon be brave, not double-tongued, †not given too much wine, or to questionable money making;

*Acts 6:3. †Verse 3. Lev. 10:9.

9 *Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

*Chap. 1:19.

10 And let these also first be proved; then let them serve as deacons if they are found blameless.

11 *Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, temperate, faithful in all things.

*Titus 2:3.

12 Let deacons be husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

13 For *they that have served as deacons well gain to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith in Christ Jesus.

*Matt. 25:21.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to conduct thyself *in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

*Eph. 2:21, 22. 2 Tim. 2:20.

¶III.

16 And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: *God was manifest in the flesh, †justified in the Spirit, **seen of angels, ††preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, ***received up into glory.

*John 1:14. †Matt. 3:16. John 1:32, 33, etc. **Matt. 28:2. Mark 16:5. ††Acts 10:34; 18:46, 48. ***Luke 24:51. Acts 1:9.

CHAPTER 4.

1 Now the Spirit *spcaketh expressly, that †in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

*John 16:13. 2 Thess. 2:3. 2 Tim. 3:1. 2 Pet. 3:3. †1 Pet. 1:20.

2 *Speaking lies in hypocrisy; †having their conscience branded as with a hot iron;

*Matt. 7:15. Rom. 16:18. 2 Pet. 2:3. †Eph. 4:19.

3 *Forbidding to marry, †and commanding to abstain from meats, which God created to be received **with thanksgiving by them that believe and know the truth.

*1 Cor. 7:28, 36, 38. Col. 2:20, 21. †Rom. 14:3, 17. Gen. 1:29; 9:3.

**Rom. 14:6. 1 Cor. 10:30.

4 For *every creature of God is good, and nothing to

be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving;

*Rom. 14:14. 1 Cor. 10:25. Titus 1:15.

5 For it is sanctified through the word of God and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, *nourished in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

*2 Tim. 3:14, 15.

7 But *refuse profane and old wives' fables, and †exercise thyself unto godliness.

*Chap. 1:4; 6:20.

2 Tim. 2:16. †Heb. 5:14.

¶II.

8 For *bodily exercise profiteth little, †but godliness is profitable unto all things, **having promise of the life which now is, and of that which is to come.

*1 Cor. 8:8. Col. 2:23.

†Chap. 6:6. **Ps. 37:4; 84:11.

Matt. 6:33. Rom. 8:28.

9 *This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance.

*Chap. 1:15.

10 For therefore *we both labour and suffer reproach, because we †trust in the living God, **who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

*1 Cor. 4:11. †Chap.

6:17. **Ps. 36:6; 107:2, 6, etc.

11 *These things command and teach.

*Chap. 6:2.

12 *Let no man despise thy youth; but †be thou an example to them that believe, in word, in conversation, in charity, in faith, in purity.

*1 Cor. 16:11.

Titus 2:15. †Titus 2:7. 1 Pet. 5:3.

VIII.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 *Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, **with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

*2 Tim. 1:6.

†Chap. 1:18. **Acts 6:6; 8:17.

15 Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy progress may appear to all.

16 *Take heed to thyself, and to the doctrine; continue in them; for in doing this thou shalt save both thyself, and **them that hear thee.

*Acts 20:28. †Ezek. 33:9. **Rom. 11:14. 1 Cor. 9:22. James 5:20.

CHAPTER 5.

1 Rebuke *not an elder, but intreat him as a father; the younger man as brethren;

*Lev. 19:32.

2 The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, in all purity.

3 Honour widows *that are widows indeed. *Verses 5, 16.

4 But if any widow hath children or grandchildren, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and *to requite their parents; †for that is good and acceptable in the sight of God.

*Matt. 15:4.

Eph. 6:1, 2. †Chap. 2:3.

5 *Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and †continueth in supplications and prayers **night and day. *1 Cor. 7:32.

†Luke 2:37. **Acts 26:7.

6 *But she that liveth in

pleasure is dead while she liveth.

*James 5:5.

7 *And these things charge, that they may be blameless.

*Chap. 1:3; 4:11; 6:17.

8 But if any provide not for his own, *and specially for those of his own household, †he hath denied the faith, **and is worse than an unbeliever.

*Is. 58:7. Gal. 6:10. †2 Tim.

3:5. Titus 1:16. **Matt. 18:17.

II.

9 Let not a widow be taken into the number under threescore years old, *having been the wife of one man,

*Luke 2:36. Chap. 3:2.

10 Well reported of for good works; if she hath brought up children, if she hath *used hospitality to strangers, if she hath †washed the saints' feet, if she hath relieved the afflicted, if she hath diligently followed every good work.

*Acts 16:15. Heb. 13:2.

1 Pet. 4:9. †Gen. 18:4; 19:2.

11 But younger widows refuse, for when they wax wanton against Christ, they will desire to marry;

12 Having won damnation, because they have rejected their first faith.

13 *And withal they learn also to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.

*2 Thess. 3:11.

14 *I desire therefore that the younger widows marry, bear children, guide the household, †give none occa-

sion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. *1 Cor. 7:9.

†Chap. 6:1. Titus 2:8.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

¶III.

16 If any man or woman that believeth have widows, let such relieve them, and let not the church be burdened; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

*Verses 3, 5.

17 *Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

*Rom. 12:8. 1 Cor. 9:10, 14.

Gal. 6:6. Phil. 2:29. †Acts 28:10.

18 For the scripture saith, *Thou shalt not muzzle the ox when he treadeth out the corn. And, †The labourer is worthy of his hire.

*Deut. 25:4. 1 Cor. 9:9.

†Lev. 19:13. Deut. 24:14, 15.

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but *before two or three witnesses.

*Deut. 19:15.

20 *Those who sin rebuke before all, †that others also may fear.

*Gal. 2:11, 14.

Titus 1:13. †Deut. 18:11.

¶IV.

21 *I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

*Chap. 6:13. 2 Tim. 2:14; 4:1.

22 *Lay hands hastily on no man, †neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.

*Acts 6:6; 13:

3. Chap. 4:14. †2 John 11.

23 Drink no longer water only, but use a little wine *for thy stomach's sake and thine frequent infirmities.

*Ps. 104:15.

24 *Some men's sins are open beforehand, leading on unto judgment; and with some men they follow after.

*Gal. 5:19.

25 Likewise also the good works of some are manifest beforehand; and those which are otherwise cannot be concealed.

CHAPTER 6.

1 Let as many as are *servants under the yoke, count their own masters worthy of all honour, †that the name of God and the doctrine be not blasphemed.

*Eph. 6:5. Col. 3:22. Titus 2:9.

†Is. 52:5. Rom. 2:24. Titus 2:5, 8.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them serve them the rather, *because they are brethren; but serve them, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. †These things teach and exhort.

*Col. 4:1. †Chap. 4:11.

3 If any man *teach otherwise, and consent †not to sound words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, **and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;

*Chap. 1:3. †Chap. 1:10.

2 Tim. 1:13. **Titus 1:1.

4 He is proud, *knowing nothing, but about questioning and disputing of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings,

*1 Cor. 8:2.

Chap. 1:7. †Chap. 1:4. 2 Tim. 2:23.

5 *Perverse disputings of
†men of corrupt minds, and
destitute of the truth, **sup-
posing that gain is godliness;
††from such withdraw thy-
self.

*1 Cor. 11:16. Chap. 1:6.
†2 Tim. 3:8. **Titus 1:11.
2 Pet. 2:3. ††Rom. 16:17.

¶II.

6 But *godliness with con-
tentment is great gain.

*Ps. 37:16. Prov. 15:16; 16:8.
Heb. 13:5.

7 For *we brought nothing
into this world, and it is cer-
tain we can carry nothing out.

*Job. 1:21.
Ps. 49:17. Prov. 27:24.

8 And *having food and rai-
ment let us be therewith con-
tent.

*Gen. 28:20. Heb. 13:5.

9 But *they that desire to
be rich fall into temptation
†and a snare, and many fool-
ish and hurtful lusts, which
drown men in destruction and
perdition.

*Prov. 15:27; 20:21; 28:20. Matt.
13:22. James 5:1. †Chap. 3:7.

10 *For the love of money
is the root of all kinds of
evil; which while some cov-
eted after, they have erred
from the faith, and have
pierced themselves through
with many sorrows.

*Ex. 23:8. Deut. 16:19.

¶III.

11 *But thou, †O man of
God, flee these things; and
follow after righteousness,
godliness, faith, love, pa-
tience, meekness. *2 Tim. 2:22.

†Deut. 33:1. 2 Tim. 3:17.

12 *Fight the good fight of
faith, †lay hold on life eternal,
whereunto thou art called,
**and has confessed a good

confession before many wit-
nesses.

*1 Cor. 9:25, 26. Chap. 1:18. †Verse
19. Phil. 3:12, 14. **Heb. 13:23.

13 *I give thee charge in
the sight of God, †who quick-
eneth all things, and before
Christ Jesus, **who before
Pontius Pilate witnessed a
good confession;

*Chap. 5:21. †Deut. 32:39. John 5:
21. **Matt. 27:11. Rev. 1:5; 3:14.

14 That thou keep this
commandment without spot,
blameless, *until the appear-
ing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

*Phil. 1:6, 10. 1 Thess. 3:13; 5:23.

15 Which in his own times
he shall shew, who is *the
blessed and only Potentate,
†the King of kings, and Lord
of Lords;

*Chap. 1:11, 17.
†Rev. 17:14; 19:16.

16 *Who only hath im-
mortality, dwelling in the
light which no man can ap-
proach unto; †whom no man
hath seen, nor can see: **to
whom be honour and power
eternal. Amen.

*Chap. 1:17. †Ex. 33:20. John 6:
46. **Eph. 3:21. Phil. 4:20.

¶IV.

17 Charge them that are
rich in this present world,
that they be not highminded,
*nor trust in †uncertain
riches, but in **the living
God, who giveth us richly all
things to enjoy;

*Job 31:24. Ps. 62:7; 62:10. Luke
12:21. †Prov. 23:5. **1 Thess. 1:9.

18 That they do good, that
*they be rich in good works,
†ready to distribute, **willing
to communicate;

*Luke 12:21. James 2:5.
†Rom. 12:13. **Gal. 6:6. Heb. 13:16.

19 *Laying up in store for
themselves a good founda-

tion against the time to come, that they may **†**lay hold on eternal life. *Matt. 6:20; 19:21. Luke 12:33; 16:9. **†**Verse 12.

20 O Timothy, *guard that which is committed to thy trust, **†**turn away from profane babblings, and opposi-

tions of science falsely so called: *2 Tim. 1:14. Rev. 3:3. **†**2 Tim. 2:14; 16:23. Titus 1:14; 8:9.

21 Which some professing *have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

*Chap. 1:6, 19. 2 Tim. 2:18.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHY

(His last letter)

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, *an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, according to **†**the promise of the life which is in Christ Jesus, *2 Cor. 1:1. **†**Eph. 3:6. Titus 1:2.

2 *To Timothy, my beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

*1 Tim. 1:2.

III.

3 *I thank God, **†**whom I serve from my forefathers in a pure conscience, that **without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day;

*Rom. 1:8. Eph. 1:16. **†**Acts 22:3; 28:1. **1 Thess. 1:2; 3:10.

4 *Greatly desiring to see thee, remembering thy tears, that I may be filled with joy;

*Chap. 4:9. 21.

5 When I call to remembrance *the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and **†**thy mother Eunice; and

I am persuaded that it dwelleth in thee also.

*1 Tim. 1:5; 4:6. **†**Acts 16:1.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance *that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the laying on of my hands.

*1 Thess. 5:19. 1 Tim. 4:14.

7 For *God hath not given us the spirit of fear; **†**but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

*Rom. 8:15. **†**Luke 24:49. Acts 1:8.

8 *Be not thou ashamed of **†**the testimony of our Lord, nor of me **his prisoner; but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God;

*Rom. 1:16. **†**1 Tim. 2:6. Rev. 1:2. **Eph. 3:1. Phil. 1:7.

9 *Who saved us, and **†**called us with an holy calling, **not according to our works, but **††**according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

*1 Tim. 1:1. Titus 3:4. **†**1 Thess. 4:7. Heb. 8:1. **Rom. 3:20; 9:11. Titus 3:5. **††**Rom. 8:28. Rom. 16:25.

10 But *hath now been made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, †who abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

*Rom. 16:26. Eph. 1:9. 1 Pet. 1:20. †1 Cor. 15:54, 55.

11 *Whereunto I was appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. *Acts 9:15. Eph. 3:7, 8. 1 Tim. 2:7. Chap. 4:17.

¶III.

12 *For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: †for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to **keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

*Eph. 3:1. Chap. 2:9. †1 Pet. 4:19. **1 Tim. 6:20.

13 *Hold fast †the form of **sound words, ††which thou hast heard of me; ***in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

*Titus 1:9. Rev. 2:25. †Rom. 2:20; 6:17. **1 Tim. 1:10; 6:3. ††Chap. 2:2. ***1 Tim. 1:14.

14 *That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Spirit †which dwelleth in us.

*1 Tim. 6:20. †Rom. 8:11.

15 This thou knowest, that *all that are in Asia †turned away from me; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

*Acts 19:10. †Chap. 4:10, 16.

16 The Lord *grant mercy unto †the house of Onesiphorus; **for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain:

*Matt. 5:7. †Chap. 4:19. **Philem. 7.

17 But, when he was in Rome, he sought me diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him *that he may find mercy of the Lord †in that day! In how many things he **ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

*Matt. 25:34-40.

†Verse 12. 2 Thess. 1:10.

CHAPTER 2.

1 Thou therefore, *my son, †be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. *1 Tim. 1:2. Chap. 1:2. †Eph. 6:10.

2 *And the things which thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, †the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be **able to teach others also.

*Chap. 1:13; 3:10, 14. †1 Tim. 1:18. **1 Tim. 3:2.

3 *Thou therefore endure hardness, †as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

*Chap. 1:8; 4:5. †1 Tim. 1:18.

¶II.

4 *No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him as a soldier. *1 Cor. 9:25.

5 And *if a man contend for masteries, yet is he not crowned, except he contend lawfully. *1 Cor. 9:25, 26.

6 *The husbandman that laboureth must be first to partake of the fruits.

*1 Cor. 9:10.

7 Consider what I say; for the Lord shall give thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Jesus

Christ *of the seed of David
†was raised from the dead
**according to my gospel:

*Acts 2:30; 13:23. Rom. 1:3, 4.
†1 Cor. 15:1, 4, 20. **Rom. 2:16.

9 *Wherein I suffer trouble,
as an evil doer, †even unto
bonds; **but the word of God
is not bound.

*Acts 9:16. Chap. 1:12.
†Eph. 3:1. Phil. 1:7. **Acts
28:31. Eph. 6:19, 20.

10 Therefore *I endure all
things for the elect's sakes,
†that they also may obtain
the salvation which is in
Christ Jesus with eternal
glory.

*Eph. 3:13.
Col. 1:24. †2 Cor. 1:6.

11 *It is a faithful saying:
For †if we have died with him,
we shall also live with him:

*1 Tim. 1:15.
†Rom. 6:5, 8. 2 Cor. 4:10.

12 *If we suffer, we shall
also reign with him, †if we
shall deny him, he also will
deny us:

*Rom. 8:17. 1 Pet. 4:13. †Matt.
10:33. Mark 8:38. Luke 12:9.

13 *If we believe not, yet
he abideth faithful; †he can-
not deny himself.

*Rom. 3:3; 9:6. †Num. 23:19.

¶III.

14 Of these things put
them in remembrance,
*charging them before the
Lord †that they strive not
about words to no profit, to
the subverting of the hear-
ers.

*1 Tim. 5:21; 6:13.
Chap. 4:1. †1 Tim. 1:4; 6:4.

15 Study to shew thyself
approved unto God, a work-
man that needeth not to be
ashamed, rightly dividing the
word of truth.

16 But *shun profane and

vain babblings; for they will
increase unto more ungodli-
ness.

*1 Tim. 4:7; 6:20. Titus 1:14.

17 And their word will eat
as doth gangrene; of whom
is *Hymenæus and Philetus;

*1 Tim. 1:20.

18 Men who *concerning
the truth have erred, †saying
that the resurrection is past
already; and overthrow the
faith of some.

*1 Tim. 6:21. †1 Cor. 15:12.

19 Nevertheless *the foun-
dation of God standeth sure,
having this seal, The Lord
†knoweth them that are his.
And: Let every one that
nameth the name of Christ
depart from iniquity.

*Matt. 24:24. Rom. 8:35. 1 John 2:
19. †Nah. 1:7. John 10:14, 27.

¶IV.

20 *Now in a great house
there are not only vessels of
gold and of silver, but also of
wood and of earth; †and
some unto honour, and some
unto dishonour.

*1 Tim. 3:15. †Rom. 9:21.

21 *If a man therefore
purge himself from these, he
shall be a vessel unto honour,
sanctified, meet for the the
master's use, †prepared unto
every good work.

*Is. 52:11.
†Chap. 3:17. Titus 3:1.

22 Flee also youthful lusts:
but *follow righteousness,
faith, love, peace, with them
that †call on the Lord **out
of a pure heart.

*1 Tim. 6:11.
†Acts 9:14. **1 Tim. 1:5; 4:12.

23 But *foolish and ignor-
ant questions avoid, knowing
that they do gender strifes.

*Verse 16.

1 Tim. 1:4; 4:7; 6:4. Titus 3:9.

24 *A servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, †apt to teach, patient,

*Titus 3:2.
†1 Tim. 3:2, 3. Titus 1:9.

25 *In meekness correcting them that oppose themselves; †if peradventure God will give them repentance **unto the knowledge of the truth;

*Gal. 6:1. 1 Tim. 6:11.
†Acts 8:22. **1 Tim. 2:4. Titus 1:1.

26 And that they may recover themselves *out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

*1 Tim. 3:7.

CHAPTER 3.

1 But know this, that *in the last days perilous times shall come.

*1 Tim. 4:1. Chap. 4:3.
2 Pet. 3:3. 1 John 2:18.

2 For men shall be *lovers of self, †covetous, boasters, **proud, ††blasphemers, ***disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

*Phil. 2:21.
†2 Pet. 2:3. **1 Tim. 6:4. ††1 Tim. 1:20. 2 Pet. 2:12. ***Rom. 1:30.

3 *Without natural affection, implacable, slanderers, †without self-control, incontinent, **savage, haters of those that are good,

*Rom. 1:31. †Rom. 1:31. Titus 2:3. **2 Pet. 3:3.

4 *Traitors, headstrong, high-minded, †lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God;

*2 Pet. 2:10.
†Phil. 3:19. 2 Pet. 2:13, etc.

5 Having a form of godliness, but *denying the power thereof: †such turn away.

*1 Tim. 5:8. Titus 1:16. †2 Thess. 3:6. 1 Tim. 6:5.

6 For *of this sort are they which creep into houses, and

take captive silly women laden with sins, led away by divers lusts,

*Matt. 23:14. Titus 1:11.

7 Ever learning, and never able *to come to the knowledge of the truth. *1 Tim. 2:4.

8 *Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also withstand the truth: †men corrupt in mind, **reprobate concerning the faith.

*Ex. 7:11. †1 Tim. 6:5. **Rom. 1:28. 2 Cor. 13:5. Titus 1:16.

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men, *as their's also came to be.

*Ex. 7:12; 8:18; 9:11.

¶II.

10 *But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, love, patience,

*Phil. 2:22. 1 Tim. 4:6.

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me *at Antioch, †at Iconium, **at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: but †out of them all the Lord delivered me.

*Acts 13:45, 50.
†Acts 14:2, 5. **Acts 14:19, etc.
††Ps. 34:19. 2 Cor. 1:10.

12 Yea, and *all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

*Ps. 34:19. Matt. 16:24.
John 17:14.

13 *But evil men and imposters shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

*2 Thess. 2:11. 1 Tim. 4:1.

14 But *continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured

of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them;

*Chap. 1:18; 2:2.

15 And that from a child thou hast known *the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

*John 5:39.

16 *All scripture is given by inspiration of God, †and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

*2 Pet. 1:20, 21. †Rom. 15:4.

17 *That the man of God may be perfect, †thoroughly furnished unto every good works.

*1 Tim. 6:11. †Chap. 2:21.

CHAPTER 4.

1 I *charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, †who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom;

*1 Tim. 5:21; 6:13.

Chap. 2:14. †Acts 10:42.

2 Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, *rebuke, †exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.

*1 Tim. 5:20.

Titus 1:18; 2:15. †1 Tim. 4:13.

3 *For the time will come when they will not endure †sound doctrine; **but according to their own lusts will they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

*Chap. 3:1.

†1 Tim. 1:10. **Chap. 8:6.

4 And they will turn away their ears from the truth, and *will turn aside unto fables.

*1 Tim. 1:4; 4:7. Titus 1:14.

5 But watch thou in all things, *endure afflictions, do

the work of †an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

*Chap. 1:8; 2:3. †Acts 21:8. Eph. 4:11. Rom. 15:19. Col. 1:25; 4:17.

¶III.

6 For *I am now ready to be offered, and the time of †my departure is at hand.

*Phil. 2:17.

†Phil. 1:23. 2 Pet. 1:14.

7 *I have fought the good fight, I have finished the course, I have kept the faith.

*1 Cor. 9:24, 25.

Phil. 3:14. 1 Tim. 6:12.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me *the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me †at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

*1 Cor. 9:25. 1 Pet.

5:4. Rev. 2:10. †Chap. 1:12.

¶III.

9 Be diligent to come shortly unto me.

10 For *Demas hath forsaken me, †having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

*Col. 4:14.

Philem 24. †1 John 2:15.

11 *Only †Luke is with me. Take **Mark, and bring him with thee, for he is useful to me for the ministry.

*Chap. 1:15. †Col. 4:14.

Philem. 24. **Acts 12:25; 15:37.

12 But *Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

*Acts 20:4.

Eph. 6:21. Col. 4:7. Titus 8:12.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, especially the parchments.

14 *Alexander the copper-smith did me much evil; †the Lord render to him according to his works. *Acts 19:33.

1 Tim. 1:20. †2 Sam. 3:39.

15 Of whom thou beware also; for he greatly withstood our words.

16 At my first defence no one stood with me, *but all forsook me: †I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge. *Chap. 1:15. †Acts 7:60.

17 *Notwithstanding the Lord stood by me, and strengthened me: †that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear, that I was delivered **out of the mouth of the lion. *Matt. 10:19.

Acts 23:11; 27:23. Eph. 3:8.

**Ps. 22:21. 2 Pet. 2:9.

18 *The Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and

will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom; †to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. *Ps. 121:7.

†Rom. 11:36. Gal. 1:5. Heb. 13:21.

IV.

19 Salute *Prisca and Aquila, and *the household of Onesiphorus. *Acts 18:2.

Rom. 16:3. †Chap. 1:16.

20 *Erastus abode at Corinth, but †Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

*Acts 19:22.

Rom. 16:23. †Acts 20:4; 21:29.

21 *Be diligent to come before winter. Eubulus salute thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. *Verse 9.

22 *The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

*Gal. 6:18. Phil. 25.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TITUS

CHAPTER 1.

1 Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and *the knowledge of the truth †which is according to godliness;

*2 Tim. 2:25. †1 Tim. 3:16; 6:3.

2 *In hope of eternal life, which God, †who cannot lie, promised **before the world began;

*2 Tim. 1:1. Chap. 3:7. †Num. 23:19. **2 Tim. 1:9. 1 Pet. 1:20.

3 *But hath his own reason manifested his word through the preaching, †which was committed unto me **according to the commandment of God our Saviour;

*2 Tim. 1:10. †1 Thess. 2:4. 1 Tim. 1:11. **1 Tim. 1:1; 2:3; 4:10.

4 To *Titus, †mine own son after the **common faith: ††Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour. *2 Cor. 2:13; 7:13; 8:6, 16. †1 Tim. 1:2. **Rom. 1:12. 2 Cor. 4:18. ††Eph. 1:2. Col. 1:2.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest *set in order the things that are wanting, and †ordain elders in every city, as I had charged thee: *1 Cor. 11:34. †Acts 14:23. 2 Tim. 2:2.

6 *If any is blameless, †the husband of one wife, **having children that believe, who are not accused of riot or unruly. *1 Tim. 3:2, etc. †1 Tim. 3:12. **1 Tim. 3:4, 12.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as *the steward of God; not selfwilled, no brawler, not given to wine, no striker, **not given to filthy lucre;

*Matt. 24:45. †Lev. 10:9. **1 Tim. 3:3, 8. 1 Pet. 5:2.

8 *But given to hospitality, a lover of good, soberminded, just, holy, temperate;

*1 Tim. 3:2.

9 *Holding fast †the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able **by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

*2 Thess. 2:15. †1 Tim. 1:15; 4:9; 6:3. **1 Tim. 1:10. 2 Tim. 4:3.

III.

10 For *there are many unruly and vain talkers and †deceivers, **specially they of the circumcision, *1 Tim. 1:6. †Rom. 16:18. **Acts 15:1.

11 Whose mouths must be stopped, *men who overthrow whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, †for filthy lucre's sake.

*Matt. 23:14. †1 Tim. 6:5.

12 *One of themselves, a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are always liars, evil beasts, slow bellies.

*Acts 17:28.

13 This testimony is true. *Wherefore reprove them sharply, that they may be †sound in the faith;

*2 Cor. 13:10.

2 Tim. 4:2. †Chap. 2:2.

14 *Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and †commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

*1 Tim. 1:4; 4:7. †Is. 29:13.

III.

15 *Unto the pure all things are pure: but †unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but both their mind and conscience are defiled.

*Luke 11:39, 40, 41. Rom. 14:14, 20. †Rom. 14:23.

16 They profess that they know God; but *by their works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, †and unto every good work reprobate. *2 Tim. 3:5. Jude 4. †Rom. 1:28.

CHAPTER 2.

1 But speak thou the things becoming *sound doctrine:

*1 Tim. 1:10. 2 Tim. 1:13.

2 That the aged men be temperate, soberminded, grave, *sound in faith, in love, in patience.

*Chap. 1:13.

3 *The aged women likewise, that they be reverent in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of that which is good;

*1 Tim. 2:9. 1 Pet. 3:3, 4.

4 That they may teach the young women to be soberminded, *to love their husbands, to love their children,

*1 Tim. 5:14.

5 To be discreet, chaste, workers at home, good,

*obedient to their own husbands, †that the word of God be not blasphemed.

*1 Cor. 14:34. Eph. 5:22.
†Rom. 2:24. 1 Tim. 6:1.

6 The younger men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

7 *In all things shewing thyself a ensample of good works; in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, *1 Tim. 4:12. 1 Pet. 5:3.

8 *Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part †may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of us.

*1 Tim. 6:3. †2 Thess. 3:14.

9 Exhort *servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to be well pleasing to them in all things, not gain saying. *Eph. 6:5.

1 Tim. 6:1, 2. 1 Pet. 2:18.

10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity; *that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

*Matt. 5:16. Phil. 2:15.

¶II.

(Epistle on Christmas Day. Verses 11-14.)

11 For *the grace of God that bringeth salvation †hath appeared to all men,

*Rom. 5:15. Chap. 3:4, 5.
†Luke 3:6. John 1:9. 1 Tim. 2:4.

12 Teaching us *that, denying ungodliness †and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;

*Luke 1:75. Eph. 1:4.
Col. 1:22. †1 Pet. 4:2.

13 *Looking for the blessed †hope, and the glorious **ap-

pearing of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ;

*1 Cor. 1:7.
2 Pet. 3:12. †Acts 24:15. **Col. 3:4.
2 Tim. 4:1, 8. 1 Pet. 1:7.

14 *Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, †and purify unto himself **a peculiar people of his own, †zealous of good works.

*Gal. 1:4. Eph. 5:2. †Heb. 9:14.
**Ex. 15:16. 1 Pet. 2:9. ††Eph. 2:10.

15 These things speak, and *exhort, and reprove with all authority. †Let no man despise thee.

2 Tim. 4:2. †1 Tim. 4:12.

CHAPTER 3.

1 Put them in mind *to be in subjection to rulers and authorities, to obey them and †to be ready to every good work.

*Rom. 13:1.
†Col. 1:10. 2 Tim. 2:21.

2 *To speak evil of no man, †to be no brawlers, but to be gentle, shewing all **meekness unto all men. *Eph. 4:31.
†2 Tim. 2:24, 25. **Eph. 4:2.

3 For *we also were aforetimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, hating one another.

*1 Cor. 6:11. Col. 1:21; 3:7.

¶II.

(Epistle on the day after Christmas. Verses 4-7.)

4 But when the *kindness of †God our Saviour and his love toward man appeared,

*Chap. 2:11. †1 Tim. 2:3.

5 *Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy

he saved us, through †the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

*Rom. 3:20; 9:11; 11:6. Gal. 2:16. †John 3:3, 5. Eph. 5:26. 1 Pet. 3:21.

6 *Which he poured out upon us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour;

*Joel 2:28.

Acts 2:33; 10:45. Rom. 5:5.

7 *That being justified by his grace, †we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

*Rom. 3:24.

Gal. 2:16. †Rom. 8:23, 24.

8 *This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be careful †to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable unto men.

*1 Tim. 1:15. †Verses 1, 14.

9 But *shun foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; †for they are unprofitable and vain.

*1 Tim. 1:4.

2 Tim. 2:23. †2 Tim. 2:14.

10 A man that is an here-

tick *after the first and second admonition †refuse;

*2 Cor. 13:2.

†Matt. 18:17. Rom. 16:17.

11 Knowing that such a one is subverted, and sinneth, *being condemned of himself.

*Acts 13:46. 1 Tim. 6:4, 5.

III.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or *Tychicus, give diligence to come unto me to Nicopolis, for there I have determined to winter. *Acts 20:4. 2 Tim. 4:12.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer and *Apollon on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

*Acts 18:24. 1 Cor. 1:12.

14 And let our's also learn *to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be †not unfruitful.

*Eph. 4:28. 1 Tim. 6:18. †Rom. 15:28. Phil. 4:17. 2 Pet. 1:8.

15 All that are with me salute thee. *Salute them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

*Gal. 5:6.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO

PHILEMON

1 Paul, *a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, †and fellow-labourer, *Verse 9. Eph. 3:1; 4:1. 2 Tim. 1:8. †Phil. 2:25.

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and *Archippus †our fellowsoldier and to **the church meeting in thy house: *Col. 4:17. †Phil. 2:25. **Rom. 16:5.

3 *Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. *Eph. 1:2.

4 *I thank my God, always making mention of thee in my prayers, *Eph. 1:16. 1 Thess. 1:2.

¶II.

5 *Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and also to all the saints; *Eph. 1:15. Col. 1:4.

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectual *by the knowledge of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus. *Phil. 1:9, 11.

7 For I have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints *have been refreshed by thee, my brother. *Verse 20. 2 Cor. 7:13.

¶III.

8 Wherefore, *though I might be much bold in Christ

to enjoin thee that which is convenient, *1 Thess. 2:6.

9 Yet for love's sake I rather beseech thee, being such an one as Paul the aged, *and now a prisoner of Jesus Christ as well. *Verse 1.

10 I beseech thee for my son *Onesimus, †whom I have begotten in my bonds: *Col. 4:9. †1 Cor. 4:15. Gal. 4:19.

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have sent back to thee, therefore receive him, that is, my very heart;

13 Whom I would have liked to retain with me, *that in thy behalf he might have ministered unto me while in the bonds of the gospel: *1 Cor. 16:17. Phil. 2:30.

14 But without thy consent would I do nothing; *that thy gift should not be as it were compulsory, but willingly. *2 Cor. 9:7.

15 For perhaps he for this reason departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever;

16 Not now as a bondman, but above a bondman, as *a brother beloved, specially dear to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

*Matt. 23:8. 1 Tim. 6:2.

¶IV.

17 If thou count me therefore *a partner, receive him as you would me.

*2 Cor. 8:23.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee anything at all, put that on mine account;

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: *refresh my heart in the Lord.

*Verse 7.

21 *Having confidence in thy obedience I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt

also do more than I am asking.

*2 Cor. 7:16.

¶V.

22 But withal prepare a lodging for me also, for *I trust that †through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

*Phil. 1:25; 2:24. †2 Cor. 1:11.

23 *Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus salute thee,

*Col. 1:7; 4:12.

24 Also *Marcus, †Aristarchus, **Demas, ††Lucas, my fellowlabourers greet thee.

*Acts 12:12, 25.

†Acts 19:29; 27:2. Col. 4:10.

**Col. 4:14. ††2 Tim. 4:11.

25 *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

*2 Tim. 4:22.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE HEBREWS

CHAPTER 1.

(Epistle on the Third Christmas
Day. Verses 1-12.)

1 God, who at sundry times
and *in divers manners spake
in time past unto the fathers
by the prophets,

*Num. 12:6, 8.

2 Hath *in these last days
†spoken unto us through his
Son, **whom he hath ap-
pointed heir of all things,
††by whom also he made the
worlds;

*Deut. 4:30. Gal. 4:4.
†John 1:17; 15:15. **Ps. 2:8. Matt.
21:38. ††John 1:3. Col. 1:16.

3 *Who being the bright-
ness of his glory, and the ex-
press image of his person,
†upholding all things by the
power of his word, **when he
had by himself purged our
sins, ††sat down on the right
hand of the Majesty on high;

*John 1:14; 14:9.
2 Cor. 4:4. †John 1:4. Col. 1:17.
**Chap. 7:27. ††Ps. 110:1.
Eph. 1:20. Chap. 8:1.

4 Being made so much
greater than the angels, as
*he hath by inheritance ob-
tained a more excellent name
than they.

*Eph. 1:21. Phil. 2:9, 10.

¶II.

5 For unto which of the
angels did God say at any
time; *Thou art my son, this
day have I begotten thee?
And again: †I will be to him

a Father, and he shall be to
me a Son?

*Ps. 2:7. Acts 13:33.
†2 Sam. 7:14. Ps. 89:26, 27.

6 And again, when God
brought *the firstbegotten
into the world, he saith:
†Let all the angels of God
worship him.

*Rom. 8:29. Col. 1:18.
Rev. 1:5. †Deut. 32:43, LXX.

7 Speaking of the angels he
saith: *Who maketh his an-
gels spirits, and his ministers
a flame of fire.

*Ps. 104:4.

8 But unto the Son he
saith: *Thy throne, O God, is
for ever and ever: the sceptre
of righteousness is the scap-
tre of thy kingdom.

*Ps. 45:6, 7.

9 Thou loveth righteous-
ness, and hateth iniquity;
therefore God, even thy God,
*hath anointed thee with the
oil of gladness more abund-
antly than all thy fellows.

*Is. 61:1. Acts 4:27; 10:38.

¶III.

10 And: *Thou, Lord, in the
beginning hast laid the
foundation of the earth; and
the heavens are the works of
thine hands:

*Ps. 102:25, etc.

11 *They shall perish; but
thou remainest; and they all
shall wax old as a garment;

*Is. 34:4; 51:6. 2 Pet. 3:7, 10.

12 And as a mantle shalt

thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy years shall know no end.

13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, *Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? *Verse 3. Ps. 110:1. Matt. 22:44. Mark 12:36.

14 *Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be theirs of salvation?

*Gen. 19:16; 32:1, 2, 24. Ps. 34:7; 91:11; 103:20, 21. †Rom. 8:17. Titus 3:7. 1 Pet. 3:7.

CHAPTER 2.

1 Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.

2 For if the word *spoken by angels was stedfast, and †every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward;

*Deut. 33:2. Ps. 68:17. Acts 7:53. †Num. 15:30, 31. Deut. 4:3.

3 *How shall we escape; if we neglect so great salvation; †which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;

*Chap. 10:28, 29; 12:25. †Matt. 4:17. Mark 1:14.

4 *God also bearing them witness, †both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and **gifts of the Holy Ghost, ††according to his own will?

*Mark 16:20. Acts 14:3; 10:11. Rom. 15:18, 19. 1 Cor. 2:4. †Acts 2:22, 42. **1 Cor. 12:4, 7, 11. ††Eph. 1:5, 9.

VII.

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection *the world to come, whereof we speak. *Chap. 6:5. 2 Pet. 3:12.

6 But one in a certain place testified, saying: *What is man, that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man, that thou visitest him?

*Job. 7:17. Ps. 8:4, etc.; 144:3.

7 Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:

8 *Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now †we see not yet all things put under him.

*Matt. 28:18. 1 Cor. 15:27. †1 Cor. 15:25.

9 But we see Jesus, *who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, †crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death **for every man.

*Phil. 2:7, 8, 9. †Acts 2:33. **John 8:16; 12:32. Rom. 5:18; 8:32.

10 *For it became him †for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make **the captain of their salvation ††perfect through sufferings.

*Luke 24:46. †Rom. 11:36. **Acts 3:15; 5:31. ††Luke 13:32.

11 For *both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which

cause the is not ashamed to call them brethren,

*Chap. 10:10, 14.
†Matt. 28:10. John 20:17.

12 Saying, *I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.

*Ps. 22:22, 25.

13 And again, as for me, *I will put my trust in him. And again, †Behold, here am I and the children **which God hath given me.

*Ps. 18:2. Is. 12:2.
†Is. 8:18. **John 10:29.

¶III.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he *also himself likewise took part of the same; †that through his death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

*John 1:14.
Rom. 8:3. †1 Cor. 15:54, 55.

15 And deliver them who *through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

*Luke 1:74. Rom. 8:15. 2 Tim. 1:7.

16 For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behooved him *to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be *a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

*Phil. 2:7. †Chap. 4:15.

18 *For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

*Chap 4:15, 16; 5:2; 7:25.

CHAPTER 3.

1 Therefore, ye holy brethren, partakers of *the heavenly calling, consider Christ Jesus, †the Apostle and High Priest of our confession;

*Rom. 1:7.
1 Cor. 1:2. Eph. 4:1. †Rom. 15:8.
Chap. 2:17; 4:14; 5:5.

2 Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all of the house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as *he who hath builded the house hath more honour than the house.

*Zech. 6:12. Matt. 16:18.

4 For every house is builded by some man; but *he that built all things is God.

*Eph. 2:10; 3:9. Chap. 1:2.

5 *And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as †a servant, **for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after;

*Verse 2. †Ex. 14:31.
Num. 12:7. **Deut. 18:15, 18, 19.

6 But Christ as *the son sat over his own house; †whose house are we, **if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

*Chap. 1:2.
†1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19. 1 Pet. 2:5.
**Verse 14. Matt. 10:22; 24:13.

7 Therefore as *the Holy Ghost saith: †To day if ye will hear his voice,

*2 Sam. 23:2.
Acts 1:16. †Verse 15. Ps. 95:7.

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the day of provocation, in the day of redemption in the wilderness:

9 Where your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my mighty works forty years.

10 Therefore was I grieved with that generation, and said: They do alway err in their hearts, and they have not known my ways.

11 So I swore in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.

III.

12 Take heed, my brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

14 For we now have become partakers of Christ, *if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end; *Verse 6.

15 While the scripture said: *To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the day of provocation. *Verse 7.

16 *For some, when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

*Num. 14:2, 4, 11, 24, 30.

17 But with whom was he grieved forty years? was it not with them that had sinned, *whose dead bodies fell in the wilderness?

*Num. 14:22, 29, etc.; 26:65. Ps. 106:26.

18 And *to whom God swore that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not.

*Num. 14:30. Deut. 1:34, 35.

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

CHAPTER 4.

1 Let *us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it. *Chap. 12:15.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 *For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said: †As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest; although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

*Chap. 3:14.

†Ps. 95:11. Chap. 3:11.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise: *And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.

*Gen. 2:2. Ex. 20:11; 31:17.

5 And again in this place: If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, *and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief:

*Chap. 3:19.

7 Again, he indicated a certain day, saying in David: Today, after so long a time; as it is said, *To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

*Ps. 95:7. Chap. 3:7.

8 For if Joshua had brought them into the rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth there-

fore a rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

11 Let us be diligent therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall ^{*}after the same example of unbelief.

^{*}Chap. 3:12, 18, 19.

III.

12 For the word of God is ^{*}quick, and powerful, and [†]sharper than any ^{**}two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is ^{††}a discerner of the thoughts and intent of the heart.

^{*}Is. 40:2. Jer. 23:29. [†]Prov. 5:4. ^{**}Eph. 6:17. Rev. 1:16; 2:16. ^{††}1 Cor. 14:24, 26.

13 ^{*}Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked [†]and open unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. ^{*}Psa. 33:13, 14; 90:8; 189:11, 12. [†]Job 26:6; 84:21.

14 Seeing then that we have ^{*}a great high priest, [†]that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, ^{**}let us hold fast our profession.

^{*}Chap. 3:1. [†]Chap. 7:26; 9:12, 24. ^{**}Chap. 10:23.

15 For ^{*}we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but [†]was in all points tempted like as we are, ^{**}yet without sin.

^{*}Is. 53:3. Chap. 2:18. [†]Luke 22:28. ^{**}Cor. 7:26. 1 Pet. 2:22.

16 ^{*}Let us therefore draw near boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain

mercy, and find grace to help in time of need. ^{*}Eph. 2:18; 3:12. Chap. 10:19, 21, 22.

CHAPTER 5.

1 For every high priest taken from among men ^{*}is ordained for men [†]in things pertaining to God, ^{**}that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins: ^{*}Chap. 8:3.

[†]Chap. 2:17. ^{**}Chap. 8:3, 4.

2 ^{*}Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that [†]he himself also is compassed with infirmity.

^{*}Chap. 2:18; 4:15. [†]Chap. 7:28.

3 And ^{*}for this reason he is bound, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

^{*}Lev. 4:3; 9:7; 16:6, 15, 16, 17. Chap. 7:27; 9:7.

4 ^{*}And no man taketh this honor unto himself, but he that is called of God, even as [†]Aaron.

^{*}2 Chr. 26:18. [†]Ex. 28:1. Num. 16:5, 40.

5 ^{*}So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, [†]Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

^{*}John 8:54. [†]Psa. 2:7.

6 As he saith also in another place, ^{*}Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

^{*}Psa. 110:4. Chap. 7:17, 21.

7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had ^{*}offered up prayers and supplications [†]with strong crying and tears unto him ^{**}that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared;

^{*}Matt. 26:39, 42, 44. [†]Psa. 22:1. Matt. 27:46, 50. ^{**}Matt. 26:53.

8 *Though he was the Son, yet, learned he obedience by the things which he suffered;

*Chap. 3:6. †Phil. 2:8.

9 And *having been made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

*Chap. 2:10; 11:40.

10 Named of God an high priest *after the order of Melchisedec. *Verse 6. Chap. 6:20.

11 Of whom *we have many things to say, and hard of interpretation, seeing ye are †dull of hearing. *John 16:12. 2 Pet. 3:16. †Matt. 18:15.

¶II.

12 For when by reason of the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teaches you *the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of †milk, and not of solid food.

*Chap. 6:1. †1 Cor. 3:1, 2, 3.

13 For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is *a babe.

*1 Cor. 13:11; 14:20. Eph. 4:14.

14 But solid food belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of their senses are trained *to distinguish between good and evil. *Is. 7:15. 1 Cor. 2:14, 15.

CHAPTER 6.

1 Wherefore *leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us press on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance †from dead works, and of faith toward God, *Phil. 3:12.

13, 14. Chap. 5:12. †Chap. 9:14.

2 *Of the doctrine of baptisms, †and of laying on of hands, **and of resurrection of the dead, ††and of eternal judgment.

*Acts 19:4, 5.

†Acts 8:14, 15, 16. **Acts 17:31, 32. ††Acts 24:25. Rom. 2:16.

3 And this will we do, *if God permit.

*Acts 18:21. 1 Cor. 4:19.

4 For *it is impossible for those †who were once enlightened, and have tasted of **the heavenly gift, and ††were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, *Matt. 12:31, 32. 2 Pet. 2:20, 21. †Chap. 10:32. **John 4:10; 6:32. ††Gal. 3:2, 5.

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of *the world to come,

*Chap. 2:5.

6 If they then shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; *seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

*Chap. 10:29.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them for whom it is dressed, *receiveth blessing from God:

*Ps. 65:10.

8 *But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto a curse; whose end is to be burned.

*Is. 5:6.

¶II.

9 But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For *God is not unrighteous to forget †your work and

labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ****ministered** to the saints and do still minister.

*Rom. 3:4. 2 Thess. 1:6. 7. †1 Thess. 1:3. ****Rom. 15:25. 2 Cor. 8:4.**

11 And we desire that ***every** one of you do shew the same diligence †to the full assurance of hope unto the end; *Chap. 3:6. 14. †Col. 2:2.

12 That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience ***inherit** the promises.

*Chap. 10:36.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, ***he sware** by himself,

*Gen. 22:16. 17. Ps. 105:9.

14 Saying, Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee.

15 And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily swear by the greater: and ***an oath** for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

*Ex. 22:11.

17 Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew unto ***the heirs** of promise †the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath, *Chap. 11:9. †Rom. 11:29.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope ***set** before us:

*Chap. 12:1.

19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, ***and which**

entereth into that within the vail;

*Lev. 16:15. Chap. 9:7.

20 ***Whither** the forerunner has for us entered, even Jesus, †having become a high priest forever after the order of Melchisedec.

*Chap. 4:14; 8:1; 9:24. †Chap. 3:1.

CHAPTER 7.

1 For this ***Melchisedec**, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him; *Gen. 14:18, etc.

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace;

3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God; abideth a priest continually.

¶II.

4 Now consider how great this man was, ***unto** whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

*Gen. 14:20.

5 And verily ***they** that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham:

*Num. 18:21, 26.

6 But he whose descent is not counted from them received tithes of Abraham,

*and blessed him that had the promises. *Gen. 14:19.

†Rom. 4:13. Gal. 3:16.

7 And without all contradiction the less is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes; but there he receiveth them, *of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

*Chap. 5:6; 6:20.

9 And as I may so say, Levi also, who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

III.

11 *If therefore perfection were through the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law,) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

*Verses 18, 19. Gal. 2:21. Chap. 8:7.

12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For it is evident that *our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

*Is. 11:1. Matt. 1:3.

Luke 3:33. Rom. 1:3. Rev. 5:5.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest.

16 Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

17 For he testifieth: *Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

*Ps. 110:4. Chap. 5:6, 10; 6:20.

18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before for *the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

*Rom. 8:3. Gal. 4:9.

19 For *the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope did; by the which **we draw nigh unto God.

*Acts 13:39. Rom. 8:20, 21. †Chap. 6:18; 8:8.

**Rom. 5:2. Eph. 2:18; 3:12.

IV

20 And inasmuch as not without an oath he was made priest:

21 For those priests were made without an oath; but this with an oath by him that said unto him: *The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

*Ps. 110:4.

22 By which also *was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.

*Chap. 8:8; 9:15; 12:24.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death;

24 But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore, he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God

by him, seeing he ever liveth
*to make intercession for
them. *Rom. 8:34. 1 Tim. 2:5.

26 For such an high priest
became us, *who is holy,
guiltless, undefiled, separate
from sinners, †and made
higher than the heavens.

*Chap. 4:15.
†Eph. 1:20; 4:10. Chap. 8:1.

27 Who needeth not daily,
like those high priests, to of-
fer up sacrifice, *first for his
own sins, †and then for the
people's sin; for **this he did
once, when he offered up him-
self.

*Lev. 9:7; 16:6. 11. †Lev. 16:16.
**Rom. 6:10. Chap. 9:12.

28 For the law maketh
*men high priests having in-
firmity; but the word of the
oath, which was since the law,
appointed the Son †perfected
for evermore. *Chap. 5:1, 2.

†Chap. 2:10; 5:9.

CHAPTER 8.

1 Now of the things which
we have spoken this is the
sum: We have such an high
priest, *who set down on the
right hand of the throne of
the Majesty in the heavens;

*Eph. 1:20. Col. 3:1. Chap. 1:3.

2 A minister of *the sanc-
tuary, of †the true taberna-
cle, which the Lord pitched,
and not man.

*Chap. 9:8; 12:24. †Chap. 9:11.

3 For *every high priest is
ordained to offer gifts and
sacrifices: wherefore †it is of
necessity that this high priest
also have somewhat to offer.
*Chap. 5:1. †Eph. 5:2. Chap. 9:14.

4 For if he were on earth,
he should not be a priest, see-
ing that there are priests that

offer gifts according to the
law.

5 Who serve unto the ex-
ample and *shadow of heav-
enly things, as Moses was ad-
monished of God when he
was about to make the tab-
ernacle: †for, See, saith he,
that thou make all things ac-
cording to the pattern shewed
to thee in the mount.

*Col. 2:17. Chap. 9:23; 10:1.

†Ex. 25:40; 26:30; 27:8.

¶II.

6 But now *hath he ob-
tained a more excellent min-
istry, by how much also he is
the mediator of a better cove-
nant, which was established
upon better promises.

*2 Cor. 3:6, 8, 9. Chap. 7:22.

7 *For if that first cove-
nant had been faultless, then
should no place have been
sought for a second.

*Chap. 7:11, 18.

8 For finding fault with
them, he saith, *Behold, the
days come, saith the Lord,
when I will make a new cov-
enant with the house of Is-
rael and with the house of
Judah: *Jer. 31:31, 32, 33, 34.

9 Not according to the
covenant that I made with
their fathers in the day
when I took them by the hand
to lead them out of the land
of Egypt; because they con-
tinued not in my covenant,
and I regarded them not,
saith the Lord.

10 For *this is the cove-
nant that I will make with
the house of Israel after those
days, saith the Lord; I will
put my laws into their mind,

and write them in their hearts: and †I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people:

*Chap. 10:16. †Zech. 8:8.

11 And *they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

*Is. 54:13. John 6:45.

12 For I will be merciful to their iniquities *and their sins will I remember no more.

*Rom. 11:27. Chap. 10:17.

13 *In that he saith, a new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away.

*2 Cor. 5:17.

CHAPTER 9.

1 Then verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a *worldly sanctuary. *Ex. 25:3.

2 *For there was a tabernacle made; the first, †wherein was **the candlestick, and ††the table, and the shewbread; which is called the sanctuary.

*Ex. 26:1. †Ex. 26:35; 40:4.

**Ex. 25:31. ††Ex. 25:23, 30.

3 *And after the second vail, the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all;

*Ex. 26:31, 33; 40:3, 21. Chap. 6:19.

4 Which had the golden censer, and *the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was †the golden pot that had manna, and **Aaron's rod

that budded, and ††the tables of the covenant;

*Ex. 25:10. †Ex. 16:33, 34. **Num. 17:10. ††Ex. 25:16, 21; 34:29; 40:20.

5 And *over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercyseat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.

*Ex. 25:18, 22. Lev. 16:2. 1 Kings 8:6, 7.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, *the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God.

*Num. 28:3. Dan. 8:11.

7 But into the second went the high priest alone *once every year, not without blood, †which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people.

*Verse 25. Ex. 30:10. †Chap. 5:3; 7:27.

8 *The Holy Spirit this signifying, that †the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

*Chap. 10:19, 20. †John 14:6.

9 Which was a figure for the time when present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, *that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience;

*Gal. 3:21. Chap. 7:18, 19; 10:1, 11.

10 Which stood only in *meats and drinks, and †divers washings, **and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation.

*Col. 2:16. †Num. 19:7, etc. **Eph. 2:15. Col. 2:20.

III.

(Epistle on 5th Sunday in Lent.
Verses 11-15.)

11 But Christ being come
*an high priest †of good
things to come, **by a great-
er and more perfect taber-
nacle, not made with hands,
that is to say, not of this
building;

*Chap. 3:1.
†Chap. 10:1. **Chap. 8:2.

12 Neither *by the blood
of goats and calves, but †by
his own blood he entered in
**once into the holy place,
††having obtained eternal re-
demption for us.

*Chap. 10:4. †Acts 20:28.
Eph. 1:7. Col. 1:14. **Verses 26,
28. Zech. 8:9. ††Dan. 9:24.

13 For if *the blood of
bulls and of goats, and †the
ashes of an heifer sprink-
ling the unclean, sanctifieth
to the purifying of the flesh:

*Lev. 16:14, 16.
†Num. 19:2, 17, etc.

14 How much more *shall
the blood of Christ, †who
through the eternal Spirit
**offered himself without
blemish unto God, ††purge
your conscience from ***dead
works †††to serve the living
God?

*1 Pet. 1:19. Rev. 1:4. †1 Pet. 3:18.
**Eph. 5:2. Titus 2:14. Chap. 7:
27. ††Chap. 1:3. ***Chap. 6:1.
†††Luke 1:74.

III.

15 *And for this cause †he
is the mediator of the new
testament, **that by means
of death, for the redemption
of the transgressions that
were under the first testa-
ment, they which are called
might receive the promise of
eternal inheritance.

*1 Tim. 2:5. †Chap.
7:22; 8:6; 12:24. **Rom. 3:25.

16 For where a testament
is, there must of necessity
be the death of the testator.

17 For *a testament is of
force after men are dead:
otherwise it is of no strength
at all while the testator liv-
eth.

*Gal. 3:15.

18 *Whereupon neither
the first testament was dedi-
cated without blood. *Ex. 24:8.

19 For when Moses had
spoken every commandment
to all the people according to
the law, *he took the blood of
calves and of goats, †with
water, and scarlet wool, and
hyssop, and sprinkled both
the book, and all the people,

*Ex. 24:5, 6, 8. Lev. 16:
14, 15, 18. †Lev. 14:4, 6, 7.

20 Saying, *This is the
blood of the testament which
God hath commanded to you.

*Ex. 24:8. Matt. 26:28.

21 Moreover *he sprinkled
with blood both the taber-
nacle, and all the vessels of
the ministry.

*Ex. 29:12.
Lev. 8:15, 19; 16:14, 15, 16, 18, 19.

22 And almost all things
are by the law purged with
blood; and *without shed-
ding of blood is no remission.

*Lev. 17:11.

23 It was therefore neces-
sary that *the patterns of
things in the heavens should
be purified with these; but
the heavenly things them-
selves with better sacrifices
than these.

*Chap. 8:5.

IV.

24 For *Christ entered not
into the holy places made
with hands, which are the
figures of †the true; but into

heaven itself, now **to appear in the presence of God for us:

*Chap. 6:20.

†Chap. 8:2. **Rom. 8:34.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as *the high priest entereth into the holy place year by year with blood of others;

*Verse 7.

26 For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now *once †in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

*Verse 12. 1 Pet. 3:18.

†1 Cor. 10:11. Gal. 4:4.

27 *But inasmuch as it is appointed unto men once to die, †but after this the judgment cometh;

*Gen. 3:19.

Ecc. 3:20. †2 Cor. 5:10.

28 So also *Christ having once been †offered to bear the sins **of many; ††shall appear the second time without sin unto salvation to them that wait for him.

*Rom. 6:10. 1 Pet. 3:18. †1 Pet. 2:

24. **Matt. 26:28. ††Titus 2:13.

CHAPTER 10.

1 For the law having *a shadow †of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, **can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make those who drew nigh perfect.

*Col. 2:17. Chap. 8:5.

†Chap. 9:11. **Chap. 9:9.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins.

3 *But in those sacrifices

there is a remembrance again made of sins every year.

*Lev. 16:21. Chap. 9:7.

4 For *it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

*Verse 11. Mic. 6:6. 7. Chap. 9:13.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me:

*Ps. 40:6. Is. 1:11. Jer. 6:20.

Amos. 5:21.

6 In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure.

7 Then said I, Lo, I come in the volume of the book it is written of me, to do thy will, O God.

8 Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered according to the law;

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 *By which have we been sanctified †through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

*John 17:19.

Chap. 13:12. †Chap. 9:12.

11 And every priest standeth *daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, the †which can never take away sins:

*Num. 28:3. Chap. 7:27. †Verse 4.

12 *But Jesus, when he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;

*Col. 3:1. Chap. 1:3.

13 From henceforth expecting *his enemies be made the footstool of his feet.

*Ps. 110:1.
Acts 2:35. 1 Cor. 15:25. Chap. 1:13.

14 For by one offering *he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. *Verse 1.

15 Whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before,

16 *This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them;

*Jer. 31:33, 34. Chap. 8:10, 12.

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

III.

18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more a sin offering.

19 Having therefore brethren, *boldness to enter into the holiest place by the blood of Jesus. *Rom. 5:2.

Eph. 2:18; 3:12. †Chap. 9:8, 12.

20 By *a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, †through the vail, that is to say, his flesh;

*John 10:9; 14:6.
Chap. 9:8. †Chap. 9:3.

21 And having *an high priest over †the house of God; *Chap. 4:14. †1 Tim. 3:15.

22 *Let us draw near with a true heart †in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled **from an evil conscience, and our body washed with pure water. *Chap. 4:16. †Eph. 8:12. James 1:6. **Chap. 9:14.

23 *Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; for †he is faithful that promised.

*Chap. 4:14.
†1 Cor. 1:9; 10:13. 1 Thess. 5:24.

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works:

25 *Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but encouraging one another to draw nigh and †so much the more, as ye see **the day approaching.

*Acts 2:42. Jude 19. †Rom. 13:11.

**Phil. 4:5. 2 Pet. 3:9, 11, 14.

26 For *if we sin wilfully †after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

*Num. 15:30. †2 Pet. 2:20, 21.

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and *fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

*Ezek. 36:5. Zeph. 1:18; 3:8.

28 *He that despised Moses' law died without mercy †under the word of two or three witnesses: *Chap. 2:2. †Deut. 17:2, 6; 19:15. Matt. 18:16.

29 *Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and †hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, **and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

*Chap. 2:3; 12:25.
†1 Cor. 11:29. **Matt. 12:31, 32.

30 For we know him that hath said, *Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will rec-

ompense, saith the Lord.
And again, †The Lord shall
judge his people.

*Deut. 32:35. Rom. 12:19.

†Deut. 32:36. Ps. 50:4.

31 *It is a fearful thing to
fall into the hands of the liv-
ing God.

*Luke 12:5.

IV.

32 But *call to remem-
brance the former days, in
which, †after ye were illumi-
nated, ye endured **a great
fight of afflictions; *Gal. 8:4.
†Chap. 6:4. **Phil. 1:29, 30.

33 Partly, whilst ye were
made *a gazingstock both
by reproaches and afflic-
tions; and partly, whilst †ye
became companions of them
that were so used.

*1 Cor. 4:9. †Phil. 1:7; 4:14.

34 For ye had compassion
of me *in my bonds, and
†took joyfully the spoiling of
your goods, knowing in
yourselves that **ye have in
heaven a better and an en-
during substance.

*Phil. 1:7. 2 Tim. 1:16. †Matt. 5:
12. Acts 5:41. **Matt. 6:20; 19:21.

35 Cast not away there-
fore your confidence, *which
hath great recompence of re-
ward.

*Matt. 5:12; 10:32.

36 *For ye have need of
patience, that, after ye have
done the will of God, †ye
might receive the promise.

*Luke 21:19.

†Col. 3:24. 1 Pet. 1:9.

37 For *yet a little while,
and †he that shall come will
come, and will not tarry.

*Luke 18:8.

2 Pet. 3:9. †Hab. 2:3, 4.

38 *The just shall live by
faith: but if any man turn

back, my soul shall have no
pleasure in him.

*Rom. 1:17. Gal. 3:11.

39 But we are not of them
*who turn back unto perdi-
tion; but of them that †be-
lieve to the saving of the
soul.

*2 Pet. 2:20, 21. †Acts 16:30, 31.

CHAPTER 11.

1 Now faith is the sub-
stance of things hoped for,
the evidence *of things not
seen.

*Rom. 8:24, 25.

2 For *by it the elders ob-
tained a good report.

*Verse 39.

3 By faith we understand
that *the worlds were framed
by the word of God, so that
things which are seen were
not made of things which do
appear.

*Gen. 1:1. Ps. 33:6. 2 Pet. 3:5.

4 By faith *Abel offered
unto God a more excellent
sacrifice than Cain, through
which he obtained witness
that he was righteous, God
testifying of his gifts; and
by it he being dead, †yet
speaketh.

*Gen. 4:4. 1 John 3:12.

†Gen. 4:10. Matt. 23:35.

5 By faith *Enoch was
translated that he should not
see death; and was not
found, because God trans-
lated him: for before his
translation he had this tes-
timony, that he pleased God.

*Gen. 5:22, 24.

6 But without faith it is
impossible to please God:
for he that cometh to God
must believe that he is, and
that he is a rewarder of them
that diligently seek him,

7 By faith *Noah, being warned of God concerning of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, †prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of **the righteousness which is by faith.

*Gen. 6:13, 22.
†1 Pet. 3:20. **Rom. 3:22; 4:13.

8 By faith *Abraham, when he was called to go out unto a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; he went out, not knowing whither he went.

*Gen. 12:1, 4. Acts 7:2, 3, 4.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, *dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise:

*Gen. 12:8; 13:3, 18; 18:1, 9.

10 For he looked for *a city which hath foundations, †whose builder and maker is God.

*Chap. 12:22. †Rev. 21:2, 10.

11 Through faith also *Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him †faithful who had promised.

*Gen. 17:19; 18:11, 14; 21:2.
†Rom. 4:21. Chap. 10:23.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and *him as good as dead, †so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. *Rom. 4:19. †Gen. 22:17.

13 These all died in faith, *not having received the promises, but †having seen

them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and **confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

*Verse 39. †John 8:56.
**Gen. 23:4; 47:9. 1 Chr. 29:15.
1 Pet. 1:17; 2:11.

14 For they that say such things *make it manifest that they seek a country of their own. *Chap. 13:14.

15 And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they would have had opportunity to have returned.

16 But now they desire a better, that is, an heavenly country, wherefore God is not ashamed *to be called their God; for †he hath prepared for them a city.

*Ex. 3:6, 15.
Matt. 22:32. †Phil. 3:20.

17 By faith *Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises †offered up his only begotten son. *Gen. 22:1, 9. †James 2:21.

18 Of whom it was said, *That in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

*Gen. 21:12. Rom. 9:7.

19 Accounting that God *was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. *Rom. 4:17, 19, 21.

20 By faith *Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. *Gen. 27:27, 39.

21 By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, *blessed each of the sons of Joseph; and †worshiped, leaning upon the top of his staff.

*Gen. 48:5, 16, 20. †Gen. 47:31.

22 By faith *Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones. *Gen. 50:24, 25. Ex. 13:19.

¶II.

23 By faith *Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's †commandment. *Ex. 2:2. Acts 7:20. †Ex. 1:16, 22.

24 By faith *Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of P'haraoh's daughter;

*Ex. 2:10, 11.

25 *Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season.

*Ps. 84:10.

26 Esteeming *the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto †the recompence of a reward.

*Chap. 13:13. †Chap. 10:35.

27 By faith *he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as †seeing him who is invisible.

*Ex. 10:28, 29; 12:37; 13:17, 18. †Verse 18.

28 Through faith* he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. *Ex. 12:21, etc.

29 By faith *they passed through the Red Sea as by dry land which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned.

*Ex. 14:22, 29.

¶III.

30 By faith *the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days.

*Josh. 6:20.

31 By faith *the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when †she had received the spies with peace.

*Josh. 6:23. James 2:25. †Josh. 2:1.

¶IV.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of *Gedeon, and of †Barak, and of **Samson, and of ††Jephthae; of ***David also, and †††Samuel, and of the prophets: *Judg. 6:11.

†Judg. 4:6. **Judg. 13:24. ††Judg.

11:1; 12:7. ***1 Sam. 16:1, 13;

17:45. †††1 Sam. 1:20; 12:20.

33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, *obtained promises, †stopped the mouths of lions,

*2 Sam. 7:11, etc.

†Judg. 14:5, 6. 1 Sam. 17:34, 35.

34 *Quenched the violence of fire, †escaped the edge of the sword, **out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

*Dan. 3:25.

†1 Sam. 20:1. 1 Kings 19:3. **2

Kings 20:7, etc. Job. 42:10.

35 *Women received their dead raised to life again; and others were †tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection:

*1 Kings 17:22.

2 Kings 4:35. †Acts 22:25.

36 And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourg-

ings, yea, moreover *of bonds and imprisonment:

*Gen. 39:20. Jer. 20:2; 37:15.

37 *They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: †they wandered about **in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented;

*1 Kings 21:13. 2 Chr. 24:21.

†2 Kings 1:8. **Zech. 13:4.

38 (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and *in dens and caves of the earth.

*1 Kings 18:4; 19:9.

39 And these all, *having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: *Verses 2, 13.

40 God having provided *some better thing for us, that they without us should not be †made perfect.

*Chap. 7:22; 8:6.

†Chap. 5:9; 12:23. Rev. 6:11.

CHAPTER 12.

1 Therefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, *let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and †let us run **with patience the race that is set before us,

*Col. 3:8. 1 Pet. 2:1.

†1 Cor. 9:24. **Rom. 12:12.

2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; *who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and †hath set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

*Luke 24:26. Phil. 2:8, etc.

1 Pet. 1:11. †Ps. 110:1. 1 Pet. 3:22.

¶II.

3 *For consider him that hath endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, †lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

*Matt. 10:24, 25.

John 15:20. †Gal. 6:9.

4 *Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

*1 Cor. 10:13.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which reasoneth unto you as unto children: *My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art reprov'd of him: *Job 5:17. Prov. 3:11.

6 For *whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. *Ps. 94:12; 119:75.

Prov. 3:12. James 1:12.

7 *If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

*Deut. 8:5. 2 Sam. 7:14. Prov. 13:24.

8 But if ye be without chastisement, *whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.

*Ps. 73:15. 1 Pet. 5:9.

9 Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto *the Father of spirits, and live? *Num. 16:22; 27:16.

Job 12:10. Eccl. 12:7.

10 For they verily for a few days chastened us as seemed good to them, but he for our profit, *that we might be partakers of his holiness.

*Lev. 11:44; 19:2. 1 Pet. 1:15, 16.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth *the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. *James 3:18.

12 Wherefore *lift up the hands that hang down, and the feeble knees;

*Job 4:3, 4. Is. 35:3.

13 *And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; †but let it rather be healed.

Prov. 4:26, 27. †Gal. 6:1.

¶III.

14 *Follow after peace with all men, and the holiness, †without which no man shall see the Lord:

*Ps. 34:14.
Rom. 12:18; 14:19. 2 Tim. 2:22. †Matt. 5:8. 2 Cor. 7:1.

15 *Looking diligently †lest any man fail of the grace of God; **lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;

*2 Cor. 6:1.
†Gal. 5:4. **Deut. 29:18.

16 *Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, †who for one mess of lintels sold his birthright.

*Eph. 5:3. Col. 3:5. †Gen. 25:33.

17 For ye know how that afterward, *when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: †for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it diligently with tears.

*Gen. 27:34, 36, 38. †Chap. 6:6.

¶IV.

18 For ye are not come unto *the mount that might be touched, and that burned

with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest,

*Ex. 19:12, 18, 19; 20:18. Deut. 4:11; 5:22.

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard *intreated that no word should be spoken to them any more:

*Ex. 20:10.
Deut. 5:5, 25; 18:16.

20 For they could not endure that which was commanded, *And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart:

*Ex. 19:13.

21 *And so terrible was the appearance that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:

*Ex. 19:16.

22 But ye are come *unto mount Sion, †unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, **and to an innumerable company of angels.

*Gal. 4:26. Rev. 3:12.
†Phil. 3:20. **Deut. 33:2.

23 To the general assembly and church of *the first-born, †which are written down in heaven, and to God **the Judge of all, and to the spirits of righteous men ††perfected,

*Ex. 4:22. Rev. 14:4.
†Luke 10:20. Rev. 13:8. **Gen. 18:25. ††Phil. 3:12. Chap. 11:40.

24 And to Jesus *the mediator of the new covenant, and to †the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better **than that of Abel. *Chap. 8:6; 9:15.

†Ex. 24:8. Chap. 10:22. 1 Pet. 1:2. **Gen. 4:10. Chap. 11:4.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For *if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth,

much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven;

*Chap. 2:2, 3; 3:17; 10:28, 29.

26 *Whose voice then shook the earth; but now he hath promised, saying, †Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

*Ex. 19:18. †Hag. 2:6.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth *the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. *Ps. 102:26. Matt. 24:35.

2 Pet. 3:10. Rev. 21:1.

28 Wherefore, receiving a kingdom which cannot be shaken, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear:

29 For *our God is a consuming fire.

*Ex. 24:17. Deut. 4:24; 9:3. Ps. 50:8; 97:3. Is. 66:15. 2 Thess. 1:8. Chap. 10:27.

CHATER 13.

1 Let *brotherly love continue. *Rom. 12:10. 1 Thess. 4:9.

2 *Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares. *Matt. 25:35. Rom. 12:13. 1 Tim. 3:2. 1 Pet. 4:9.

3 *Remember them that are in prison, as bound with them; and them which suffer adversity, as being yourselves also in the body.

*Matt. 25:36. Rom. 12:15. 1 Cor. 12:26. Col. 4:18. 1 Pet. 3:8.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: *but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

*1 Cor. 6:9. Gal. 5:19, 21. Eph. 5:5.

5 Let your conversation be without covetousness; and *be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, †I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

*Matt. 6:25, 34. Phil. 4:11, 12. †Gen. 28:15. Deut. 31:6, 8.

6 So that we may boldly say, *The Lord is my helper, I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

*Ps. 27:1; 56:4, 11, 12; 118:6.

7 *Remember them that have the rule over you, and those who have spoken the word of God unto you: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

*Verse 17. †Chap. 6:12.

8 Jesus Christ *the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

*John 8:58. Chap. 1:12.

9 *Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace; †not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

*Eph. 4:14; 5:6. Col. 2:4, 8. †Rom. 14:17.

10 *We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle.

*1 Cor. 9:13; 10:18.

11 For *the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp.

*Ex. 29:14. Lev. 4:11, 12, 21.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, *suffered without the gate.

*John 19:17. Acts 7:58.

13 Let us therefore go forth

unto him without the camp, bearing *his reproach.

*Chap. 11:26. 1 Pet. 4:14.

14 *For here have we no continuing city, but we seek the one which is to come.

*Mic. 2:10. Phil. 3:20.

15 *Through him therefore let us offer †the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, **the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name.

*Eph. 5:20. 1 Pet. 2:5. †Lev. 7:12. Ps. 50:14, 23; 69:30, 31.

16 *But to do good and to communicate forget not: for †with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

*Rom. 12:13. †2 Cor. 9:12. Phil. 4:18.

¶II.

17 *Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves; for †they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

*Verse 7. Phil. 2:29. 1 Tim. 5:17. †Ezek. 3:17; 33:2, 7.

18 *Pray for us: for we trust we have †a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.

*Rom. 15:30. Eph. 6:19. Col. 4:3. 1 Thess. 5:25. †Acts 23:1.

19 But I exhort you *the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

*Philem. 22.

¶III.

20 Now *the God of peace, †that brought again from the dead **the great shepherd of the sheep, ††through the blood of the everlasting covenant, even our Lord Jesus

*Rom. 15:33. 1 Thess. 5:23. †Acts 2:24. Rom. 4:24; 8:11. 1 Cor. 6:14. **Is. 40:11. Ezek. 34:23. John 10:11. ††Zech 9:11. Chap. 10:29.

21 *Make you perfect in every good word and work to do his will, †working in you that which is wellpleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; **to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

*2 Thess. 2:17. 1 Pet. 5:10. †Phil. 2:13. **Gal. 1:5.

22 And I exhort you, brethren, bear the word of exhortation: for *I have written a letter unto you in few words.

*1 Pet. 5:12.

23 Know ye that *our brother Timothy †is set at liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

*1 Thess. 3:2. †1 Tim. 6:12.

¶IV.

24 Salute all them *that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

*Verses 7, 17.

25 *Grace be with you all. Amen.

*Titus 3:15.

THE EPISTLE OF JAMES THE JUST

CHAPTER 1.

1 *James, †a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, **to the twelve tribes ††which are scattered abroad, greeting.

*Acts 12:17; 15:13.

†Titus 1:1. **Acts 26:7.

††Deut. 32:26. Acts 2:5; 8:1.

¶II.

2 My brethren, *count it all joy †when ye fall into manifold trials;

Matt. 5:12. Acts 5:41. †1 Pet. 1:6.

3 *Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

*Rom. 5:3.

4 And let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

¶III.

5 *If any of you lack wisdom, †let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and **it shall be given him.

*1 Kings 3:9, 11, 12. †Matt. 21:22.

Mark 11:24. Luke 11:9.

John 14:13. **Jer. 29:12.

6 *But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven by the wind and tossed.

*Mark 11:24. 1 Tim. 2:8.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

¶IV.

9 But let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted,

10 And the rich, in that he is made low; because *as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.

*Job 14:2.
Ps. 37:2; 90:5, 6; 102:11; 103:15.

11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth, so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways.

¶V.

12 *Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive †the crown of life, **which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

*Job 5:17. Prov. 3:11, 12. †1 Cor. 9:25. 1 Pet. 5:4. Rev. 2:10.

**Matt. 10:22.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man:

14 But every man is tempted, by his own lust,

when he is drawn away, and enticed.

15 Then *when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin, and sin, when it is finished, †bringeth forth death.

*Job 15:35. †Rom. 6:21, 23.

¶VI.

(Epistle on 4th Sunday after Easter. Verses 16-21.)

16 Be not be deceived my beloved brethren.

17 *Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, †with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

*John 3:27. 1 Cor. 4:7.

†Nub. 23:19. 1 Sam. 15:29.

18 *Of his own will begat he us by the word of truth, †that we should be a kind of **firstfruits of his creatures.

*John 1:13.

1 Pet. 1:28. †Eph. 1:12. Rev. 14:4.

19 Therefore, my beloved brethren, *let every man be swift to hear, †slow to speak, **slow to wrath:

*Eccl. 5:1. †Prov. 10:19;

17:27. **Prov. 14:17; 16:32.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore *lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, †which is able to save your souls.

*Col. 3:8. 1 Pet. 2:1.

†Acts 13:26. 1 Pet. 1:9.

¶VII.

(Epistle on 5th Sunday after Easter. Verses 22-27.)

22 But *be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

*Matt. 7:21. Luke 6:46; 11:28.

23 For *if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass:

*Luke 6:47, etc.

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth away, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But *whoso looketh into the perfect †law of liberty, and so continueth therein, being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

*2 Cor. 3:18.

†Chap. 2:12. **John 13:17.

26 If any man among you thinketh himself to be religious, and *bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain.

*Ps. 34:13; 39:1. 1 Pet. 3:10.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before our God the Father is this, *To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, †and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

*Is. 1:16, 17; 58:6, 7.

Matt. 25:36. †Rom. 12:2.

CHAPTER 2.

1 My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, *the Lord of glory, with †respect of persons.

*1 Cor. 2:8. †Verse 9.

Lev. 19:15. Deut. 1:17; 16:19.

2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly clothes, and there come in also a poor man in vile clothes;

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him,

Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit down there by my footstool;

4 Are ye not partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?

5 Harken, my beloved brethren, *Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom **which he hath promised to them that love him?

*John 7:48. 1 Cor. 1:26, 28.
†Luke 12:21. Rev. 2:9. **Ex. 20:6. 1 Sam. 2:30. Prov. 8:17.

6 But *ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, †and draw you before the judgment seats?

*1 Cor. 11:22.
†Acts 13:50; 17:6.

7 Do not they blaspheme that good name by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well:

*Lev. 19:18.
Matt. 22:39. Rom. 13:8, 9.

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, *he is guilty of all.

*Deut. 27:26. Matt. 5:19.

11 For he that said, *Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

*Ex. 20:13, 14.

12 So speak ye, and so do,

as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For *he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and †mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

*Job 22:6, etc. Prov. 21:13.
Matt. 6:15. †1 John 4:17, 18.

¶II.

14 *What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

*Matt. 7:26. Chap. 1:23.

15 *If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

*Job 31:19, 20.

16 And *one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

*1 John 3:13.

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead by itself alone.

18 Yea, a man will say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith apart from thy works, *and I by my works will shew thee my faith.

*Chap. 3:13.

19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: *the devils also believe, and tremble.

*Matt. 8:29. Mark 1:24.
5:7. Luke 4:34.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, *when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

*Gen. 22:9, 12.

22 Seest thou *that faith wrought with his works, and by works was his faith made perfect? *Heb. 11:17.

23 And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, *Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called †the Friend of God.

*Gen. 15:6.
Rom. 4:3. †2 Chr. 20:7.

24 Ye see then that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

25 Likewise also *was not Rahab justified by works, in that she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

*Josh. 2:1. Heb. 11:31.

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead.

CHAPTER 3.

1 My brethren, *let not everybody undertake to be teachers, †knowing that we who teach shall receive the severer judgment.

*Matt. 23:8, 14.
1 Pet. 5:3. †Luke 6:37.

2 For *in many things we all offend. †If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able to bridle the whole body also.

*1 Kings 8:46. 2 Chr. 6:36.

1 John 1:8. †Ps. 34:13.
1 Pet. 3:10.

3 Behold, *we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body.

*Ps. 32:9.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and driven of fierce

winds, yet are they turned about by a very small helm, whithersoever the helmsman wisheth.

5 So *the tongue also is a little member, and †boasteth great things. Behold how great a forest a little fire kindleth!

*Prov. 12:18; 15:2.
†Ps. 12:3; 73:8, 9.

6 And *the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity among our members, †it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and is is set on fire by hell.

*Prov. 16:27.
†Matt. 15:11. Mark 7:16, 20, 23.

7 For every kind of beasts, and birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind:

8 But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, *full of deadly poison.

*Ps. 140:3.

9 Therewith bless we God, the Father; and therewith curse we men, *which are made after likeness of Gods.

*Gen. 1:26; 5:1; 9:6.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.

III.

13 *Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew

out of a good conversation
†his works with meekness and
wisdom. *Gal. 6:4. †Chap. 2:18.

14 But if ye have *bitter
envying and strife in your
hearts, †glory not, and lie not
against the truth.

*Rom. 13:13. †Rom. 2:17, 23.

15 *This wisdom cometh
not down from above, but is
earthly, sensual, devilish.

*Phil. 3:19. Chap. 1:17.

16 For *where envying and
strife is, there is confusion
and every evil work.

*1 Cor. 3:3. Gal. 5:20.

17 But *the wisdom that is
from above is first pure, then
peaceable, gentle, and easy to
be intreated, full of mercy
and good fruits, without partiality,
†without hypocrisy.

*1 Cor. 2:6, 7. †Rom. 12:9.

18 *The fruit of righteousness
is sown in peace by them
that make peace.

*Prov. 11:18. Hos. 10:12. Matt. 5:9.

CHAPTER 4.

1 Whence come wars and
fightings among you? come
they not even of your lusts
and pleasures *that war in
your members? So Verse 3.

*Rom. 7:23. 1 Pet. 2:11.

2 Ye lust, and have not:
ye kill, and desire to have,
and cannot obtain: ye fight
and war, yet ye have not, be-
cause ye ask not.

3 *Ye ask, and receive not,
†because ye ask amiss, that
ye may consume it in your
lusts. *Job 27:9; 35:12. Mic. 3:4.

Zech. 7:13. †Ps. 66:18.

4 *Ye adulterers and adul-
teresses, know ye not that
†the friendship of the world

is enmity with God? **who-
soever therefore will be a
friend of the world maketh
himself the enemy of God.

*Ps. 73:27. †1 John 2:15.

**John 15:19; 17:14.

5 Do ye think that the
scripture saith in vain, *The
spirit that dwelleth in us
lusteth to envy? *Gen. 6:5.

8:21. Num. 11:20. Prov. 21:10.

6 But he giveth more
grace. Wherefore the scrip-
tures saith: *God resisteth
the proud, but giveth grace
to the humble.

*Job 22:29. Ps. 138:6.

Prov. 3:34; 29:23. Matt. 23:12.

¶II.

7 Submit yourselves there-
fore to God. *Resist the devil,
and he will flee from you.

*Eph. 4:27; 6:11. 1 Pet. 5:9.

8 *Draw nigh to God, and
he will draw nigh to you.
†Cleanse your hands, ye sin-
ners; and **purify your
hearts, ye double minded.

*2 Chr. 15:2.

†Is. 1:16. **1 Pet. 1:22.

9 *Be afflicted and mourn,
and weep: let your laughter
be turned to mourning, and
your joy to heaviness.

*Matt. 5:4.

10 *Humble yourselves in
the sight of the Lord, and he
shall exalt you.

*Job. 22:29. Matt. 23:12.

Luke 14:11; 18:14. 1 Pet. 5:6.

11 *Speak not evil one of
another, brethren. He that
speaketh evil of his brother,
or †judgeth his brother,
speaketh evil of the law, and
judgeth the law: but if thou
judge the law, thou art not a
doer of the law, but a judge.

*Eph. 4:31. 1 Pet. 2:1. †Matt.

7:1. Luke 6:37. Rom. 2:1.

¶III.

12 There is one lawgiver, even he *who is able to save and to destroy: †who art thou that thou judgest thy neighbor?

*Matt. 10:28. †Rom. 14:4, 13.

13 *Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain:

*Prov. 27:1. Luke 12:18, etc.

14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. What is your life? *It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

*Job 7:7. Ps. 102:3.

15 Ye ought rather to say: *If the Lord will, we shall both live, and do this, or that.

*Acts 18:21.

1 Cor. 4:19; 16:7. Heb. 6:3.

16 But now ye rejoice in your boastings: *all such glorying is evil. *1 Cor. 5:6.

17 *To him therefore that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

*Luke 12:47.

John 9:41; 15:22. Rom. 1:20.

CHAPTER 5.

1 Come *now, ye rich men, weep and howl for the miseries that shall come upon you.

*Prov. 11:28. Luke 6:24. 1 Tim. 6:9.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and *your garments are moth-eaten.

*Job 13:28. Matt. 6:20. Chap. 2:2.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a testimony against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire.

*Ye have reaped treasure against you for the last days.

*Rom. 2:5.

4 Behold, *the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud crieth: and †the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

*Lev. 19:13.

Job 24:10, 11. †Deut. 24:15.

5 *Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and taken your pleasures; ye have nourished your hearts, as for the day of slaughter,

*Job 21:13. Amos 6:1, 4. 1 Tim. 5:6.

6 *Ye have condemned and killed the righteous one; and him who did not resist you.

*Chap. 2:6.

¶II.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive *the early and latter rain.

*Deut. 11:14.

Jer. 5:24. Hos. 6:3. Joel 2:28.

8 Be ye also patient; establish your hearts: *for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

*Phil. 4:5. Heb. 10:25, 37. 1 Pet. 4:7.

9 *Grudge not one against another, brethren, that ye be not condemned; behold, the judge †standeth before the door.

*Chap. 4:11.

†Matt. 24:33. 1 Cor. 4:5.

10 *Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

*Matt. 5:12. Heb. 11:35, etc.

11 Behold, *we count them blessed which endure. Ye have heard of †the patience of Job, and have seen **the end of the Lord; that ††the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

*Ps. 94:12. Matt. 5:10. †Job 1:21, 22. **Job 42:10, etc. ††Num. 14:18.

12 But above all things, my brethren, *swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be yea; and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation.

*Matt. 5:34, etc.

¶III.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? *let him sing Psalms.

*Eph. 5:19. Col. 3:16.

14 Is any one sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, *anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord; *Mark 6:13; 16:18.

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; *and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

*Is. 33:24. Matt. 9:2.

16 Therefore confess your sins one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. *The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

*Gen. 20:17. Num. 11:2. Deut. 9:18, 19, 20. Ps. 10:17; 34:15; 145:18. John 9:31.

17 Elijah was a man *subject to like passions as we are, and †he prayed fervently that it might not rain: **and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

*Acts 14:15. †1 Kings 17:1. **Luke 4:25.

18 And *he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth its fruit.

*1 Kings 18:42, 45.

¶IV.

19 Brethren, *if any of you do err concerning the truth, and one convert him;

*Matt. 18:15.

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way *shall save a soul from death, and †shall cover a multitude of sins.

*Rom. 11:14. 1 Cor. 9:22. 1 Tim. 4:16. †Prov. 10:12. 1 Pet. 4:8.

MEMORANDUM

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PETER THE APOSTLE

CHAPTER 1.

1 Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers *scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, *John 7:35.

Acts 2:5, 9, 10. James 1:1.

2 *Elect †according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, **in sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and †sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you, and peace, be multiplied.

*Eph. 1:4. †Rom. 8:29. **2 Thess. 2:13. ††Heb. 10:22; 12:24.

3 *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which †according to his abundant mercy **hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

*2 Cor. 1:3.

†Titus 3:5. **John 3:3, 5.

4 Into an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, *and that fadeth not away, †reserved in heaven for you,

*Chap. 5:4.

†Col. 1:5. 2 Tim. 4:8.

5 *Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

*John 10:28, 29; 17:11, 12, 15.

6 *Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though †now for a season, if need be, ye are in

heaviness through manifold temptations: *Matt. 5:12. Rom. 12:12. 2 Cor. 6:10. †2 Cor. 4:17.

¶II.

7 That *the trial of your faith, being much more precious than gold that perisheth, though †it be tried by fire, **might be found unto praise, honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.:

*James 1:3, 12. Chap. 4:12. †Job 23:10. Ps. 66:10. Prov. 17:3. Is. 48:10. Zech. 13:9. 1 Cor. 3:13.

**Rom. 2:7, 10. 1 Cor. 4:5. 1 Thess. 1:7-12.

8 *Whom, having not seen, ye love; †on whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory:

*1 John 4:20. †John 20:29. 2 Cor. 5:7. Heb. 11:1, 27.

9 Receiving *the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls. *Rom. 6:22.

10 *Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you:

*Gen. 49:10. Dan. 2:44. Hag. 2:7. Zech. 6:12. Matt. 13:17. Luke 10:24. 2 Pet. 1:19, 20, 21.

11 Searching what, or what manner of time *the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand †the sufferings of

Christ, and the glory that should follow them.

*Chap. 8:10, 2 Pet. 1:21.
†Ps. 22:6. Is. 53:3, etc. Dan. 9:26.
Luke 24:25, 26, 44, 46.

12 *To whom it was revealed, that †not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with **the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven; ††which things the angels desire to look into.

*Dan. 9:24; 12:9, 13. †Heb. 11:13, 39, 40. **Acts 2:4. ††Ex. 25:20.
Dan. 8:13; 12:5, 6. Eph. 8:10.

13 Therefore *gird up the loins of your mind, †be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you **at the revelation of Jesus Christ;

*Luke 12:35. Eph. 6:14. †Luke 21:34. Rom. 13:13. 1 Thess. 5:6, 8.
Chap. 4:7; 5:8. **Luke 17:30.

14 As obedient children, *not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts †in the time of your ignorance:

*Rom. 12:2. Chap. 4:2. †Acts 17:30. 1 Thess. 4:5.

15 *But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

*Luke 1:74, 75. 2 Cor. 7:1. 1 Thess. 4:3, 4, 7. Heb. 12:14. 2 Pet. 3:11.

16 Because it is written: *Ye shall be holy; for I am holy.

*Lev. 11:44; 19:2; 20:7.

17 And if ye call on the Father, *who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, †pass the time of your **sojourning here in fear:

*Deut. 10:17. Acts 10:34. Rom. 2:11. †2 Cor. 7:1. Phil. 2:12. Heb. 12:28. **2 Cor. 5:6. Heb. 11:13.

18 Knowing *that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation †received by tradition from your fathers; *1 Cor. 6:20; 7:23.
†Ezek. 20:18. Chap. 4:3.

19 But *with the precious blood of Christ, †as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:

*Acts 20:28. Eph. 1:7. Heb. 9:12, 14. Rev. 5:9. †Ex. 12:5.

20 *Who was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest †in these last times for you,

*Rom. 3:25; 16:25, 26. Eph. 3:9, 11. Col. 1:26. 2 Tim. 1:9, 10. Titus 1:2, 3. Rev. 13:8. †Gal. 4:4.

¶III.

21 Who by him do believe in God, *that raised him up from the dead, and †gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God.

*Acts 2:24. †Matt. 28:18.
Acts 2:33; 8:13. Eph. 1:20.

22 Seeing ye *have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned †love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently:

*Acts 15:9. †Rom. 12:9, 10. 1 Thess. 4:9. 1 Tim. 1:5. Heb. 13:1.

23 *Having been born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, †the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

*John 1:13.
3:5. †James 1:18. 1 John 3:9.

24 For *all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

*Ps. 103:15.
Is. 40:6; 51:12. James 1:10.

25 *But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. †And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

*Ps. 102:12, 26. Is. 40:8. Luke 16:17. †John 1:1, 14. 1 John 1:1, 3.

CHAPTER 2.

1 Wherefore *laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

*Eph. 4:22, 25, 31. Col. 3:8. Heb. 12:1. James 1:21. Chap. 4:2.

2 *As newborn babes, longing for the sincere †milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

*Matt. 18:3. Mark 10:15. Rom. 6:4. 1 Cor. 14:20. Chap. 1:23. †1 Cor. 8:2.

3 If so be ye have *tasted that the Lord is gracious.

*Ps. 84:8. Heb. 6:5.

4 Unto whom coming as unto a living stone, *disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious.

*Ps. 118:22. Matt. 21:42. Acts 4:11.

5 *Ye also, living stones, are built up †a spiritual house, **to be holy priesthood, to offer up ††spiritual sacrifices, ***acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

*Eph. 2:21. †Heb. 3:6. **Verse 9. Is. 61:8. ††Hos. 14:2. Mal. 1:11.

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, *Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be put to shame.

*Is. 28:16. Rom. 9:33.

7 To you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient. *the stone which the builders disallowed, the same

is made the head of the corner,

*Ps. 118:22.

Matt. 21:42. Acts 4:11.

8 *And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, †even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: **whereunto also they were appointed.

*Is. 8:14. Luke 2:34. Rom.

9:33. †1 Cor. 1:23. **Ex. 9:16.

9 But ye are *a chosen generation, †a royal priesthood, **an holy nation, ††a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of ***darkness into his marvelous light:

*Deut. 10:15. Chap. 1:2. †Ex. 19:5, 6. Rev. 1:6. **John 17:19. 1 Cor. 3:17. 2 Tim. 1:9. ††Deut. 4:20; 7:6; 14:2; 26:18, 19.

***Acts 26, 18. Eph. 5:8.

10 *Which in time past were no people, but are now the people of God: which had not ordained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

*Hos. 1:9, 10; 2:23. Rom. 9:25.

¶III.

(Epistle at the 3rd Sunday after Easter. Verses 11-20.)

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you *as strangers and pilgrims, †abstain from fleshly lusts, **which war against the soul;

*1 Chr. 29:15. Ps. 39:12; 119:19. Heb. 11:13. Chap. 1:17. †Rom. 13:14. Gal. 5:16. **James 4:1.

12 *Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evil doers, †they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God **in the day of visitation.

*Rom. 12:17. 2 Cor. 8:21.

†Matt. 5:16. **Luke 19:44.

13 *Submit yourselves to every ordinance of men for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme;
*Matt. 22:21. Rom. 13:1. Titus 3:1.

14 Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him *for the punishment of evildoers, and †for the praise of them that do well.

*Rom. 13:4. †Titus 13:3.

15 For so is the will of God, that *with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men:

*Verse 12. Titus 2:3.

16 *As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as †the servants of God.

*Gal. 5:1, 13. †1 Cor. 7:22.

17 *Honor all men. †Love the brotherhood. **Fear God. Honor the king.

*Rom. 12:10. Phil. 2:3. †Heb. 13:1. Chap. 1:22. **Prov. 24:21.

18 *Servants, be in subjection to your masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

*Eph. 6:5.

Col. 3:22. 1 Tim. 6:1. Titus 2:9.

19 For this is *acceptable, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

*Verse 20. Luke 6:22. Matt. 5:10. Rom. 13:5. Chap. 3:14.

20 For *what glory is it, if ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.

*Chap. 3:14; 4:14, 15.

¶III.

(Epistle at the 2nd Sunday after Easter. Verses 21-25.)

21 For *hereunto were ye called: because †Christ also

suffered for us, **leaving an example, that ye should follow his steps:

*Matt. 16:24. Acts 14:22. 1 Thess. 3:3. 2 Tim. 3:12. †Chap. 3:18. **John 13:15. Phil. 2:5. 1 John 2:6.

22 *Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth:

*Is. 53:9. Luke 23:41. John 8:46. 2 Cor. 5:21. Heb. 4:15.

23 *Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously:

*Is. 53:7. Matt. 27:39. John 8:48, 49. Heb. 12:3. †Luke 23:46.

24 *Who himself bare our sins in his body on the tree, †that we, being dead to sins, might live unto righteousness: **by whose stripes ye were healed.

*Is. 53:4, 5, 6, 11. Matt. 8:17. Heb. 9:28. †Rom. 6:2, 11; 7:6. **Is. 53:5.

25 For *ye were going astray like sheep; but are now returned †unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

*Is. 53:6. Ezek. 34:6. †Ezek. 34:23; 37:24. John 10:11, 14, 16.

CHAPTER 3.

1 In like manner, *ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; if any obey not the word, †they even may without the word **be won by the good behaviour of the wives;

*1 Cor. 14:34. Eph. 5:22. †1 Cor. 7:16. **Matt. 18:15.

2 *While they behold your chaste conduct coupled with fear.

*Chap. 2:12.

3 *Whose adorning is not that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel;

*1 Tim. 2:9. Titus 2:3, etc.

4 But let it be **the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.*

**Ps. 45:13. Rom. 2:29.*

5 For after this manner in aforetime the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.

6 As Sara who obeyed Abraham, **calling him lord; whose children ye are now if ye do well, your fear be without amazement.* **Gen. 18:12.*

7 **Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to reason, giving honour unto the wife, *†as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.** **1 Cor. 7:3. Eph. 5:25. Col. 3:19. *†1 Cor. 12:23.**

¶H.

(Epistle at the 5th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 8-15.)

8 Finally, **be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, *†love as brethren, ***be pitiful, be courteous:***

Rom. 12:16; 15:5. *†Rom. 12:10. Heb. 13:1. *Eph. 4:32.***

9 **Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, *†that ye should inherit a blessing.** **Prov. 17:13; 20:22. Matt. 5:39. *†Matt. 25:34.**

10 For **he that would love life, and see good days, *†let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile:**

Ps. 34:12, etc. *†James 1:26.

11 Let him **turn away from evil, and do good; *†let him seek peace, and ensue it.**

**Ps. 37:27.*

*Is. 1:16, 17. *†Rom. 12:18.**

12 For the eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, **and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.* **John 9:31. James 5:16.*

13 **And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?*

**Prov. 16:7. Rom. 8:28.*

14 **But even if ye should suffer for righteousness' sake, blessed are ye: and *†be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled;** **Matt. 5:10, 11, 12. James 1:12. *†Is. 8:12, 13.**

15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and **be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason concerning the hope that is in you yet with meekness and fear:*

**Ps. 119:46.*

Acts 4:8. Col. 4:6. 2 Tim. 2:25.

16 **Having a good conscience; *†that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil-doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ.**

Heb. 13:18. *†Titus 2:8. Chap. 2:12.

17 For it is better, if the will of God should be so, that ye suffer for well doing, than for evil doing.

¶III.

18 Because Christ also hath **suffered for sins once, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, *†being put to death ***in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:***

**Rom. 5:6. Heb. 9:26, 28.*

*†2 Cor. 13:4. ***Col. 1:21, 22.**

19 In which also he went and *preached unto the spirits in prison; *Chap. 1:12; 4:6. †Is. 42:7; 49:9; 61:1.

20 Which aforetime were disobedient, *when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while †the ark was a preparing, **wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.

*Gen. 6:3, 5, 13. †Heb. 11:7. **Gen. 7:7; 8:18. 2 Pet. 2:5.

21 *Which also after a true likeness does now save you even baptism in not putting away of †the filth of the flesh, **but the answer of a good conscience toward God, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ: *Eph. 5:26. †Titus 3:5. **Rom. 10:10.

22 Who is gone into heaven, and *is on the right hand of God; †angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.

*Ps. 110:1. Rom. 8:34. Eph. 1:20. †Rom. 8:38. Eph. 1:21.

CHAPTER 4.

1 Forasmuch then *as Christ suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for †he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; *Chap. 3:18. †Rom. 6:2, 7. Gal. 5:24.

2 *That ye no longer †should live the rest of your time in the flesh to the lusts of men, **but to the will of God. *Rom. 14:7. Chap. 2:1. †Gal. 2:20. Chap. 1:14. **John 1:13. Rom. 6:11.

3 *For the time past may suffice †to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness,

lusts, excess of wine, revelings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries:

*Ezek. 44:6; 45:9. Acts 17:30. †Eph. 2:2; 4:17. 1 Thess. 4:5.

4 Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, *speaking evil of you:

*Acts 13:45; 18:6.

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready *to judge the living and the dead.

*Acts 10:42; 17:31. Rom. 14:10, 12.

6 For for this cause *was the gospel preached also to the dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

*Chap. 3:19.

7 But *the end of all things is at hand; †be ye therefore soberminded and watch unto prayer.

*Matt. 24:13, 14. 2 Pet. 3:9, 11. 1 John 2:18. †Matt. 26:41. Luke 21:34.

III.

(Epistle on Sunday Exaudi. Verses 8-11.)

8 *And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for †charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

*Col. 3:14. Heb. 13:1. †Prov. 10:12.

9 *Use hospitality one to another †without grudging.

*Rom. 12:13. Heb. 13:2. †1 Cor. 9:7.

10 *As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, †as good stewards of **the manifold grace of God.

*Rom. 12:6. 1 Cor. 4:7. †Matt. 24:45. **1 Cor. 12:4. Eph. 4:11.

11 *If any man speak, let him speak as the words of God; †if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability

which God giveth; that ****God** in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

***Jer. 28:22. †Rom. 12:6, 7, 8. **Eph. 5:20. Chap. 2:5.**

III.

(Epistle on Sunday after New Year. Verses 12-19.)

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning ***the** fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you:

***1 Cor. 8:13. Chap. 1:7.**

13 ***But** inasmuch as **†ye** are partakers of Christ's sufferings rejoice; ****that**, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may rejoice also with exceeding joy.

***Acts 5:41. James 1:2. †Rom. 8:17. 2 Cor. 1:7. **Chap. 1:5, 6.**

14 ***If** ye be reproached for the name of Christ, blessed are ye; because the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

***Matt. 5:11. 2 Cor. 12:10. James 1:12. Chap. 2:19, 20; 3:14.**

15 But ***let** none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer, **†or** as a busybody in other men's matters.

***Chap. 2:20. †1 Thess. 4:11. 1 Tim. 5:13.**

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; ***but** let him glorify God on this behalf. ***Acts 5:41.**

17 For the time is come ***that** judgment must begin at the house of God: and **†if** it first begin at us, what shall

the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

***Is. 10:12. Jer. 25:29. Ezek. 9:6. †Luke 23:31.**

18 ***And** if the righteous scarcely is saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear? ***Prov. 11:31. Luke 23:31.**

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God ***commit** the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

***Ps. 51:5. Luke 23:46. 2 Tim. 1:12.**

CHAPTER 5.

1 The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also ***an** elder, and **†a** witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also ****a** partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

***Philem. 9. †Luke 24:48. Acts 1:8, 22. **Rom. 8:17.**

2 ***Feed** the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, **†not** by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind;

***John 21:15, 16, 17. Acts 20:28. †1 Cor. 9:17.**

3 Not as ***being** lords over **†God's** heritage, but ****being** ensamples to the flock.

***Ezek. 34:4. Matt. 20:25. †Pa. 83:12; 74:2. **Phil. 3:17. 1 Tim. 4:12.**

4 And when ***the** chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive **†a** crown of glory that fadeth not away.

***Heb. 13:20. †1 Cor. 9:25. James 1:12.**

5 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, ***all** of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for

†God resisteth the proud, and
**giveth grace to the humble.

*Rom. 12:10. Phil. 2:3.

†James 4:6. **Is. 57:15.

Epistle on 3rd Sunday after Trinity.
Verses 6:11.)

6 *Humble yourselves
therefore under the mighty
hand of God, that he may
exalt you in due time:

*James 4:10.

7 *Casting all your care
upon him; for he careth for
you.

*Ps. 37:5; 55:22.

Matt. 6:25. Luke 12:11, 22.

¶II.

8 *Be sober, be watchful;
because †your adversary the
devil, as a roaring lion, walk-
eth about seeking whom he
may devour: *Luke 21:34, 36.

†Job 1:7; 2:2. Rev. 12:12.

9 *Whom resist stedfast in
the faith, †knowing that the
same afflictions are accom-
plished in your brethren who
are in the world.

*Eph. 6:11, 13. James

4:7. †Acts 14:22. 1 Thess. 3:3.

10 But the God of all
grace, *who called you unto

his eternal glory by Christ Je-
sus, after that ye have suf-
fered †a little while, shall
himself **make you perfect,
stablish, strengthen, and keep
you.

*1 Cor. 1:9. 1 Tim. 6:

12. †2 Cor. 4:17. **Heb. 13:21.

11 *To him be glory and
dominion for ever and ever.
Amen.

*Chap. 4:11. Rev. 1:6.

¶III.

12 *By Silvanus, a faithful
brother unto you, as I ac-
count him, I have †written
briefly, exhorting, and testi-
fying **that this is the true
grace of God wherein ye
stand.

*2 Cor. 1:19. †Heb. 13:22. **Acts

20:24. 1 Cor. 15:1. 2 Pet. 1:12.

13 The church that is at
Babylon, elected together
with you, saluteth you; and
so doth *Marcus my son.

*Acts 12:12, 25.

14 *Salute ye one another
with a kiss of love. †Peace
be with you all that are in
Christ Jesus. Amen.

*Rom. 16:16.

1 Cor. 16:20. †Eph. 6:23.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. PETER THE APOSTLE

CHAPTER 1.

1 Simon Peter, a servant
and an apostle of Jesus
Christ, to them that have ob-
tained a *like precious faith
with us in the righteousness

†of God our Saviour Jesus
Christ:

*Acts 15:14. †Rom. 1:12. 2 Cor.

4:13. Eph. 4:5. Titus 1:4.

2 *Grace and peace be
multiplied unto you through

the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

*Dan. 4:1; 6:25. 1 Pet. 1:2.

3 According to his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, *in the knowledge of him †that hath called us to glory and virtue:

*John 17:3. †1 Thess. 2:12.

2 Thess. 2:14. 1 Pet. 2:9; 8:9.

4 *Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be †partakers of the divine nature, **having escaped from the corruption that is in the world through lust.

*2 Cor. 7:1. †2 Cor. 3:18. Eph. 4:24. **Chap. 2:18. 20.

¶II.

5 *For this very cause adding on your part all diligence, in your faith have virtue, and in virtue †knowledge,

*Chap. 3:18. †1 Pet. 8:7.

6 And in your knowledge temperance, and in temperance patience, and in patience godliness,

7 In godliness brotherly kindness, *in brotherly kindness love.

*Gal. 6:10.

1 Thess. 3:12; 5:15. 1 John 4:21.

8 For if these things are in you, and abound, they make you to be neither barren *nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

*John 15:2. Titus 3:14.

9 But he that lacketh these things *is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten the †cleansing from his former sins.

*1 John 2:9, 11.

†Eph. 5:26. Heb. 9:14.

10 Wherefore brethren, give the more diligence *to

make your calling and election sure; for if ye do these things, †ye shall never stumble.

*1 John 3:19. †Chap. 3:17.

11 For so shall be ministered unto you richly an entrance into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

¶III.

12 Wherefore *I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, †though ye know them, and are established in the present truth.

*Rom. 15:14, 16. Phil.

3:1. Chap. 3:1. †1 Pet. 5:12.

13 Yea, I think it right *as long as I am in this tabernacle, †to stir you up by putting you in remembrance;

*2 Cor. 5:1, 4. †Chap. 3:1.

14 *Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shown me.

*Deut. 4:21, 22; 31:14. 2 Tim. 4:6.

15 Moreover I will endeavour that ye may be able after my departure to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we did not follow *cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we †were eyewitnesses of his majesty.

*1 Cor. 1:17; 2:1, 4. †Matt. 17:1, 2. Mark 9:2. John 1:14.

17 For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory: *This is my be-

loved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

*Matt. 3:17; 17:5.
Mark 1:11; 9:7. Luke 3:22; 9:35.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in *the holy mount.

*Josh 5:15. Matt. 17:6.

¶IV.

19 And we have also the sure word of prophecy, whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto *a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and †the day star arise in your hearts:

*Ps. 119:105.

†2 Cor. 4:4, 6. Rev. 2:28; 22:16.

20 Knowing this first, that *no prophecy of the scripture is of private interpretation.

*Rom. 12:6.

21 For *the prophecy came never in old time by the will of man, †but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

*2 Tim. 3:16. 1 Pet. 1:11. †Sam. 23:2. Luke 1:70. Acts 1:16; 3:18.

CHAPTER 2.

1 But *there were false prophets also among the people, even as †there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even **denying the Lord ††that bought them, ***and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

*Deut. 13:1. †Matt. 24:11. **Jude

4. ††1 Cor. 6:20. Gal. 3:13.

Eph. 1:7. ***Phil. 3:19.

2 And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 And *through covetousness shall they with feigned

words †make merchandise of you: **whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

*Rom. 16:18. 2 Cor. 12:17, 18. Titus 1:11. †2 Cor. 2:17. **Deut. 32:35.

4 For if God spared not *the angels †that sinned, but **cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

*Job. 4:18. †John 8:44. **Luke 8:31. Rev. 20:2, 3.

5 And spared not the old world, but saved *Noah the eighth person, †a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

*Gen. 7:1, 7, 23.

1 Pet. 3:20. †1 Pet. 3:19.

6 And *turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example unto those that after should live ungodly;

*Gen. 19:24. Deut. 29:23. Jude 7.

7 And *delivered righteous Lot, distressed with the lawless deeds of the wicked:

*Gen. 19:16.

8 For that righteous man dwelling among them, *in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;

*Ps. 119:139, 158. Ezek. 9:4.

¶II.

9 *The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:

*Ps. 34:17, 19. 1 Cor. 10:13.

10 But chiefly *them that walk after the flesh in un-

clean lust, and despise governments. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignitaries.

*Jude 4, 7, 8, 10, 16.

11 Whereas *angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

*Jude 9.

12 But these, *like natural brutish beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption;

*Jer. 12:3. Jude 10.

13 *And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure †to riot in the day time. **Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves in their own deceivings while they feast with you;

*Phil. 3:19.

†Rom. 13:13. **Jude 12.

14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: *an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children;

*Jude 11.

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of *Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness;

*Num. 22:5, 7, 21, 23, 28. Jude 11.

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity; the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet.

¶III.

17 *These are wells without water, clouds that are carried

with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.

*Jude 12, 13.

18 For when *they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, by lasciviousness, those who †were escaped from them who live in error.

*Jude 16.

†Verse 20. Acts 2:40. Chap. 1:4.

19 While the promise them *liberty, they themselves are †the slaves of corruption; for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

*Gal. 5:13.

1 Pet. 2:16. †John 8:34.

20 For *if after they †have escaped the pollutions of the world **through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the first.

*Matt. 12:45. Luke 11:26.

†Verse 18. Chap. 1:4. **Chap. 1:2.

21 For *it were better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than knowing it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

*Luke 12:47, 48. John 9:41; 15:22.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb: *The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to wallowing in the mire.

*Prov. 26:11.

CHAPTER 3.

1 This is now the second epistle, beloved, that I write unto you; in both which *I stir up your sincere minds by way of remembrance:

*Chap. 1:13.

2 That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, *and of the commandment of us, the apostles of our Lord and Saviour:

*Jude 17.

(Epistle on the 26th Sunday after Trinity. Verses 3-14.)

3 *Knowing this first, that in the last days there shall come scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

*1 Tim. 4:1. 2 Tim. 3:1. Jude 18.

4 And saying, *Where is the promise of his coming? for from the day the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

*Is. 5:19. Jer. 17:15.

Ezek. 12:22, 27. Matt. 24:48.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water *by the Word of God:

*Gen. 1:6, 9. Ps. 33:6. Heb. 11:3.

6 *By which the world that then was, being overflowed perished:

*Gen. 7:11, 21, 22, 23. Chap. 2:5.

7 But *the heavens and the earth, that are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men.

*Verse 10.

†Matt. 25:41. 2 Thess. 1:8.

8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and *a thousand years as one day.

*Ps. 90:4.

9 *The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as

some men count slackness; but 'tis longsuffering to you-ward, **He does not want that any should perish, but ††that all should come to repentance.

*Hab. 2:3. †Is. 30:18. 1 Pet.

3:20. John 6:40. **Ezek. 18:23.

32. ††Rom. 2:4. 1 Tim. 2:4.

10 But *the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in which †the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.

*Matt. 24:43. Luke 12:39.

†Ps. 102:26. Is. 51:6. Matt.

24:35. Rev. 20:11; 21:1.

¶II.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be *in holy conduct and godliness,

*1 Pet. 1:15.

12 *Looking for and earnestly desiring the coming of the day of God, by reason of which heaven being on fire shall †be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

*1 Cor. 1:7. Titus

2:13. †Ps. 50:3. Is. 34:4.

13 Nevertheless according to his promise, look we for *new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

*Is. 65:17; 66:22. Rev. 21:1, 27.

¶III.

14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent *that ye may be found in peace, without spot, and blameless.

*1 Cor. 1:8; 15:58.

Phil. 1:10. 1 Thess. 3:13; 5:23.

15 And account that *the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you;

*Verse 9. Rom. 2:4. 1 Pet. 3:20.

16 As also in all his epistles, *speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

*Rom. 8:19. 1 Cor. 15:24.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, *seeing ye know these things beforehand †beware lest, being led away with the error of the wicked, ye fall from your own stedfastness.

*Mark 13:23.

†Eph. 4:14. Chap. 1:10, 11; 2:18.

18 *But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. †To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

*Eph. 4:15.

1 Pet. 2:2. †2 Tim. 4:18. Rev. 1:6.

MEMORANDUM

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN THE APOSTLE

CHAPTER 1.

1 That *which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that †which we have looked upon, and **our hands have handled, of the Word of life;

*John 1:1. Chap. 2:13. †John 1:14.

2 Pet. 1:16. Chap. 4:14. **Luke 24:39. John 20:27.

2 For *the life †was manifested, and we have seen it, **and bear witness, ††and show unto you that eternal life, ***which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us; *John 1:4; 11:25, 14:6. †Rom. 16:26. 1 Tim. 3:16. Chap. 3:5. **John 21:24. Acts 2:32. ††Chap. 5:20. ***John 1:1, 2.

3 *That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: †our fellowship is with the father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. *Acts 4:20. †John 17:21. 1 Cor. 1:9. Chap. 2:24.

4 And these things write we unto you, *that your joy may be full.

*John 15:11. 2 John 12.

III.

5 *This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that †God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

*Chap. 3:11. †John 1:9; 8:12; 9:5; 12:35, 36.

6 *If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth:

*2 Cor. 6:14. Chap. 2:4.

7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another; and *the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

*1 Cor. 6:11. Eph. 1:7. Heb. 9:14. 1 Pet. 1:19. Chap. 2:2. Rev. 1:5.

8 *If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, †and the truth is not in us.

*1 Kings 8:46. 2 Chr. 6:36. Job. 9:2; 16:14; 25:4. Prov. 20:9. Eccl. 7:20. James 3:2. †Chap. 2:4.

9 *If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to †cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

*Ps. 32:5. Prov. 28:13. †Verse 7. Ps. 51:2.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAPTER 2.

1 My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not, And if any man sin, *we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:

*Rom. 8:34. 1 Tim. 2:5. Heb. 7:25; 9:24.

2 And *he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for

our's only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

*Rom. 3:25. 2 Cor. 5:18. Chap. 1:7; 4:10. †John 1:29.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

4 *He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, †is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

*Chap. 1:6; 4:20. †Chap. 1:8.

5 But *whoso keepeth his word, †in him verily has the love of God been perfected: **hereby know we that we are in him.

*John 14:21, 23.

†Chap. 4:12. **Chap. 4:13.

6 *He that saith he abideth in him †ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

*John 15:4, 5. †Matt. 11:29. John 13:15. 1 Pet. 2:21.

7 Brethren, *I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment †which ye had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

*2 John 5. †Chap. 3:11. 2 John 5.

8 Again, *a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: †because the darkness is past, and **the true light now shineth.

*John 13:34; 15:12. †Rom. 13:12.

*John 1:9; 8:12; 12:35.

¶II.

9 *He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now.

*1 Cor. 13:2.

2 Pet. 1:9. Chap. 3:14, 15.

10 *He that loveth his brother abideth in the light,

and †there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

*Chap. 3:14. †2 Pet. 1:10.

11 But he that hateth his brother is in darkness, and *walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

*John 12:35.

¶III.

12 I write unto you, little children, because *your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake.

*Luke 24:47.

Acts 4:12; 10:43; 13:38. Chap. 1:7.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him *that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

*Chap. 1:1.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you young men, because *ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

*Eph. 6:10.

¶IV.

15 *Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. †If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

*Rom. 12:2.

†Matt. 6:24. Gal. 1:10. James 4:4.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, *and the lust of the eyes, and the vanity of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

*Eccl. 5:11.

17 And *the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

*1 Cor. 7:31.
James 1:10; 4:14. 1 Pet. 1:24.

¶V.

18 *Little children, †it is the last hour: and as ye have heard that **Antichrist shall come, ††even now have arisen many antichrists; whereby we know ***that it is the last hour.

*John 21:5. †Heb. 1:2. **2 Thess. 2:3, etc. 2 Pet. 2:1. Chap. 4:3.
††Matt. 24:5, 24. 2 John 7.
***1 Tim. 4:1. 2 Tim. 3:1.

19 *They went out from us, but they were not of us; for †if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, **that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

*Deut. 13:18. Ps. 41:9. Acts 20:30. †Matt. 24:24. John 6:37; 10:28, 29. 2 Tim. 2:19. **1 Cor. 11:19.

20 But *ye have an unction †from the Holy One, and **ye know all things.

*Verse 27. 2 Cor. 1:21. Heb. 1:9. †Mark 1:24. Acts 3:14. **Verse 27.

21 I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 *Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, even he that denieth the Father and the Son.

*Chap. 4:3. 2 John 7.

23 *Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: but †he that confesseth the Son hath the Father also.*John 15:23. 2 John

9. †John 14:7, 9, 10. Chap. 4:15.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, *which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, †ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

*2 John 6.
†John 14:23. Chap. 1:3.

25 *And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.

*John 17:3. Chap. 1:2; 5:11.

¶VI.

26 These things have I written unto you *concerning them that would deceive you.

*Chap. 7:7. 2 John 7.

27 But *the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and †ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing **teacheth you of all things, and is true, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

*Verse 20.
†Jer. 31:33. 34. Heb. 8:10, 11.
**Verse 20. John 14:26; 16:13.

28 And now, my little children, abide in him; that *when he shall appear, we may have confidence, †and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

*Chap. 3:2. †Chap. 4:17.

29 *If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that †every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.

*Acts 22:14. †Chap. 3:7, 10.

CHAPTER 3.

1 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that *we should be called the sons of

God: therefore the world knoweth us not, †because it knew him not.

*John 1:12.
†John 15:18, 19; 16:3; 17:25.

2 Beloved, *now are we the sons of God, and †it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, **we shall be like him; for ††we shall see him as he is.

*Is. 56:5. Rom. 8:15. Gal. 3:26; 4:6. Chap. 5:1. †Rom. 8:18. 2 Cor. 4:17. **Rom. 8:29. 1 Cor. 15:49. Phil. 3:21. Col. 3:4. 2 Pet. 1:4. ††Job 19:26. Ps. 16:11.

3 *And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

*Chap. 4:17.

III.

4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth the law: for *sin is the transgression of the law.

*Rom. 4:15. Chap. 5:17.

5 And ye know *that he was manifested †to take away our sins; and **in him is no sin.

*Chap. 1:2. †Is. 53:5, 6, 11.

**2 Cor. 5:21. Heb. 4:15; 9:28. 1 Pet. 2:22.

6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: *whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.

*Chap. 2:4; 4:8. 3 John 11.

7 My little children, *let no man deceive you: †he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.

*Chap. 2:28. †Ezek.

18:5-9. Rom. 2:13. Chap. 2:29.

8 *He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, †that

he might destroy the works of the devil.

*Matt. 13:38.
John 8:44. †Gen. 3:15. Luke 10:18; John 16:11. Heb. 2:14.

9 *Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; because †this seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

*Chap. 5:18. †1 Pet. 1:23.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: *whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, †neither he that loveth not his brother.

*Chap. 2:29. †Chap. 4:8.

11 For *this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, †that we should love one another.

*Chap. 1:5; 2:7.

†Verse 23. John 13:34; 15:12.

Chap. 4:7, 21. 2 John 5.

12 Not as *Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

*Gen. 4:4, 8. Heb. 11:4. Jude 11.

(Epistle on 2nd Sunday after Trinity. Verses 18-18.)

13 Marvel not, my brethren, if *the world hate you.

*John 15:

18, 19; 17:14. 2 Tim. 3:12.

14 *We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. †He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.

*Chap. 2:10. †Chap. 2:9, 11.

15 *Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that †a murderer hath not eternal life abiding in him.

*Matt. 5:21, 22.
Chap. 4:20. †Gal. 5:21. Rev. 21:8.

16 *Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

*John 3:16; 15:13. Rom. 5:8. Eph. 5:2, 25. Chap. 4:9, 11.

17 But *whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, ¶how dwelleth the love of God in him?

*Deut. 15:7. Luke 3:11. †Chap. 4:20.

18 My little children, *let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

*Ezek. 33:31. Rom. 12:9. Eph. 4:15. James 2:15, 16. 1 Pet. 1:22.

III.

19 Hereby shall we know *that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

*John 18:37. Chap. 1:8.

20 *For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

*1 Cor. 4:4.

21 *Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, ¶then have we confidence toward God.

*Job 22:26. †Heb. 10:22. Chap. 2:28; 4:17.

22 And *whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, ¶and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

*Ps. 84:15; 145:18, 19. Prov. 15:29. Chap. 5:14. †John 8:29; 9:31.

23 *And this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, ¶and love

one another, **as he gave us commandment.

*John 6:29; 17:3. †Verse 11.

1 Thess. 4:9. 1 Pet. 4:8.

Chap. 4:21. **Chap. 2:8, 10.

24 And *he that keepeth his commandments ¶dwelleth in him, and he in him. And **hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

*John 14:23; 15:10. Chap. 4:12. †John 17:21. **Rom. 8:9. Chap. 4:13.

CHAPTER 4.

1 Beloved, *believe not every spirit, but ¶try the spirits whether they are of God: because **many false prophets are gone out into the world.

*Jer. 29:8. Matt. 24:4. †1 Cor. 14:29. 1 Thess. 5:21. Rev. 2:2. **Matt. 24:5. Acts 20:30. 1 Tim. 4:1,2.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: *Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: *1 Cor. 12:3. Chap. 5:1.

3 And *every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of the antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and ¶even now already is it in the world.

*Chap. 2:22. 2 John 7. †2 Thess. 2:7. Chap. 2:18, 22.

4 *Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome the world: because greater is he that is in you, than ¶the that is in the world.

*Chap. 5:4. †John 12:31; 14:30.

5 *They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and ¶the world heareth them.

*John 8:31. †John 15:19; 17:14.

6 We are of God: *he that knoweth God heareth us; he who is not of God heareth us not. Hereby know we †the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

*John 8:47; 10:27.
†Is. 8:20. John 14:17.

¶II.

7 *Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.

*Chap. 3:10, 11, 23.

8 He that loveth not *knoweth not God; for †God is love.

*Chap. 2:4; 3:6. †Verse 16.

9 *In this was manifested the love of God toward us, that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, †that we might live through him.

*John 3:16. Rom. 5:8. Chap. 3:16. †Chap. 5:11.

10 Herein is love, *not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son †to be the propitiation for our sins.

*John 15:16. Rom. 5:8, 10. Titus 3:4. †Chap. 2:2.

11 Beloved, *if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. *Matt. 18:33.

John 15:12. Chap. 3:16.

12 *No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and †this love is perfected in us.

*Verse 20. John 1:18. 1 Tim. 6:16. †Verse 18. Chap. 2:5.

13 *Hereby we know that we abide in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

*John 14:20. Chap. 3:24.

14 And *we have seen and do testify that †the Father

sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. *John 1:14.

Chap. 1:1, 2. †John 3:17.

¶III.

15 *Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God abideth in him, and he in God.

*Rom. 10:9. Chap. 5:1, 5.

(Epistle on 1st Sunday after Trinity. Verses 16-21.)

16 And we have known and believed the love which God hath to us. *God is love; and †he that abideth in love abideth in God, and God in him.

*Verse 8. †Verse 12. Chap. 3:24.

17 Herein is our love made perfect, that *we may have boldness in the day of judgment: †because as he is, so are we in this world.

*James 2:13. Chap. 2:28; 3:19, 21. †Chap. 3:3.

18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth *is not made perfect in love.

*Verse 12.

19 We love him, because he first loved us.

20 *If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God †whom he hath not seen?

*Chap. 2:4; 3:17. †Verse 12.

21 And *this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God love his his brother also.

*Matt. 22:37, 39. John 13:34; 15:12. Chap. 3:23.

CHAPTER 5.

1 Whosoever *believeth that †Jesus is the Christ is **born of God: ††and every one that loveth him that be-
gat loveth him also that is be-
gotten of him.

*John 1:12. †Chap. 2:22,23;
4:2, 15. **John 1:13. ††John 15:23.

2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.

3 *For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and †his commandments are not grievous.

*John 14:15, 21, 23; 15:10.
2 John 6. †Mic. 6:8. Matt. 11:30.

(Epistle on 1st Sunday after Easter. Verses 4-10.)

4 For *whosoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

*John 16:33. Chap. 3:9; 4:4.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but *he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

*1 Cor. 15:57. Chap. 4:15.

6 This is he that came *with water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but with water and blood. †And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

*John 19:34. †John 14:17;
15:26; 16:13. 1 Tim. 3:16.

7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, *the Word, and the Holy Ghost: †and these three are one.

*John 1:1.
Rev. 19:13. †John 10:30.

8 And there are three that

bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive *the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: †for this is the witness of God that he hath of his Son. *John 8:17, 18.
†Matt. 3:16, 17; 17:5.

10 He that believeth on the Son of God *hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God †hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.

*Rom. 8:16.
Gal. 4:6. †John 3:33; 5:38.

11 *And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and †this life is in his Son.

*Chap. 2:25.
†John 1:4. Chap. 4:9.

12 *He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

*John 3:36; 5:24.

13 *These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; †that ye may know that ye have eternal life, even you who believe on the name of the Son of God.

*John 20:31. †Chap. 1:1, 2.

¶II.

14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, *if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: *Chap. 3:22.

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see a brother sinning a sin not unto death, he shall ask, and *the Lord shall give life for them that sin not unto death. †There is a sin unto death: **I do not say that he shall pray for it.

*Job 42:8. James 5:14, 15. †Matt. 12:31, 32. Mark 3:29. Luke 12:10.

**Jer. 7:16; 14:11. John 17:9.

17 *All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. *Chap. 3:4.

18 We know that *whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God †keepeth himself, and

that wicked one toucheth him not. *1 Pet. 1:23.

Chap. 3:9. †James 1:27.

19 We know that we are of God, and *the whole world lieth in wickedness. *Gal. 1:4.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and *hath given us an understanding, †that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. **This is the true God, ††and eternal life.

*Luke 24:45. †John 17:8. **Is. 9:6. Heb. 1:8. ††Verses 11, 12, 13.

21 Little children, *keep yourselves from idols.

*1 Cor. 10:14.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

ST. JOHN

THE APOSTLE

1 The elder unto the elect lady and her children, *whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that know †the truth;

*Verse 3. 1 John 3:18. 3 John 1. †John 8:32. Gal. 2:5, 14. Col. 1:5.

2 For the truth's sake, which abideth in us, and shall be with us for ever.

3 *Grace be with you, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and from Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, †in truth and love.

*1 Tim. 1:2. †Verse 1.

4 I rejoiced greatly that I found of thy children *walking in truth, even as we have received a commandment from the Father. *3 John 8.

5 And now I beseech thee, lady, *not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, †that we love one another.

*1 John 2:7, 8;

3:11. †John 13:34; 15:12.

6 And *this is love, that we walk after his commandments. Even that, †as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

*John 14:15, 21; 15:10. 1 John 2:5; 5:3. †1 John 2:24.

7 For *many deceivers are entered into the world, even such †who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. **This is a deceiver and an antichrist. *1 John 4:1. †1 John 4:2, 3. **1 John 2:22; 4:3.

8 *Look to yourselves, †that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward. *Mark 13:9.

†Gal. 3:4. Heb. 10:32, 35.

9 *Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

*1 John 2:23.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into

your house, *neither bid him God speed:

*Rom. 16:17. 1 Cor. 5:11; 16:22. Gal. 1:8, 9. 2 Tim. 3:5. Titus 3:10.

11 For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.

12 *Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink: but I trust to come unto you, and speak to you face to face, †that our joy may be full.

*3 John 13. †John 17:13. 1 John 1:4.

13 *The children of thy elect sister greet thee.

*1 Pet. 5:13.

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN THE APOSTLE

1 The elder unto the well-beloved Gaius, *whom I love in the truth. *2 John 1.

2 Beloved I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

3 For I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as *thou walkest in the truth. *2 John 4.

4 I have no greater joy than to hear that *my children walk in truth.

*1 Cor. 4:15. Philem. 10.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers;

6 Which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

¶II.

7 Because for the sake of his name's sake they went forth, *taking nothing of the Gentiles. *1 Cor. 9:12, 15.

8 We therefore ought to welcome such, that we might be fellowworkers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, *follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. †He that doeth good is of God: but he that doeth evil hath not seen God.

*Ps. 37:27; Is. 1:16, 17. 1 Pet. 3:11. †1 John 2:29; 3:6, 9.

¶III.

12 Demetrius *hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we also bear record; †and ye know that our record is true.

*1 Tim. 3:7. †John 21:24.

13 *I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee:.

*2 John 12.

14 But I trust shortly to see thee, and we shall speak face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

THE EPISTLE OF JUDE

1 Judas, the servant of Jesus Christ, and *brother of James, to them that are sanctified in God the Father, and †preserved for Jesus Christ:

*Luke 6:16. Acts 1:13. †John 17:11, 12, 15. 1 Pet. 1:5.

2 Mercy unto you, and *peace, and love, be multiplied. *1 Pet. 1:2. 2 Pet. 1:2.

3 Beloved, while I gave all diligence to write unto you *of our common salvation, I was constrained to write unto you, exhort you that †ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

*Titus 1:4. †Phil 1:27. 1 Tim. 1:18; 6:12. 2 Tim. 1:13; 4:7.

4 *For there are certain men crept in, even such †who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, **turning ††the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and ***denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

*Gal. 2:4. †Rom. 9:21.
**2 Pet. 2:10. ††Titus 2:11.
***Titus 1:16. 2 Pet. 2:1.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that *the Lord, having saved a people out of the land of Egypt, afterward †destroyed them that believed not.

*1 Cor. 10:9. †Num. 14:29.
37; 26:64. Heb. 3:17, 19.

6 And *the angels that kept not their principality but left their habitation, hath †he reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.

*John 8:44. †2 Pet. 2:4.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner with these, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the judgment of eternal fire.

*Gen. 19:24.
Deut. 29:23. 2 Pet. 2:6.

¶II.

8 *Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and †speak evil of dignitaries.

*2 Pet. 2:10. †Ex. 22:28.

9 But *Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, †durst not bring against him a railing judgment, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

*Dan. 10:13.
Rev. 12:7. †2 Pet. 2:11.

10 *But these rail at those things they know not: but what they understand naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

*2 Pet. 2:12.

11 Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way *of Cain, and †ran riotously in

the error of Balaam for hire, and perished in the gainsaying of Korah.

*Gen. 4:5. 1 John 3:12.
†Num. 22:7. 2 Pet. 2:15.

12 *These are hidden rocks in your †feasts of charity, when they feast with you, shepherds who feed themselves without fear: **clouds without water, ††carried about by the wind; trees without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

*2 Pet. 2:13. †1 Cor. 11:21.
**2 Pet. 2:17. ††Eph. 4:14.

13 *Raging waves of the sea, †foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, **to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

*Is. 57:20.
†Phil 3:19. **2 Pet. 2:17.

14 And Enoch also, *the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying: Behold, †the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his holy saints,
*Gen. 5:18. †Deut. 33:2. Dan. 7:10. Zech. 14:5. 2 Thess. 1:7. Rev. 1:7.

15 To execute judgment upon all, and to convict all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they in their ungodliness have committed, and of all their *hard things which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

*1 Sam. 2:3. Ps. 31:18. Mal. 3:13.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking according to their own lusts; and *their mouth speaketh great swelling words †showing respect of persons for the sake of advantage.

*2 Pet. 2:18.
†Prov. 28:21. James 2:1, 9.

¶III.

17 *But ye beloved, remember the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ.

*2 Pet. 3:2.

18 That that they told you *there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

*1 Tim. 4:1.
2 Tim. 3:1; 4:3. 2 Pet. 2:1.

19 These are they *who make separations, †sensual, having not the Spirit.

*Prov. 18:1. Hos. 4:14.
Heb. 10:25. †1 Cor. 2:14.

20 But ye, beloved, *building up yourselves on your most holy faith, †praying in the Holy Spirit.

*Col. 2:7. 1 Tim. 1:4. †Rom. 8:26.

21 Keep yourselves in the love of God, *looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

*Titus 2:13. 2 Pet. 3:12.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference;

23 And others *save with fear, †snatching them out of the fire; hating even **the garment spotted by the flesh.

*Rom. 11:14.
1 Tim. 4:16. †Amos 4:11. Zech. 3:2. **Zech. 3:4, 5. Rev. 3:4.

24 *Now unto him that is able to keep you from stumbling, and †to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

*Rom. 16:25.
Eph. 3:20. †Col. 1:22.

25 *To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and in all eternity. Amen.

*Rom. 16:27. 1 Tim. 1:17; 2:8.

THE REVELATION

OF ST. JOHN THE DIVINE

CHAPTER 1.

1 The Revelation of Jesus Christ, *which God gave him, to show to his servants things which †must shortly come to pass; and **he sent and revealed it by his angel unto his servant John:

*John 3:32; 8:26; 12:49.
†Verse 3; chap. 4:1. **Chap. 22:6, 7.

2 *Who testified of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he had seen.

1 Cor. 1:6; Chap. 6:9; 12:17.

3 *Blessed is he who readeth, and they who listen to the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein; for †the time is at hand. *Chap. 22:7. Luke 11:28. †Rom. 13:11. 1 Pet. 4:7.

¶II

4 From John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from him *who is, and †who was, and who is to come; **and from the seven Spirits which are before his throne.

*Verse 8. Ex. 3:14. Heb. 1:9, 14, etc. †John 1:1. **Zech. 3:9. Chap. 3:1; 4:5; 5:6.

5 And from Jesus Christ, *the faithful witness, the †first born of the dead, and ***the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him ††that loved us, ***and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

*John 8:14. 1 Tim. 6:13. †1 Cor. 15:20. **Eph. 1:20. ††John 13:34; 15:9. ***Heb. 9:14. 1 John 1:7.

6 And hath *made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; †to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

*1 Pet. 2:5. 9. Chap. 5:10; 20:6. †1 Tim. 6:13.

7 *Behold, he cometh in clouds; every eye shall see him, †they also who pierced him; and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.

*Dan. 7:13. Matt. 24:30. †Zech. 12:10. John 19:37.

¶III

8 *I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, saith the Lord God, †who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty.

*Verses 11, 17. Is. 41:4; 44:6. Chap. 2:8; 21. †Verse 4. Chap. 4:8.

9 I John, your brother, and *companion in tribulation, and †in the kingdom and in patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, **for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

*Phil. 1:7; 4:14. †Rom. 8:17. **Verse 2. Chap. 6:9.

10. *I was in the Spirit on †the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet.

*Acts 10:10. 2 Cor. 12:2. Chap. 4:2. †John 20:26. Acts 20:7.

11 Saying, *I am Alpha and Omega, †the first and the last: What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto

the seven churches; unto Ephesus, unto Smyrna, unto Pergamos, unto Thyatira, unto Sardis, unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

*Verse 8. †Verse 17.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spoke to me. And being turned, *I saw seven golden candlesticks;

*Verse 20. Ex. 25:37. Zech. 4:2.

13 *And in the midst of the seven candlesticks †one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the breasts with a golden girdle.

*Chap. 2:1. †Ezek. 1:26. Dan. 7:13; 10:16. Chap. 14:14.

14 His head and *his hair were white like wool, as white as snow; and †his eyes were like a flame of fire;

*Dan. 7:9.

†Dan. 10:6. Chap. 2:18; 19:12.

15 *And his feet as unto fine brass, as when molten in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters.

*Ezek. 1:7. Dan. 10:6. Chap. 2:18.

16 *And he had in his right hand seven stars; and †out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword; **and his countenance was as the sun shineth in its strength.

*Verse 20. Chap. 2:1; 3:1. †Is. 49:2. Eph. 6:17. Heb. 4:12. **Acts 26:13.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as one dead. But *he laid his right hand upon me, saying: Fear not, †I am the first and the last:

*Dan. 8:18; 10:10.

†Verse 11. Is. 41:4; 44:6; 48:12.

18 *I am he that liveth forever. I was dead; and, behold, †I am alive for ever-

more, Amen; and **have the keys of hell and of death.

*Rom. 6:12.

†Chap. 4:9; 5:14. **Chap. 20:1.

19 Write *the things which thou seest, †and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter.

*Verse 12, etc. †Chap. 2:1, etc.

20 The mystery *of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, †and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are **the angels of the seven churches; and ††the seven candlesticks are the seven churches.

*Verse 16. †Verse 12. **Chap. 2:1, etc. ††Zech. 4:2. Matt. 5:15.

CHAPTER 2.

1 To the angel of the church of Ephesus write: These things saith *he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, †who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

*Chap. 1:16, 20. †Chap. 1:13.

2 *I know thy works, and thy labor, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and †thou hast tried them **which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars.

*Verses 9, 13, 19. Pa. 1:6.

†1 John 4:1. **2 Cor. 11:13.

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast *not fainted.

*Gal. 6:9. Heb. 12:3, 5.

4 Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and

repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of its place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 *He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches: To him that overcometh will I give †to eat of the fruit of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

*Verses 11, 17, 29. Matt. 11:15. Chap. 3:6, 13. †Chap. 22:2, 14.

¶II

8 And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These things saith *the first and the last, who was dead, but is restored to life.

*Chap. 1:3, 17, 18.

9 *I know thy tribulation, and poverty, but thou art †rich, and I know the blasphemy of them who say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

*Verse 2.

†Luke 12:21. 1 Tim. 6:18.

10 *Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer; behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days. †Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee **the crown of life.

*Matt. 10:22. †Matt. 24:13.

**James 1:12. Chap. 3:11.

11 *He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches: He

that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.

*Verse 7. Chap. 13:9.

†Chap. 20:14; 21:8.

¶III

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write: These things saith *he who hath the sharp two-edged sword.

*Chap. 1:16.

13 *I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even †where Satan's seat is; and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas my faithful witness was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

*Verse 2. †Verse 9.

14 Yet have I a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of *Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, †to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

*Num. 24:14; 25.

2 Pet. 2:15. Jude 11.

†Verse 20. Acts 15:29. 1 Cor. 8:9.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine *of the Nicolaitanes;

*Verse 6.

16 Therefore, repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and *will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

*Is. 11:4. 2 Thess. 2:8.

17 *He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches: To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and on the stone

†a new name written which no man knoweth but he that receives it.

*Verses 7, 11. †Chap. 3:12; 19:12.

¶IV

18 And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These things saith the Son of God, *who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like molten brass;

*Chap. 1:14, 15.

19 I know thy works, thy love and service, thy faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and that thy last works be more than the first.

20 Notwithstanding I have this against thee, thou sufferest that woman *Jezebel, who calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants †to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

*1 Kings 16:31; 21:25. 2 Kings 9:7. †Verse 14. Ex. 34:15.

21 And I gave her time *to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.

*Rom. 2:4. Chap. 9:20.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that *commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

*Chap. 8:9.

23 And I will put her children to death, and all the churches shall know that *I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts; and I will give every one of you according to your works.

*1 Sam. 16:7. 1 Chr. 28:9; 29:17. 2 Chr. 6:30. Ps. 7:9.

24 But unto you the rest in Thyatira, as many as have

not this doctrine, I say who have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; *I will put upon you none other burden.

*Acts 15:28.

25 But *that which ye have already hold fast till I come.

*Chap. 3:11.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth *my works unto the end, †to him will I give authority over the nations; *John 6:29. 1 John 3:23. †Matt. 19:28. 1 Cor. 6:8.

27 *And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken in shivers: even as I received of my Father.

*Ps. 2:8, 9; 49:14. Dan. 7:22.

28 And I will give him *the morning star.

*2 Pet. 1:19. Chap. 22:16.

29 He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.

CHAPTER 3.

1 And to the angel of the church in Sardis write: These things saith he *that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; †I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, **and art dead.

*Chap. 1:4, 18; 4:5.

†Chap. 2:2. **Eph. 2:1, 5.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die; for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 *Remember, therefore, what thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and †repent. **If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee like a thief, and thou

shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

*Verse 11. 1 Tim. 6:20. †Verse 19.
**Matt. 24:42, 43. Mark 13:33.

4 Thou hast *a few names even in Sardis who have not †defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me **in white: for they are worthy. *Acts 1:15. †Jude 23.

**Chap. 4:4; 6:11; 7:9, 13.

5 He that overcometh *shall be clothed in white garments; and I will not †blot out his name out of the **book of life, but ††I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

*Chap. 10:8. †Ex. 32:32. Ps. 69:28.

**Phil. 4:3. Chap. 13:8.

††Matt. 10:32. Luke 12:8.

6 *He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

*Chap. 2:7.

¶II

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: These things saith *he that is holy, †he that is true, he that hath **the key of David, ††he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and ***shutteth, and no man openeth;

*Acts 8:14. †Verse 14. 1 John 5:20.

**Is. 22:22. ††Matt. 16:19.

***Job 12:14.

8 *I know thy works; behold I have set before thee †an open door, and no man can shut it; for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

*Verse 1. †1 Cor. 16:9. 2 Cor. 2:12.

9 Behold, I will make *them of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie;

behold, †I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

*Chap. 2:9. †Is. 49:23; 60:14.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, *I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon †all the world, to try them that dwell **upon the earth.

*2 Pet. 2:9.

†Luke 2:1. **Is. 24:17.

11 Behold, *I come quickly: †hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take **thy crown.

*Phil. 4:5. Chap. 1:3; 22:7, 12, 20.

†Verse 3. Chap. 2:25. **Chap. 2:10.

12 Him that overcometh will I make *a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall nevermore leave it: and †I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is **new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God; ††and I will write upon him my new name.

*1 Kings 7:21. Gal. 2:9. †Chap. 2:

17. **Gal. 4:26. Heb. 12:22.

Chap. 21:2, 10. ††Chap. 22:4.

13 *He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

*Chap. 2:7.

¶III

14 And to the angel of the church of Laodicea write: *These things saith the Amen, †the faithful and true witness **the beginning of the creation of God.

*Is. 65:16.

†Verse 7. Chap. 1:5. **Col. 1:15.

15 *I know thy works, that thou are neither cold nor hot:

I would that thou wert cold or hot.

*Verse 1.

16 Therefore because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou sayest, *I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou are wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked;

*Hos. 12:8. 1 Cor. 4:8.

18 I counsel thee *to buy of me gold purified in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and †white garments that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see. *Is. 55:1. Matt. 13:44; 25:9. †2 Cor. 5:3. Chap. 7:13; 16:15; 19:8.

19 *As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten; be zealous therefore, and repent.

*Job. 5:17.

Prov. 3:11, 12. Heb. 12:5, 6.

20 Behold, *I stand at the door, and knock; †if any one hear my voice, and open the door, **I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

*Cant. 5:2.

†Luke 12:37. **John 14:23.

21 To him that overcometh *will I grant to sit beside me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down beside my Father in his throne.

*Matt. 19:28. Luke 22:30. 1 Cor. 6:2.

22 *He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

*Chap. 2:7.

CHAPTER 4.

1 After these things I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven; and *the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, †Come up hither, **and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

Ch. 1:10. †Ch. 11:12. **Ch. 1:19.

2 Immediately *I was in the spirit; and, behold, †a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

*Chap. 1:17. †Is. 6:1.

Jer. 17:12. Ezek. 1:26; 10:1.

3 And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone; *and there was a rainbow round about the throne, like unto an emerald to look upon. *Ezek. 1:28.

4 *And round about the throne were four and twenty other thrones; and upon the thrones I saw four and twenty elders sitting, †clothed in white robes; **and on their heads they had crowns of gold.

*Chap. 11:16.

†Chap. 3:4, 5; 6:11. **Verse 10.

5 And out of the throne proceeded *lightnings and thunderings and voices; †and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

*Chap. 8:5; 16:18.

†Ex. 37:23. 2 Chr. 4:20. Ezek. 1:13.

6 And before the throne there was *a sea of glass like unto crystal, †and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four living creatures full of eyes before and behind.

*Ex. 38:8. Chap. 15:2. †Ezek. 1:5.

7 *And the first living creature was like a lion, and the second living creature like a calf, and the third living creature had a face as a man, and the fourth living creature was like a flying eagle.

*Num. 2:2, etc. Ezek. 1:10; 10:14.

8 And the four living creatures had each of them *six wings about them; and they were full of eyes †within: and they rest not day and night, saying: **Holy, holy, holy, ††Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come.

*Is. 6:2. †Verse 6.

**Is. 6:3. ††Chap. 1:8.

9 And when the living creatures give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, *who liveth for ever and ever.

*Chap. 1:18.

10 *The four and twenty elders then fall down before him that sat on the throne, †and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying:

*Chap. 5:8, 14. †Verse 9.

11 *Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power; †for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

*Chap. 5:12. †Gen. 1:1.

Acts 17:24. Eph. 3:9. Col. 1:16.

CHAPTER 5.

1 And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne *a book written within and on the backside, †sealed with seven seals.

*Ezek. 2:9, 10. †Is. 29:11. Dan. 12:4.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a great voice: Who is worthy to open the book, and to break the seals thereof?

3 But no one *in heaven, nor on the earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look into it.

*Verse 13.

4 And I wept long because no one was found worthy to open the book, neither to look into it.

¶III

5 And one of the elders saith unto me: Weep not, behold, *the Lion of the tribe of Judah †the Root of David hath prevailed to open the book and to break the seven seals thereof.

*Gen. 49:9. Heb. 7:14. †Is. 11:1, 10. Rom. 15:12. Chap. 22:16.

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood *a Lamb as though it had been slain. It had seven horns and †seven eyes, which are **the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the world.

*Verses 9, 12. Is. 53:7. John 1:29.

†Zech. 3:9; 4:10. **Chap. 4:5.

7 And the Lamb came and took the book out of the right hand *of him who sat upon the throne.

*Chap. 4:2.

8 And when he had taken the book, *the four living creatures and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having each one of them †harps, and golden vials full of incense, **which are the prayers of the saints.

*Chap. 4:8, 10. †Chap. 14:2; 15:2. **Ps. 141:2. Chap. 8:3, 4.

9 And *they sung a new song, saying †Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: **for thou wast slain, and by thy blood †thast redeemed us to God, **out of every kindred and tongue, and people, and nation.

*Ps. 40:3. Chap. 14:3. †Chap. 4:11.
**Verse 6. ††Acts 20:28. Rom. 3:24. 1 Cor. 6:20. **Dan. 4:1; 6:25.

10 *And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall be kings on the earth.

*Ex. 19:6.
1 Pet. 2:5, 9. Chap. 1:6; 20:6; 22:5.

¶III

11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels *round about the throne and the living creatures and the elders: and the number of them was †ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

*Chap. 4:4, 6.
†Ps. 68:17. Dan. 7:10. Heb. 12:22.

12 Saying with a great voice: *Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

*Chap. 4:11.

13 And *every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying: †Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

*Verse 3. Phil. 2:10.
†1 Chr. 29:11. Rom. 9:5; 16:27.
1 Tim. 6:16. 1 Pet. 4:11.

14 *And the four living creatures said, Amen. And

the four and twenty elders fell down and worshiped.

*Chap. 19:4.

CHAPTER 6.

1. And *I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, †one of the four living creatures saying, Come and see.

*Chap. 5:5, 6, 7. †Chap. 4:7.

2 And I saw, and behold *a white horse, †and he that sat on him had a bow; **and a crown was given him. And he went forth conquering and to conquer.

*Zech. 6:3. Chap. 19:11.
†Ps. 45:4, 5. **Zech. 6:11.

¶II

3 And when the Lamb had opened the second seal, *I heard the second living creature say, Come and see.

*Chap. 4:7.

4 *Then there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given unto him a great sword.

*Zech. 6:2.

5 And when the Lamb had opened the third seal, *I heard the third living creature say, Come and see. And I beheld, †a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

*Chap. 4:7. †Zech. 6:2.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four living creatures say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three

measures of barley for a penny; but *see thou, hurt not the oil and the wine.

*Chap. 9:4.

IIII

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, Come and see.

8 *And I looked, and I saw a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was Death, and the prince of Hell followed him. And power was given to them over the fourth part of the earth, †to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, **and by means of the living creatures of the earth.

*Zech. 6:3.

†Ezek. 14:21. **Lev. 26:22.

9 And when the Lamb had opened the fifth seal, I saw underneath *the altar †the souls of them that were slain **for the word of God, and for ††the testimony which they held.

*Chap. 8:3; 9:13; 14:18. †Chap. 20:

4. **Chap. 1:9. ††2 Tim. 1:8.

10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying: *How long, O Lord, †holy and true, **before thou wilt judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

*Zech. 1:12.

†Chap. 3:7. **Chap. 11:18; 19:2.

11 And *white robes were given unto each one of them; and it was said unto them, †that they should rest yet for a little time, until their fellowservants and also their brethren, who were about to be slain as they, should be fulfilled.

Chap. 3:4, 5; 7:9, 14.
†Heb. 11:40. Chap. 14:13.

IIIV

12 And I beheld when the Lamb had opened the sixth seal, *and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and †the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood;

*Chap. 16:18.

†Joel 2:10, 31; 8:15.

13 *And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

*Chap. 8:10; 9:1.

14 *The heaven disappeared as a scroll when it is rolled together; and †every mountain and island were moved out of their places.

*Ps. 102:26. Is. 34:4.

†Jer. 3:23; 4:24.

15 Then the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and free man, *hid themselves in the caves and under the rocks of the mountains;

*Is. 2:19.

16 *Crying to the mountains and rocks: Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the Wrath of the Lamb;

*Hos. 10:8. Luke 23:30. Chap. 9:6.

17 *For the great Day of his wrath is come; and who is able to stand? *Is. 13:6, etc.

Zeph. 1:14, etc. Chap. 16:14.

CHAPTER 7.

1 And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, *holding the four winds of

the earth, †that no wind should blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

*Dan. 7:2. †Chap. 9:4.
(Epistle on All Saints' Day. Verses 2 and 3.)

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a great voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying, *Do not harm the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have †sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

*Chap. 6:6; 9:4.
†Ezek. 9:4. Chap. 14:1.

4 *And I heard the number of them which were sealed; and there were sealed †an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel. *Chap. 9:16. †Chap. 14:1.

5 Of the tribe of Judah twelve thousand sealed; the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand, the tribe of Gad twelve thousand;

6 The tribe of Aser twelve thousand; the tribe of Nephtalim, twelve thousand; the tribe of Manasses, twelve thousand;

7 The tribe of Simeon twelve thousand; the tribe of Levi twelve thousand; the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand.

8 The tribe of Zabulon twelve thousand; the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand; the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and, lo, *a great multitude, which

no man could number, †of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues. They stood before the throne, and before the Lamb **arrayed in white robes, and palms in their hands;

*Rom. 11:25. †Chap. 5:9.
**Verse 14. Chap. 3:5, 18; 4:4; 6:11.

10 And are crying with a loud voice, saying, *Salvation unto our God †who sitteth on the throne, and unto the Lamb. *Ps. 8:8. Is. 48:11.

Jer. 3:23. †Chap. 5:13.

11 *And all the angels stood round about the throne and about the elders and the four living creatures, and they fell on their faces before the throne and worshiped God, *Chap. 4:6.

12 *Saying: Amen! Blessing and glory, and wisdom; and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen. *Chap. 5:13, 14.

13 And one of the elders turned to me and said: Who are these which are arrayed in *white robes? and whence came they? *Verse 9.

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest it. And he said to me: These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have †washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

*Chap. 6:9; 17:6.
†Is. 1:18. Zech. 3:3, 4, 5.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple; and he that sitteth on the throne shall *dwell among them.

*Is. 4:5, 6. Chap. 21:3.

16 *They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; †neither shall the sun smite upon them, nor any heat.

*Is. 49:10.
†Ps. 121:6. Chap. 21:4.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne *shall feed them, and shall lead them unto fountains of waters of life; †and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

*Ps. 28:1; 36:8.
John 10:11, 14. †Is. 25:8.

CHAPTER 8.

1 And *when the Lamb had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

*Chap. 6:1.

2 *And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; †and to them seven trumpets were given.

*Matt. 18:10. Luke 1:19.
†2 Chr. 29:25-28.

3 And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with *the prayers of all saints upon †the golden altar which was before the throne.

*Chap. 5:8. †Ex. 80:1. Chap. 6:9.

4 And *the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended before God out of the angel's hand.

*Ps. 141:2. Luke 1:10.

5 Then the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it upon the earth, and *there followed voices, and thunder-

ings, and lightnings, †and an earthquake.

*Chap. 16:18. †2 Sam. 22:8.
1 Kings 19:11. Acts 4:31.

6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound the trumpets.

¶II

7 The first angel sounded, *and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast †upon the earth; and the third part **of the earth was burned, and the third part of the trees was burnt, and the green grass was burnt.

*Ezek. 38:22.
†Chap. 16:2. **Is. 2:13.

8 And the second angel sounded, *and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea; †and the third part of the sea became blood.

*Jer. 51:25.
Amos 7:4. †Chap. 16:3.

9 *And the third part of the creatures that were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

*Chap. 16:3.

¶III

10 And the third angel sounded, *and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a torch, †and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters;

*Is. 14:12. Chap. 9:1. †Chap. 16:4.

11 *And the name of the star is called Wormwood: †and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

*Ruth 1:20.
†Ex. 15:23. Jer. 9:15; 23:15.

¶IV

12 *And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night in like manner.

Is. 13:10. Amos 8:9.

13 And I beheld, *and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a great voice: †Woe, woe, woe, to them that dwell on the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, who are about to sound!

*Chap. 14:6; 19:17. †Chap. 9:12.

CHAPTER 9.

1 And the fifth angel sounded, *and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of †the bottomless pit.

*Luke 10:18. Chap. 8:10. †Verses 2, 11. Luke 8:31.

2 And he opened the bottomless pit; *and there arose a smoke out of the pit, like the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.

*Joel 2:2, 10.

3 And there came out of the smoke *locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.

*Ex. 10:4. Judg. 7:12.

4 And it was commanded them *that they should not hurt †the grass of the earth, neither any green thing,

neither any tree; but only those persons who have not **the seal of God on their foreheads.

*Chap. 6:6; 7:3. †Chap. 8:7. **Ex. 12:23.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill mankind, *but that they should be tormented five months: and their torture was as the torture of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

*Verse 10. Chap. 11:7.

6 In those days men *shall seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

*Job 3:21. Is. 2:19. Jer. 8:3.

7 And *the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; †and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold; their faces were as the faces of mankind. *Joel 2:4. †Neh. 3:17.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and *their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

*Joel 1:6.

9 They had, as it were, breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was *as the sound of chariots of many horses rushing into battle.

*Joel 2:5, 6, 7.

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails, *and their power was to hurt men five months.

*Verse 5.

11 *They had a king over them, which is †the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, but in Greek his name is Apollyon. *Eph. 2:2. †Verse 1.

12 *One woe is past; and,

behold, there come two woes more hereafter. *Chap. 8:13.

III

13 And the sixth angel sounded. And I heard a voice from the horns of the golden altar which is before God.

14 Saying to the sixth angel that had the trumpet, Loose the four angels that are bound *in the great river Euphrates. *Chap. 16:12.

15 Then the four angels, that were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, were loosed, to slay the third part of mankind.

16 And *the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

*Ps. 68:17. Dan. 7:10. †Ezek. 38:4.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone; *and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone.

*1 Chr. 12:8. Is. 5:28, 29.

18 By these three plagues was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths.

19 For the power of the horses is in their mouth, and in their tails, *for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt. *Is. 9:15.

20 And the rest of mankind which were not killed by these plagues *yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship †devils, **and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood, which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk.

*Deut. 31:29.

†Lev. 17:7. Ps. 106:37. 1 Cor. 10:20. **Ps. 115:4; 136:15.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, *nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts. *Chap. 22:15.

CHAPTER 10.

1 Then I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: *and a rainbow was upon his head, and †his face was as it were the sun, and **his feet as pillars of fire:

*Ezek. 1:28. †Matt. 17:2. Chap. 1:16. **Chap. 1:15.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: *and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the land.

*Matt. 28:18.

3 And cried with a loud voice, as a lion roareth: and when he had cried, *seven thunders uttered their voices.

*Chap. 8:5.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, *Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

*Dan. 8:26; 12:4, 9.

5 And the angel which I

saw standing upon the sea and upon the land *lifted up his right hand to heaven,

*Ex. 6:8. Dan. 12:7.

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, *who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, †that there should be time no longer: *Neh. 9:6. Chap. 4:11; 14:7. †Dan. 12:7.

7 But *in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

*Chap. 11:15.

III

8 Then *the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said: Go and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the land.

*Verse 4.

9 And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, *Take it, and eat it; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

*Jer. 15:16. Ezek. 2:8; 3:1, 2, 3.

10 And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it; *and it was in my mouth sweet as honey; and as soon as I had eaten it, †my belly was bitter.

*Ezek. 3:3. †Ezek. 2:10.

11 And he said unto me,

Thou must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAPTER 11.

1 And there was given me *a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and count them that worship therein.

*Ezek. 40:8.

Zech. 2:1. Chap. 21:15.

2 But *the court which is without the temple leave out, and measure it not; †for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they **tread under foot forty and two months.

*Ezek. 40:17. †Ps. 79:1.

Luke 21:24. **Dan. 8:10.

3 And I will give power unto my two *witnesses, †and they shall prophesy **a thousand two hundred and three-score days, clothed in sackcloth.

*Chap. 20:4.

†Chap. 19:10. **Chap. 12:6.

4 These are the *two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

*Ps. 52:8.

Jer. 11:16. Zech. 4:8, 11, 14.

5 If any man will hurt them, *fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

*2 Kings 1:10.

Jer. 1:10; 5:14. Ezek. 43:3.

6 These *have the power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth

with all plagues, as often as they will.

*1 Kings 17:1. James 5:16.

7 And when they *shall have finished their testimony, †the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

*Luke 13:32. †Chap. 13:1, 11; 17:3. Dan. 7:21. Zech. 14:2.

8 And their dead bodies lie in the street of *the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, †where also our Lord was crucified.

*Chap. 14:8; 17:1, 5; 18:10. †Heb. 13:12. Chap. 18:24.

9 *And they of the people and kindreds and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, †and suffer not their dead bodies to be put in graves.

*Chap. 17:15. †Ps. 79:2, 3.

10 *And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, †and shall send gifts one to another; because these two orophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

*Chap. 12:12; 13:8. †Esther 9:19.

11 *And after three days and an half †the breath of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

*Verse 9. †Ezek 37:5, 9, 10, 14.

12. And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them: Come up hither. *And they ascended up to heaven †in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them.

*Is. 14:18. Chap. 12:5. †Is. 60:8.

13 And the same hour *was there a great earthquake, †and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain seven thousand persons, and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

*Chap. 6:12.

†Chap. 16:19. Chap. 3:4.

14 *The second woe is past; and, behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

*Chap. 8:13; 9:12; 15:1.

¶II

15 Then *the seventh angel sounded; †and there were great voices in heaven, saying **The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; ††and he shall reign for ever and ever.

*Chap. 10:7. †Is. 27:13. Chap. 16:17. **Chap. 12:10. ††Dan. 2:44; 7:14, 18, 27.

16 And *the four and twenty elders, who sit before God on their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshiped God. Chap. 4:4; 5:8.

17 Saying: We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, *who art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken thy great power and didst reign.

*Chap. 1:4, 8; 4:8; 16:5.

18 *And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, †and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give thy reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, **small and great; and shouldest destroy them who corrupt the earth.

*Verses 2, 9. †Dan. 7:9. Chap. 6:10. **Chap. 19:5.

¶III

19 And then *the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament; and †there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake and great hail.

*Chap. 15:5, 8. †Chap. 8:5; 16:18.

CHAPTER 12.

1 And there appeared a great sign in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:

2 And she being with child cried, *travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

*Is. 66:7. Gal. 4:19.

3 And there appeared another sign in heaven; and behold *a great red dragon, †having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

*Chap. 17:3. †Chap. 17:9, 10.

4 And *his tail draweth the third part †of the stars of heaven, **and cast them to the earth; and the dragon stood ††before the woman who was about to be delivered, ***to devour her child as soon as it was born.

*Chap. 9:10, 19. †Chap. 17:18. **Dan. 8:10. ††Verse 2. ***Ex. 1:16.

5 And she brought forth a man child, *who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

*Ps. 2:9. Chap. 2:27; 19:15.

6 And *the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared for

her of God, that she should be nourished there †a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

*Verse 4. †Chap. 11:3. (Epistle on St. Michael's Day. Verses 7-11.)

7 And there was war in heaven: *Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels.

*Dan. 10:13, 21; 12:1. †Verse 3. Chap. 20:2.

8 And prevailed not; neither was left for them any more room in heaven.

9 Then *the great dragon was cast out, †that old serpent called the Devil, and Satan, **who deceiveth the whole world: he was cast down to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

*Luke 10:18. John 12:31. †Gen. 3:1, 4. Chap. 20:2. **Chap. 20:3.

10 And I heard a great voice saying in heaven: *Now has come salvation, and power, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, †who accused them before our God day and night.

*Chap. 11:15; 19:1. †Job 1:9; 2:5. Zech. 3:1.

11 And *they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; †and because they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. *Rom. 8:38, 39, 37; 16:20.

†Luke 14:26.

12 But *woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come

down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but little time.

*Chap. 8:13; 11:10.

III

13 When the dragon saw that he was cast to the earth, he persecuted *the woman which brought forth the man child.

*Verse 5.

14 *But to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, †that she might fly **into the wilderness, to her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

*Ex. 19:4. †Verse 6. **Chap. 17:3.

15 Then the serpent *cast out of his mouth water as a river after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

*Is. 59:19.

16 But the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon waxed wroth with the woman, *and went away to make war with the remnant of her seed, †who keep the commandments of God, and have **the testimony of Jesus Christ.

*Gen. 3:15. †Chap. 14:12.

**1 Cor. 2:1. 1 John 5:10.

CHAPTER 13.

1 And I stood upon the strand of the sea, and saw *a beast rising out of the sea, †having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and on his heads blasphemous names.

*Dan. 7:2, 7. †Chap. 12:3;

17:3, 9, 12. Chap. 17:3.

2 And *the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, †but his feet were as the feet of a bear, **and his mouth as the mouth of a lion, and ††the dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority.

*Dan. 7:6. †Dan. 7:5.

**Dan. 7:4. ††Chap. 12:9.

3 And I saw one of his heads *as it were mortally wounded; and his deadly wound was healed: and †all the world wondered after the beast. *Verses 12, 16. †Chap. 17:8.

4 And men worshiped the dragon which gave authority to the beast: and they worshiped the beast, saying: *Who is like unto the beast? who is able to war with him?

*Chap. 18:18.

5 And there was given unto him *a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue †forty and two months.

*Dan. 7:8, 11, 25; 11:36. †Chap. 11:2.

6 He opened his mouth in blasphemies against God, to blaspheme his name, *and his tabernacle, and even those who dwell in heaven.

*John 1:14. Col. 2:9.

7 It was given unto him *to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: †and authority was given him over all kindreds, and tongues and nations.

*Dan. 7:21.

Chap. 11:7. †Chap. 11:18.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship the beast, *whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain †from the foundation of the world.

*Ex. 32:32. Dan. 12:1. Phil. 4:3.

†Chap. 17:8.

9 *If any man have ears let him hear. *Chap. 2:7.

10 *He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity; †he that shall kill with the sword must be killed with the sword. **Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

Is. 83:1. †Gen. 9:6.
Matt. 26:52. **Chap. 14:12.

III

11 Then I saw another beast *coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. *Chap. 11:7.

12 And he exercised all the power of the first beast before him, and caused the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, *whose deadly wound was healed. *Verse 3.

13 And *he performed marvelous things even †so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men,

*Deut. 13:1, 2, 8. Matt. 24:24.
2 Thess. 2:9. †1 Kings 18:38.

14 And *deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, †by those signs which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound of the sword, and yet lived.

*Chap. 12:9; 19:20.
†2 Thess. 2:9, 10.

15 And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, *and cause that as many as would not worship the image

of the beast should be put to death. *Chap. 16:2; 19:20; 20:4.

16 And he causeth all, both the small and the great, the rich and the poor, the free and the bond, *to receive a mark on their right hand, or on their foreheads:

*Chap. 14:9; 19:20; 20:4.

17 That no man should be able to buy or to sell, save he that had the mark, or *the name of the beast, †or the number of his name.

*Chap. 14:11. †Chap. 15:2.

18 *Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count †the number of the beast: **for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred sixty and six.

*Chap. 17:9.
†Chap. 15:2. **Chap. 21:17.

CHAPTER 14.

1 And I saw, and, lo, *a Lamb stood on the Mount Zion, and with him †an hundred forty and four thousand saints, **having his Father's name written on their foreheads.

*Chap. 5:6.
†Chap. 7:4. **Chap. 7:3; 13:16.

2 And I heard a sound out of heaven, *as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of †harpers playing on their harps.

*Chap. 1:15; 19:6. †Chap. 5:8.

3 And *they sung a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song †but the hundred and forty and four thousand saints who were redeemed from the earth.

*Chap. 5:9; 15:3. †Verse 1.

4 These are they who were not defiled with women; *for they are pure as virgins. These are they †which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These **were purchased from among men, ††being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb.

*2 Cor. 11:2. †Chap. 3:4; 7:15.

**Chap. 5:9. ††James 1:18.

5 And *in their mouth was found no guile: for †they are without fault before the throne of God.

*Pa. 32:2. Zeph. 3:13. †Eph. 5:27.

(Epistle on Reformation Day. Verses 6, 7.)

6 Then I saw another angel *fly in the midst of heaven, †having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

*Chap. 8:18. †Eph. 3:9, 10, 11.

7 Saying with a great voice: *Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: †and worship him that made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

*Chap. 11:18; 15:4. †Neh. 9:6.

Pa. 88:6; 124:8; 146:5, 6.

III

8 Then followed a second angel, saying: *Babylon is fallen, is fallen, †that great city, because she made all nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

*Isa. 21:9. Jer. 51:8.

†Jer. 51:7. Chap. 11:8; 16:19.

9 Then the third angel followed them, saying with a great voice: *If any man worship the beast and his

image, and receiveth his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, *Chap. 13:14, 15, 16.

10 The same also *shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is †poured out without mixture into **the cup of his anger; he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb.

*Ps. 75:8. Is. 51:17. Jer. 25:15.

†Chap. 18:6. **Chap. 16:19.

11 And *the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day and night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

*Isa. 34:10. Chap. 19:3.

12 *Here is the patience of the saints: †they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

*Chap. 13:10. †Chap. 12:17.

III

13 Then I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me: Write, *Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, **that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them.

*Ecc. 4:1, 2. Chap. 20:6, †1 Cor. 15:18. 1 Thessa. 4:16. **2 Thessa.

1:7. Heb. 4:9.

14 And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat *like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

*Ezek. 1:26.

Dan. 7:13. Chap. 1:18.

15 And another angel
*came out of the temple,
crying with a great voice to
him that sat on the cloud,
†Thrust in thy sickle, and
reap: for the time is come
for thee to reap; for the har-
vest **of the earth is ripe.

*Chap. 16:17. †Joel 3:13. Matt. 13:
39. **Jer. 51:33. Chap. 13:12.

16 And he that sat on the
cloud thrust his sickle on the
earth; and the earth was
reaped.

17 And another angel
came out of the temple
which is in heaven, he also
having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel
came out from the altar,
*which had power over fire;
and cried with a great cry
to him that had the sharp
sickle, saying: †Thrust in thy
sharp sickle, and gather the
clusters of the vine of the
earth; for her grapes are
fully ripe.

*Chap. 16:8. †Joel 3:13.

19 And the angel thrust
in his sickle into the earth,
and gathered the vine of the
earth, and cast it into *the
great winepress of the wrath
of God.

*Chap. 19:15.

20 And *the winepress
was trodden †without the
city, and blood came out of
the winepress, even unto the
horses bridles, by the space
of a thousand and six hun-
dred furlongs.

*Is. 63:8. Lam. 1:15.
†Heb. 13:12. Chap. 11:8.

CHAPTER 15.

1 Then *I saw another
sign in heaven, great and
marvellous, †seven angels

having the seven plagues;
which are the last, **for in
them is filled up the wrath
of God.

*Chap. 12:1, 3.

†Chap. 16:1; 21:9. **Chap. 14:10.

2 And I saw as it were *a
sea of glass †mingled with
fire: and them that had
gotten the victory over the
beast, **and over his image,
and over his mark, and over
the number of his name,
stand on the sea of glass,
††having the harps of God.

*Chap. 4:6; 21:18.

†Matt. 3:11. **Chap. 13:15, 16, 17.

††Chap. 5:8; 14:2.

3 And they sing *the song
of Moses the servant of
God, and the song of the
Lamb, saying: †Great and
marvellous are thy works,
Lord God Almighty; **just
and true are thy ways, thou
King eternal. *Ex. 15:1. Deut.
31:30. Chap. 14:8. †Deut. 32:4. Ps.
111:2. **Ps. 145:17. Hos. 14:9.

4 *Who shall not fear
thee, O Lord, and glorify thy
name? for thou only art
holy, for all nations shall
come and worship before
thee; for thy judgments are
made manifest.

*Ex. 15:14, 15, 16. Jer. 10:7.

¶¶¶

5 After that I looked, and,
behold, *the temple of the
tabernacle of the testimony
in heaven was opened;

*Num. 1:50. Chap. 11:19.

6 *And the seven angels
came out of the temple, hav-
ing the seven plagues,
†clothed in pure and white
linen, and having their
breasts girded with golden
girdles. *Verse 1. †Ex. 28:6, 8.

Ezek. 44:17, 18. Chap. 1:13.

7 *And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, †who liveth for ever and ever.

*Chap. 4:6.

†1 Thess. 1:9. Chap. 4:9; 10:6.

8 And *the temple was filled with smoke †from the glory of God, and from his majesty; and no man was able to enter into the temple, until the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

*Ex. 40:34.

1 Kings 8:10. †2 Thess. 1:9.

CHAPTER 16.

1 And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying *to the seven angels: Go your ways, and pour out the vials †of the wrath of God upon the earth.

*Chap. 15:1. †Chap. 14:10; 15:7.

2 And the first angel went and poured out his vial *upon the earth; and †there fell a loathsome and grievous sore upon the men **which had the mark of the beast, and upon them ††that worshipped his image.

*Chap. 8:7. †Ex. 9:9, 10.

**Chap. 13:16. ††Chap. 13:14.

¶II

3 Then the second angel poured out his vial *upon the sea; and †it became like the blood of a dead man **and every living thing died in the sea.

*Chap. 8:8.

†Ex. 7:17. **Chap. 8:9.

¶III

4 Then the third angel poured out his vial *upon the rivers and fountains of waters; †and they became blood. *Chap. 8:10. †Ex. 7:20.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say: *Thou art righteous, O Lord, †who art, and wast, and shalt be, thou Holy One, because thou hast thus judged.

*Chap. 15:3.

†Chap. 1:4, 8; 4:8; 11:17.

6 For *they have shed the blood †of the saints and prophets, **and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

*Matt. 23:34, 35. Chap. 13:15.

†Chap. 11:18; 18:20. **Is. 49:26.

7 And I heard another voice out of the altar say: Even so, *Lord God Almighty, †true and righteous are thy judgments.*Chap. 15:3.

†Chap. 18:10; 14:10; 19:2.

¶IV

8 Then the fourth angel poured out his vial *upon the sun; †and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

*Chap. 8:12.

†Chap. 9:17, 18; 14:18.

9 And men were scorched with intense heat, and they *blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: †and they repented not **to give him glory.*Verses 11, 21. †Dan. 5:22.

Chap. 9:20. **Chap. 11:18; 14:7.

¶V

10 Then the fifth angel poured out his vial *upon the seat of the beast; †and his kingdom was full of darkness; **and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

*Chap. 18:2.

†Chap. 9:2. **Chap. 11:10.

11 And *blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and †their sores,

****yet they repented not of their deeds.** *Verses 9, 21.
†Verse 2. **Verse 9.

¶VI

12 Then the sixth angel poured out his vial *upon the great river Euphrates; †and the water thereof was dried up, so that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

* Chap. 9:14. Jer. 50:38; 51:36.

13 And I saw three unclean *spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of †the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of **the false prophet.

*1 John 4:1, 2, 3. †Chap. 12:3, 9.
**Chap. 19:20; 20:10.

14 For *they are the spirits of devils, †working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth **and of the whole world, to gather them to ††the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

*1 Tim. 4:1. James 3:15. †2 Thess. 2:9; Chap. 13:13, 14. **Luke, 2:1.
††Chap. 17:14; 19:19; 20:8.

15 *Behold, I am coming as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, †lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. *Matt. 24:43. 1 Thess. 5:

2. 2 Pet. 3:10. Chap. 3:3.
†2 Cor. 5:3. Chap. 3:4, 18.

16 *And they gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Har-Mageddon. *Chap. 19:19.

¶VII

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of

heaven, from the throne, saying: *It is done.

*Chap. 21:6.

18 And *there followed voices, and thunders, and lightnings; †and there was a great earthquake, **such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

*Chap. 4:5; 8:5; 11:19.
†Chap. 11:18. **Dan. 12:1.

19 And *the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell; and great Babylon †came in remembrance before God, **to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

*Chap. 14:8; 17:18. †Chap. 18:5.
**Isa. 51:17, 22. Jer. 25:15.
Chap. 14:10.

20 *And every island vanished, and the mountains were not found. *Chap. 6:14.

21 *And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and †men blasphemed God because of **the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

*Chap. 11:19.
†Verses 9, 11. **Ex. 9:23, 24, 25.

CHAPTER 17.

1 And there *one of the seven angels which had the seven vials came to me and talked with me, saying unto me: Come hither; †I will shew unto thee the judgment of **the great harlot that sitteth upon many waters:

*Chap. 21:9. †Chap. 16:19; 19:16.
17, 19. **Neh. 3:4. Chap. 19:2.

2 *With whom the kings of the earth have committed

fornication, and †the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

*Chap. 18:3.

†Jer. 51:7. Chap. 14:8.

3 So he carried me away in a trance *into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit †upon a scarlet colored beast, full of **names of blasphemy, †having seven heads and ***ten horns.

*Chap. 12:6. †Chap. 12:3. **Chap.

18:1. ††Verse 9. ***Verse 12.

4 And the woman *was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, †and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, **having a golden cup in her hand †full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.

*Chap. 18:12. †Dan. 11:38. **Jer.

51:7. Chap. 18:6. ††Chap. 14:8.

5 And upon her forehead was a mystic name written, *BABYLON †THE GREAT, **THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

*2 Thess. 2:7. †Chap. 11:3;

14:8; 16:19; 18:2, 10, 21.

**Chap. 18:9; 19:2.

6 And I saw *the woman drunken †with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of **the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her I was amazed beyond measure.

*Chap. 18:24. †Chap. 13:15; 16:6.

**Chap. 6:9, 10; 12:11.

III

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore wast thou amazed? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and *shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and †is on the way to perdition: and they that dwell on the earth **shall wonder, those ††whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet shall be.

*Chap. 11:7; 18:1.

†Verse 11. Chap. 18:10. **Chap.

18:8. ††Chap. 18:8.

9 And *here is the mind which hath wisdom. †The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

*Chap. 13:18. †Chap. 13:1.

10 They are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 The beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, one of the seven, *and goeth into perdition. *Verse 8.

12 And *the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, who have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. *Dan. 7:20.

Zech. 1:18, 19, 21. Chap. 13:1.

13 These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 *These shall war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: †for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: **and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.

*Chap. 16:14; 19:19. †Deut. 10:17.

1 Tim. 6:15. Chap. 19:16. **Jer.

50:44, 45. Chap. 14:4.

¶III

15 And he saith unto me,
*The waters which thou
sawest, where the harlot sit-
teth, fare peoples, and mul-
titudes, and nations, and
tongues.

*Verse 1. Isa. 8:7. †Chap. 13:7.

16 And the ten horns
which thou sawest upon the
beast, *these shall hate the
harlot, and shall make her
desolate †and naked, and
shall eat her flesh, and burn
her utterly with fire.

*Jer. 50:41, 42. Chap. 16:12.
†Ezek. 16:37-44. Chap. 18:16.

17 *For God hath put in
their hearts to fulfil his will,
and to agree, and give their
kingdom unto the beast,
†until the words of God
shall be fulfilled.

*2 Thess. 2:11. †Chap. 10:7.

18 And the woman which
thou sawest *is that great
city, †which reigneth over
the kings of the earth.

*Chap. 16:19. †Chap. 12:4.

CHAPTER 18.

1 *After these things I
saw another angel come down
from heaven, having great
power; †and the earth was
lightened with his glory.

*Chap. 17:1. †Ezek. 43:2.

2 And he cried mightily
with a strong voice, saying,
*Babylon the great is fallen,
is fallen, and †is become the
habitation of devils, and the
stronghold of every foul
spirit, and **a habitation of
every unclean and hateful
bird.

*Isa. 13:19; 21:9. Jer. 51:8. Chap.
14:8. †Isa. 13:21; 21:8; 34:14.
**Isa. 14:23; 34:11

3 For all nations *have
drunk of the wine of the
wrath of her fornication,
and the kings of the earth
have committed fornication
with her, †and the mer-
chants of the earth are
waxed rich through the
abundance of her delicacies.

*Chap. 14:8; 17:2.

†Verses 11, 15. Isa. 47:15.

¶II

4 Then I heard another
voice from heaven, saying:
*Come out of her, my peo-
ple, that ye be not partakers
of her sins, and that ye re-
ceive not of her plagues.

*Isa. 48:20; 52:11. Jer. 50:8;
51:6, 45. 2 Cor. 6:17.

5 *For her sins have
reached even unto heaven,
and †God hath remembered
her iniquities. *Gen. 18:20, 21.
Jer. 51:9. Jonah 1:2.

6 *Reward her even as
she rewarded you, and double
unto her double according to
her works: †in the cup which
she hath filled **fill to her as
much again.

*Ps. 137:8. Jer. 50:15, 29; 51:24.
49. 2 Tim. 4:14. Chap. 18:10.
†Chap. 14:10.

7 *As much as she hath
glorified herself, and lived
deliciously, so much torment
and sorrow give her: for she
saith in her heart, I sit
here a †queen, and am no
widow, and shall see no sor-
row.

*Ezek. 28:2, etc.
†Isa. 47:7, 8. Zeph. 2:15.

8 Therefore shall her
plagues come *in one day,
death, and mourning, and
famine; and †she shall be
utterly burned with fire; **for

strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

*Verse 10. Is. 47:9. †Chap. 17:16. **Jer. 50:34. Chap. 11:17.

9 And *the kings of the earth who committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, †shall bewail her and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke from the burning of their city.

*Verse 8. Ezek. 26:16, 17. Chap. 17:2. †Jer. 50:46.

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, *Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! †for in one hour is thy judgment come.

*Is. 21:9. Chap. 14:8. †Verses 17, 19.

11 And *the merchants of the earth weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.

*Verse 8. Ezek. 27, 27-36.

12 *The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all scented wood, and all manner of vessels of ivory, and all manner of vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble,

*Chap. 17:4.

13 And cinnamon, and perfumes, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and *souls of men.

*Ezek. 27:13.

14 And the fruits that thy soul craved after are departed from thee, and all things are departed from thee, and

thou shalt find them no more at all.

15 *The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing:

*Verses 3, 11.

16 Saying, Alas, alas, that great city, *that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!

*Chap. 17:4.

17 *For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And †every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

*Verse 10. †Is. 23:14. Ezek. 27:29.

18 *And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, †What city is like unto this great city!

*Verse 9. Ezek. 27:30, 31. †Chap. 13:4.

19 *And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

*Josh. 7:6. 1 Sam. 4:12. Job. 2:12. Ezek. 27:30.

20 *Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye saints, and ye apostles, and prophets; for †God hath avenged you on her. *Is. 44:23; 49:13. Jer. 51:48.

†Luke 11:40, 50. Chap. 19:2.

¶III

21 Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into

the sea, saying, *Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and †shall be found no more at all.

*Jer. 51:64. †Chap. 12:8; 16:20.

22 *Then the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee; *Is. 24:8. Jer. 7:34; 16:9; 25:10. Ezek. 26:13.

23 *The light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; †and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for **thy merchants were the great men of the earth; ††for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

*Jer. 25:10. †Jer. 7:34; 16:9; 25:10; 38:11. **Is. 28:8. ††2 Kings 9:22. Neh. 3:4.

24 And *in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that †were slain upon the earth.

*Chap. 17:6. †Jer. 51:49.

CHAPTER 19.

1 And after these things *I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; †Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, belong to the Lord our God.

*Chap. 11:15.
†Chap. 4:11; 7:10, 12.

2 For *true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great harlot, who did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and

†hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

*Chap. 15:8; 16:17.
†Deut. 32:43. Chap. 6:10.

3 And again they said, Alleluia! And *her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

*Is. 34:10. Chap. 14:11; 18:9, 18.

4 And *the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshiped God that sat on the throne, saying: †Amen; Alleluia.

*Chap. 4:4, 6, 10; 5:14. †1 Chr. 16:36. Neh. 5:13; 8:6. Chap. 5:14.

5 And a voice came out from the throne, saying: *Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, †both small and great.

*Ps. 134:1; 135:1.
†Chap. 11:18; 20:12.

6 *And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying: Alleluia! for †the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

*Ezek. 1:24; 48:2. Chap. 14:2.
†Chap. 11:15, 17; 12:10; 21:22.

7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for *the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his bride hath made herself ready.

*Matt. 22:2; 25:10. 2 Cor. 11:2.

8 And *to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; †for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

*Ps. 45:18. Ezek. 16:10.
Chap. 8:18. †Ps. 132:9.

9 And he saith unto me, Write: *Blessed are they who are bidden unto the marriage feast of the Lamb.

And he saith unto me, †These are the true sayings of God.

*Matt. 22:2, 3.
Luke 14:15. †Chap. 21:5; 22:6.

10 And *I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, †See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren **that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy.

*Chap. 22:8. †Acts 10:26; 14:14.
15. Chap. 22:9. **1 John 5:10.

¶II

11 *And I saw heaven opened, and behold †a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called **Faithful and True, and ††in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

*Chap. 15:5. †Chap. 6:2.
**Chap. 8:14. †Is. 11:4.

12 *His eyes were as a flame of fire, †and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

*Chap. 1:14; 2:18. †Chap. 6:2.

13 *He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and the name by which he is called is †The Word of God.

*Is. 63:2, 3.
†John 1:1. 1 John 5:7.

14 *And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, †clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

*Chap. 14:20.
†Matt. 28:3. Chap. 4:4; 7:9.

15 And *out of his mouth proceedeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations. †He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and

**he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

*Verse 21. Is. 11:4. †Ps. 2:9. Chap. 2:27; 12:5. **Is. 63:3.

16 And *on his robe and on his thigh he has this name written: †KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

*Verse 12. †Dan. 2:47.
1 Tim. 6:15. Chap. 17:14.

¶III

17 Then I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying *to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven: †Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

*Verse 21. †Ezek. 39:17.

18 *That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

*Ezek. 39:18.

19 *And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat upon the horse, and against his army. *Chap. 16:16; 17:13, 14.

20 *And the beast was taken and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and †them that worshiped his image. **These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

*Chap. 16:13. †Chap. 18:12.
**Dan. 7:11. Chap. 20:10.

21 And the remnant *were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: †and all the fowls were filled with their flesh. *Verse 15. †Verses 17, 18.

CHAPTER 20.

1 Then I saw an angel come down from heaven *having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. *Chap. 1:18; 9:1.

2 He laid hold on *the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.

*2 Pet. 2:4. Jude 6. Chap. 12:9.

3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and *set a seal upon him, †that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

*Dan. 6:17.

†Verse 8. Chap. 16:14, 16.

¶II

4 And I saw *thrones, and they sat upon them, and †authority was given unto them to act as judges. And I saw **the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and ††who had not worshiped the beast, ***neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

*Dan. 7:9, 22, 27. Matt. 19:28. Luke 22:30. †1 Cor. 6:2, 3. **Chap. 6:9. ††Chap. 13:12. ***Chap. 13:15.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such *the second death hath no power, but they shall be †priests of God and of Christ, **and shall reign with him a thousand years.

*Chap. 2:11; 21:8. †Is. 61:6. 1 Pet. 2:9. Chap. 1:6; 5:10. **Verse 4.

¶III

7 And when the thousand years are finished, *Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, *Verse 2.

8 And shall go out *to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, †Gog and Magog, **to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as great as the sand of the sea.

*Verses 2, 10.

†Ezek. 38:2; 39:1. **Chap. 16:14.

9 *And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.

*Is. 8:8. Ezek. 38:9, 16.

10 *And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, †where the beast and the false prophet are, and **shall be tormented there day and night for ever and ever.

*Verse 8.

†Chap. 19:20. **Chap. 14:10, 11.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat upon it, from whose face

*the earth and the heaven fled away; †and there was found no place for them.

*2 Pet. 3:7, 10, 11.
Chap. 21:1. †Dan. 2:35.

12 And I saw the dead, *small and great, stand before God; †and the books were opened, and another **book was opened, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, †according to their works.

*Chap. 19:5. †Dan. 7:10. **Ps. 69:28. Dan. 12:1. †Verse 18. Jer. 17:10; 32:19. Matt. 16:27.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; *and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: †and they were judged every man according to their works.

*Chap. 6:8. †Verse 12.

14 And *death and the prince of hell were cast into the lake of fire. †This is the second death.

*1 Cor. 15:26, 54, 55.
†Verse 8. Chap. 21:8.

15 And whose name was not found written in the book of life *was cast into the lake of fire.

*Chap. 19:20.

CHAPTER 21.

(Epistle for Church-Dedication.
Verses 1-5.)

1 Then *I saw a new heaven and a new earth; †for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

*Is. 65:17; 66:22.
2 Pet. 3:13. †Chap. 20:11.

2 And I John saw *the Holy City, the new Jerusalem, coming down from God

out of heaven, prepared †as a bride adorned for her husband.

*Verse 10. Is. 52:1. Gal. 4:26.
†Is. 54:5; 61:10.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying: Behold, *the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

*Lev. 26:11, 12.
Ezek. 43:7. 2 Cor. 6:16. Chap. 7:15.

4 *And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and †there shall be no more death, **neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away.

*Is. 25:8. Chap. 7:17. †1 Cor. 15:26, 54. Chap. 20:14.
**Is. 35:10.

III

5 And *he that sat upon the throne said: †Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: These words are true and faithful.

*Chap. 4:2, 9; 5:1. Chap. 20:11.
†Is. 43:19. 2 Cor. 5:17.

6 And he said unto me: *It is done. †I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. **I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

*Chap. 16:17. †Chap. 1:8; 22:13.
**Is. 12:3; 55:1. 1 John 4:10.
14; 7:37. Chap. 22:17.

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and *I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

*Zech. 8:8. Heb. 8:10.

8 *But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in †the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

*1 Cor. 6:9, 10. Gal. 5:19, 20, 21.
Eph. 5:5. †Chap. 20:14, 15.

IIII

9 And there came one of *the seven angels who had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee †the Bride, the Lamb's Wife.

*Chap. 15:1, 6, 7.
†Verse 2. Chap. 19:7.

10 And he carried me away *in a trance to a great and high mountain, and shewed me †that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, **having the glory of God.

*Chap. 1:10; 17:3.
†Verse 2. Ezek. 48.
**Verse 23. Chap. 22:5.

11 And her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;

12 And had a wall great and high, and had *twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written on the gates, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel:

*Ezek. 48:31-34.

13 *On the east were three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates.

*Ezek. 48:31-34.

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and *in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

*Matt. 16:18. Gal. 2:9. Eph. 2:20.

IIIV

15 And the angel that talked with me *had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

*Ezek. 40:3.
Zech. 2:1. Chap. 11:1.

16 And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth; and the angel measured the city with the reed twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height thereof are equal.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of an angel.

18 And the building of the wall thereof was of jasper; and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

19 *The foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation a jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald;

*Is. 54:11.

20 The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolyte; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; each of the several gates was of one

pearl; *and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

*Chap. 22:2.

IV

22 *And I saw no temple therein, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. *John 4:23.

23 *And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it; for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

*Verse 11. Ia. 24:

28; 60:19, 20. Chap. 22:5.

24 *And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it; and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. *Ia. 60:3, 5, 11; 66:12.

25 *And the gates of it shall in no wise be shut at all by day; for †there shall be no night there.

*Ia. 60:11. †Ia. 60:20.

Zech. 14:7. Chap. 22:5.

26 *And they shall bring the glory and honor of the nations into it. *Verse 24.

27 And *there shall in no wise enter into it any thing unclean, neither whatsoever worketh abomination or maketh a lie; but those only who are written in the Lamb's †book of life.

*Ia. 35:8; 52:1; 60:21. Chap. 22:14, 15. †Phil 4:3. Chap. 3:5; 13:8.

CHAPTER 22.

1 And the angel showed me *a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

*Ezek. 47:1. Zech. 14:8.

†Ezek. 47:12. Chap. 21:21.

2 In the midst of the street of it, on either side of the river, was there *the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, yielding her fruit every month; the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

*Gen. 2:9. Chap. 2:7.

3 And *there shall be no more curse: †but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him:

*Zech. 14:11. †Ezek. 48:35.

4 And *they shall see his face; and †his name shall be on their foreheads.

*Matt. 5:8. 1 Cor. 13:12. 1

John 3:2. †Chap. 3:12; 14:1.

5 *And there shall be no more night there; they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for †the Lord God giveth them light; **and they shall reign for ever and ever.

*Chap. 21:23, 25. †Ps. 36:9; 84:11.

**Dan. 7:27. Rom. 5:17.

6 And he said unto me, *These words are faithful and true; and the Lord God who inspired the holy prophets †sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

*Chap. 19:9; 21:5. †Chap. 1:1.

7 *Behold, I come quickly: †blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophecy of this book.

*Verses 10, 12, 20. Chap. 3:11.

VII

8 And I John saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, *I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who shewed me these things.

*Chap. 19:10.

9 Then saith he unto me:
*See thou do it not; I am thy
fellowservant, and of thy
brethren the prophets, and of
them which keep the sayings
of this book, worship God.

- *Chap. 19:10.

10 *And he saith unto me:
seal not the sayings of the
prophecy of this book; for
the time is at hand.

*Dan. 8:26; 12:4, 9. Chap. 10:4.

11 *He that is unjust, let
him be unjust still; and he
who is filthy, let him be
filthy still; and he that is
righteous, let him be right-
eous still; and he that is
holy, let him be holy still.

*Ezek. 3:27.

Dan. 12:10. 2 Tim. 3:13.

12 *And, behold, I come
quickly, and †my reward is
with me, **to give every man
according as his work shall
be.

*Verse 7. †Is. 40:10; 62:11.

**Rom. 2:6; 14:12. Chap. 20:12.

13 *I am Alpha and
Omega, the beginning and
the end, the first and the
last.

*Is. 41:4; 44:6; 48:12.

Chap. 1:8, 11; 21:6.

14 *Blessed are they that
wash their robes, that they
may have the right †to
approach the tree of life,
**and may enter through the
gates into the city.

*Dan. 12:12. 1 John 3:24.

†Verse 2. Chap. 2:7. **Chap. 21:27.

15 For *without are †dogs,
and sorcerers, and whore-
mongers, and murderers,
and idolaters, and whoso-
ever loveth and maketh a
lie.

*1 Cor. 6:9, 10. Gal. 5:19, 20, 21.

Col. 3:6. Chap. 9:20, 21; 21:8.

†Phil. 3:2.

¶III

16 *I Jesus have sent
mine angel to testify unto
you these things for the
churches. †I am the root
and the offspring of David,
and **the bright and morn-
ing star. *Chap. 1:1. †Chap. 5:5.

**Num. 24:17. Zech. 6:12.

2 Pet. 1:19. Chap. 2:28.

17 And the Spirit and
*the bride say, Come. And
let him that heareth say,
Come. †And let him that is
athirst come. And whoso-
ever will, let him take the
water of life freely.

*Chap. 21:2, 9.

†Is. 55:1. John 7:37. Chap. 21:6.

18 For I testify unto every
man that heareth the words
of the prophecy of this book.
*If any man shall add unto
these things, God shall add
unto him the plagues which
are written in this book.

*Deut. 4:2; 12:32. Prov. 30:6.

19 And if any man shall
take away from the words
of the book of this prophecy,
*God shall take away his
part out of the book of life,
and out of the Holy City,
and from the things which
are written in this book.

*Ex. 32:33.

Ps. 69:28. Chap. 3:5; 18:8.

¶IV

20 He which testifieth
these things saith, *Surely I
come quickly. Amen. †Even
so, come, Lord Jesus.

*Verse 12. †2 Tim. 4:8.

21 *The grace of our Lord
Jesus Christ be with you all.
Amen.

*Rom. 16:20, 24. 2 Thess 3:18.

Did You Ever Help to Save a Soul?

Did You Ever Give a Bible to a Prisoner? Why Not?

.....

In the year of 1910 a notorious murderer was caught, put in prison, tried in Court, found guilty, and sentenced to be executed by hanging at Knox County Jail, Tennessee.

During the time of his trial I visited him often, prayed with him, and gave him a Bible. He never before had a Bible or ever had read the Bible. But now he was seen reading the Bible often and *in his last hour before the execution.*

Stepping on the gallows he said, "If I had read the Bible some fifteen years ago as I have read it now in prison, I would have been a Christian long ago. I would never have been heard of except in that which is good. Now I have forgiveness of my sins; now I die in peace with God. Now I thank my dear pastor, who brought me a Bible."

Will you not help to spread God's word among the prisoners, in the Hospitals, and among the unfortunate? You may get parts of the New Testament at a very small cost by addressing

Rev. J. R. LAURITZEN,

Prisonworker over 35 years.

During the first 24 months of existence to January 1, 1917, the Lutheran Bible Society of Knoxville, Tenn., has distributed, free of charge, more than 7,500 N. T. Bible books in prisons, hospitals, war camps, and the like. Did you help to carry on this good work? Why not?

Free Distribution Fund

All who love to have the four Gospels of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Acts, Romans, I. and II. of Corinthians, etc., or the book of Psalms, given away free of charge **TO PRISONERS, TO THE SICK, IN HOSPITALS, IN ALMS HOUSES, TO THE STRANGER, OR TO THE HEATHEN** at our Foreign Mission Stations, or to our American soldiers, may send their gifts of money for this Fund, care of Rev. J. R. Lauritzen, Knoxville, Tenn., designating its purpose, and we will distribute the books free of charge, under the auspices of the Knoxville Lutheran Bible Society, or send the books to your address.

**REV. J. R. LAURITZEN,
Knoxville, Tenn., U. S. of N. A.**

Up to January 1, 1917, the Lutheran Bible Society has distributed free of charge over 7,500 copies of Bible Books. 1,000 copies were sent to the English prisoners in Germany, and a very liberal number of books was sent to our American soldiers at the borders of Mexico.

P. S.—Single parts of New Testament Books from Matthew to II Corinthians are sold at the greatly reduced price of 5 cents each and postage. Better bindings at higher prices.

Scriptural Texts for Preachers' Convenience.

BAPTISMAL SERVICES.

Zech. 13:1; John 3:5; Eph. 4:5; 5:26; 1 Peter 3:21; 1 John 4:13; 1 Cor. 12:13; Rom. 8:17; Matt. 10:22; 18:3; 18:6; John 16:12; Rom. 2:28; 2:29; 4:31; 5:15; 1 Cor. 15:40; Gal. 4:4, 5; 1 Sam. 1:28; 2 Kings 5:10-13.

MARRIAGE SERMONS.

Gen. 2:24; Prov. 14:11; Ps. 33:22; 34:10; 36:11; 85:8; 91:1, 2; 121:3; Eph. 5:2; 1 Cor. 13:7.

CONFESSIONAL SERVICES.

Matt. 1:21; 5:6; 6:12; 6:24; 9:17; 12:20; 12:33; Mark 2:7; 7:21, 22; Luke 6:46; 7:47; 16:10; 17:10; John 1:11; Acts 3:19; Rom. 2:1; 2:13; 3:20; 7:14; 7:18; 1 Cor. 4:4; 10:21; 16:22; 2 Cor. 6:14-18; Gal. 5:9; 6:3; 6:15; Eph. 4:22-24; Phil. 2:12; 1 Tim. 1:5; 2 Tim. 2:19; 1 Peter 2:25; 5:5; 1 John 2:1, 2; 3:8; 4:20, 21; Heb. 10:31; Jas. 2:10; 2:14; 4:8.

MISSION SERVICES.

1 Kings 8:43; Ps. 20:8-12; 22:27-32; 46:9-12; 72; 100; 102:14-17; 117; Isa. 2:2-4; 11:10; 25:7-9; 29:18, 19; 35:1, 2; 35:8; 54:2, 3; 60:1-7; 60:8, 9; Zeph. 3:9; Hag. 1:8; 2:8; Zech. 6:12, 13; 14:7; Matt. 4:16; 9:37, 38; Mark 1:17; 4:26-29; Luke 5:5; 12:49; 14:22, 23; John 4:35-38; 12:21; Acts 17:23; Rom. 1:4; 1 Cor. 1:18; 16:9; 2 Cor. 5:14; Col. 1:27-29; 3:11; Rev. 7:9, 10; 14:6, 7; Neh. 4:19-21; 4:15-18; Ps. 46:1-5; 48:8-10, 14; 69:13-17; 97:8-10; 119:111-114; 119:154-156; 147:12-15; Isa. 2:1-3; 9:2, 3; 40:3-5; 43:1-6; Hosea 2:19-23; Micah 5:1, 2; Zech. 14:9; Matt. 6:9, 10; 10:24-28; 12:18-21; 12:42-44; Luke 15:1-7; John 3:16; 4:35, 36; 6:66-69; 8:12; Acts 10:32-36; 10:44-48; 11:15-18; 14:27, 28; Rom. 3:28, 29; Eph. 4:11-13; Phil. 1:15-18; Titus 3:3-7; 1 Peter 2:9, 10; Rev. 15:1-4.

BURIAL SERVICES FOR CHILDREN AND YOUNG PEOPLE.

Luke 7:13; 2 Sam. 12, 13; Matt. 18:14; Mark 5:30; Acts 2:39; Gal. 3:27; Eph. 6:4; 2 Tim. 4:18; Gen. 43:14; Isa. 40:11; John 14:28; Eph. 3:14, 15; Heb. 11:17-19; Job 1:21; Ps. 26:6; 27:10; 127:3; Gen. 37:35; 42:36; Josh. 8:18; 1 Sam. 1:28; Jer. 31:15, 16; Matt. 10:29-31; 10:37; 18:2, 3; 18:10, 11; 20:15; 21:16; Mark 10:14; 10:15; Luke 2:41-49; John 10:27, 28; 13:7; 1 Cor. 1:9; Phil. 15.

BURIAL SERVICES FOR ADULTS.

Gen. 3:19; Ps. 90:5; 90:10; 39:5; 119:76; 73:23-26; Jer. 9:21; 29:11; Heb. 9:27; 1 Peter 5:6; Hosea 6:1; Isa. 55:8, 9; 1 Sam. 3:8; 2 Sam. 15:26; Matt. 13:43; 25:21; Luke 10:20; 12:32; 12:37; 14:22; John 10:27-30; 11:11; 14:1-4; Rom. 8:11; 8:22, 23; 8:31-34; 8:38, 39; 12:15; Phil. 3:20-21; 2 Cor. 5:6-8; Eph. 3:20-21; 2 Tim. 2:11-13.

Gospel and Epistle Lessons

THE OLD CHURCH YEAR

Also a Selection of Psalms for Each Sunday

Gospel Lesson.		Epistle Lesson.	Psalms for Each Sunday.
	1ST SUNDAY IN ADVENT.	Romans 13:11-14.	2, 8, 24, 102, 118.
Matthew 21:1-9.	2ND SUNDAY IN ADVENT.	Romans 15:4-13.	29, 50, 70, 93, 98.
Luke 21:25-36.	3RD SUNDAY IN ADVENT.	1 Corinthians 4:1-5.	24, 98, 132.
Matthew 11:2-10.	4TH SUNDAY IN ADVENT.	Philippians 4:4-7.	24, 45, 93, 110.
John 1:19-28.	CHRISTMAS DAY.	Titus 2:11-14.	45, 92, 148.
Luke 2:1-14.	SECOND CHRISTMAS DAY.	Titus 3:4-7.	42, 98, 121.
Luke 2:15-20.	SUNDAY AFTER CHRISTMAS.	Galatians 4:1-7.	117, 135.
Luke 2:33-40.	NEW YEAR'S DAY.	Galatians 3:23-29.	30, 34, 40, 66, 148.
Luke 2:21.	SUNDAY AFTER NEW YEAR'S.	1 Peter 4:12-19. or Titus 3:4-8.	62, 64. 91.
Matthew 2:13-23 or Matthew 3:13-17.	EPIPHANY DAY.	Isaiah 60:1-6.	5, 8, 72.
Matthew 2:1-12.	1ST SUNDAY AFTER EPIPHANY.	Romans 12:1-6.	121, 122, 127.
Luke 2:41-52.	2ND SUNDAY AFTER EPIPHANY.	Romans 12:6-16.	104, 127, 128.
John 2:1-11.	3RD SUNDAY AFTER EPIPHANY.	Romans 12:17-21.	13, 33, 127.
Matthew 8:1-13.	4TH SUNDAY AFTER EPIPHANY.	Romans 13:8-10.	46, 65, 87.
Matthew 8:23-27.	5TH SUNDAY AFTER EPIPHANY.	Colossians 3:12-17.	17, 91, 129.
Matthew 13:24-30.	6TH SUNDAY AFTER EPIPHANY.	2 Peter 1:16-21.	15.
Matthew 17:1-9.	SEPTUAGESIMA SUNDAY.	1 Corinthians 9:24-40:5.	38.
Matthew 20:1-16.	SEXAGESIMA SUNDAY.	2 Corinthians 11:19-12:9.	1.
Luke 8:4-15.	QUINQUAGESIMA SUNDAY.	1 Corinthians 13:1-13.	31.
Luke 18:31-43.	ASH WEDNESDAY.	Joel 2:12-19.	22.
Matthew 6:16-21			

GOSPEL AND EPISTLE LESSONS—Continued.

Gospel Lesson.	Epistle Lesson.	Psalms for Each Sunday.
1ST SUNDAY IN LENT, INVOCANT.	2 Corinthians 6:1-10.	91.
Matthew 4:1-11.		
2ND SUNDAY IN LENT, REMINISCERE.	1 Thessalonians 4:1-7.	25.
Matthew 15:21-28.		
3RD SUNDAY IN LENT, OLEUM.	Ephesians 5:1-9.	25.
Luke 11:14-23.		
4TH SUNDAY IN LENT, LAETARE.	Galatians 4:21-31.	84.
John 6:1-15.	or Romans 8:28-30.	7.
or Matthew 11:25-30.		
5TH SUNDAY IN LENT, INDICA.	Hebrews 9:11-15.	43.
John 8:46-59.		
6TH SUNDAY IN LENT, PALMARUM.	Philippians 2:5-11.	92.
Matthew 21:1-9.		
THURSDAY IN HOLY WEEK.	1 Corinthians 11:23-32.	23, 111, 114.
John 13:1-15.		
GOOD FRIDAY.	Isaiah 52:13-53:12.	22, 29, 40, 60.
John 18:1-19:42.		
EASTER DAY.	1 Corinthians 5:6-8.	16, 41, 110.
Mark 16:1-8.		
DAY AFTER EASTER.	Acts 10:31-41.	1, 62, 19.
Luke 24:13-35.		
1ST SUNDAY AFTER EASTER, QUASIMO.	1 John 5:4-12.	29, 116, 13.
John 20:19-31.		
2ND SUNDAY AFTER EASTER, MISERICORDIAS.	1 Peter 2:21-25.	23, 100.
John 10:11-16.		
3RD SUNDAY AFTER EASTER, JUBILATE.	1 Peter 2:11-20.	12, 45, 56, 66, 126.
John 16:16-23.		
4TH SUNDAY AFTER EASTER, CANTATE.	James 1:16-21.	29, 41, 98, 140.
John 16:5-15.		
5TH SUNDAY AFTER EASTER, ROGATE.	James 1:22-27.	1, 50, 54, 104, 141.
John 16:23-30.		
ASCENSION DAY.	Acts 1:1-11.	33, 47, 48.
Mark 16:14-20.		
SUNDAY AFTER ASCENSION, EXAUDI.	1 Peter 4:7-11.	27, 36, 44, 83, 110.
John 15:26-16:4.		
DAY OF PENTECOST.	Acts 2:1-13.	33, 46, 78, 143.
John 14:23-31.		
DAY AFTER PENTECOST.	Acts 10:42-48.	30, 103.
John 3:16-21.		
TRINITY SUNDAY.	Romans 11:33-36.	2, 27, 33, 110.
John 3:1-15.		
1ST SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 John 4:16-21.	53, 62.
Luke 16:19-31.		
2ND SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 John 3:13-18.	19, 72, 78, 144.
Luke 14:16-24.		
3RD SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Peter 5:6-11.	25, 32, 51, 95.
Luke 15:1-10.		
4TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Romans 8:18-23.	15, 112.
Luke 6:36-42.		
5TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Peter 3:8-15.	8, 117, 127, 128, 130.
John 5:1-11.		
6TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Romans 6:3-11.	15, 32, 133.
Matthew 5:20-26.		
7TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Romans 6:19-23.	107, 145.
Mark 8:1-9.		
8TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Romans 8:12-17.	5, 12, 81.
Matthew 7:15-23.		
9TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Corinthians 10:6-13.	14, 50, 112.
Luke 16:1-9.		
10TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Corinthians 12:1-11.	3, 21, 59, 96, 137.
Luke 19:41-48.		
11TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Corinthians 15:1-10.	32, 51, 130.
Luke 18:9-14.		

GOSPEL AND EPISTLE LESSONS—Concluded.

Gospel Lesson.		Epistle Lesson.	Psalm for Each Sunday.
Mark 7:31-37.	12TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	2 Corinthians 3:4-11.	34, 90, 115, 117.
Luke 10:23-37.	13TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Galatians 3:15-22.	70, 143.
Luke 17:11-19.	14TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Galatians 5:16-24.	50, 117, 136.
Matthew 6:24-34.	15TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Galatians 5:6-10.	23, 49, 65.
Luke 7:11-17.	16TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Ephesians 3:13-21.	90, 116.
Luke 14:1-11.	17TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Ephesians 4:1-6.	50, 113.
Matthew 22:34-46.	18TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Corinthians 1:4-9.	34, 110.
Matthew 9:1-8.	19TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Ephesians 4:22-28.	7, 32, 39, 103.
Matthew 22:1-14.	20TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Ephesians 5:15-21.	1, 45, 99.
John 4:46-54.	21ST SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Ephesians 6:10-17.	27, 39, 42, 48, 86.
Matthew 18:23-35.	22ND SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Philippians 1:3-11.	6, 32, 133.
Matthew 22:15-22.	23RD SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Philippians 3:17-21.	7, 64, 82, 85.
Matthew 9:18-26.	24TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	Colossians 1:9-14.	25, 28, 38, 90.
Matthew 24:15-28.	25TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Thessalonians 4:13-18.	10, 70, 74.
Matthew 26:31-46.	26TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	2 Peter 3:3-14.	41, 112, 126.
Matthew 25:1-13.	27TH SUNDAY AFTER TRINITY.	1 Thessalonians 5:1-11.	41, 91.
Luke 12:15-21; 33, 34.	HARVEST FESTIVAL.	Acts 14:11-18.	65, 95, 104.
Matthew 11:12-15.	REFORMATION FESTIVAL.	2 Thessalonians 2:3-12.	46, 126.
Matthew 2:1-12.	MISSION FESTIVAL.	Isaiah 60:1-6.	19, 72, 96.
Psalms 143.	DAY OF HUMILIATION.	Psalms 130.	25, 32, 38.
Luke 1:26-38.	THE ANNUNCIATION.	Isaiah 7:10-16.	91, 125, 135.
Luke 1:39-56.	THE VISITATION.	Isaiah 9:1-5.	12.
Luke 2:22-32.	THE PRESENTATION.	Malachi 3:1-4.	12, 66.
Luke 1:57-80.	ST. JOHN THE BAPTIST.	Isaiah 11:1-5.	33, 45, 50.
Matthew 18:27-30.	THE CONVERSION OF SAUL.	Acts 9:1-22.	84.
Matthew 23:34-39.	ST. STEPHEN, THE MARTYR'S DAY.	Acts 6:8—7:60.	87, 88.
Matthew 18:1-11.	ST. MICHAEL'S DAY.	Revelation 12:7-12.	91.

THE EISENACH GOSPEL AND EPISTLE SELECTIONS.

1. Advent.....	Ep. Heb. 10: 19-25. Gp. Luke 1: 68-79.	4. Lent.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 7: 4-10. (Latare.) Gp. John 8: 47-57.
2. Advent.....	Ep. 2 Pet. 1: 3-11. Gp. Luke 17: 20-30.	5. Lent.....	Ep. 1 Pet. 1: 17-25. (Judica.) Gp. John 13: 31-35.
3. Advent.....	Ep. 2 Tim. 4: 5-8. Gp. Matt. 3: 1-11.	Palm Sunday.....	Ep. Heb. 12: 1-6. Gp. John 12: 1-8.
4. Advent.....	Ep. 1 John 1: 1-4. Gp. John 1: 15-18.	Maunday Thursday.....	Ep. 1 Cor. 10: 16-17. Gp. Luke 22: 14-20.
Christmas.....	Ep. 1 John 3: 1-5. Gp. Matt. 1: 18-25.	Good Friday.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 5: 14-21. Gp. Luke 23: 39-46.
2d Christmas Day.....	Ep. Heb. 1: 1-6. Gp. John 1: 1-14.	Easter.....	Ep. 1 Cor. 15: 12-20. Gp. Matt. 28: 1-10.
S. a. Christmas.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 5: 1-9. Gp. Luke 2: 25-32. 2d Text, John 12: 35-41.	Easter Monday.....	Ep. 1 Cor. 15: 54-58. Gp. John 20: 11-18.
New Year.....	Ep. Rom. 8: 24-32. Gp. Luke 4: 16-21.	1. a. Easter.....	Ep. 1 Pet. 1: 3-9. (Quarimodogeniti.) Gp. John 21: 15-19.
S. a. New Year.....	Ep. James 4: 13-17. Gp. Matt. 16: 1-4.	2. a. Easter.....	Ep. Eph. 2: 4-10. (Misericordias Domini.) Gp. John 14: 1-6.
Epiphany.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 4: 3-8. Gp. Matt. 3: 13-17.	3. a. Easter.....	Ep. 1 John 4: 9-14. (Jubilate.) Gp. John 12: 20-26.
1. a. Epiphany.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 6: 14-7: 1. Gp. John 1: 35-42.	4. a. Easter.....	Ep. 2 Tim. 2: 8-13. (Cantate.) Gp. John 6: 60-69.
2. a. Epiphany.....	Ep. 1 Cor. 2: 6-16. Gp. John 1: 43-51.	5. a. Easter.....	Ep. 1 Tim. 2: 1-6. (Rogate.) Gp. Luke 11: 5-13.
3. a. Epiphany.....	Ep. Rom. 1: 13-20. Gp. John 4: 5-14.	Ascension.....	Ep. Col. 3: 1-4. Gp. Luke 24: 50-53.
4. a. Epiphany.....	Ep. Rom. 7: 7-16. Gp. John 4: 31-42.	S. a. Ascension.....	Ep. Eph. 1: 15-23. (Exaudi.) Gp. John 7: 33-39.
5. a. Epiphany.....	Ep. Rom. 8: 1-9. Gp. Matt. 7: 24-29.	Pentecost.....	Ep. Eph. 2: 19-22. Gp. John 14: 15-21.
6. a. Epiphany.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 3: 12-18. Gp. John 5: 39-47.	Trinity Sunday.....	Ep. Eph. 1: 3-14. Gp. Matt. 28: 16-20.
Septuagesima.....	Ep. Phil. 1: 27-3: 4. Gp. Luke 10: 38-42.	1. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 4: 32-35. Gp. Matt. 13: 31-35.
Sexagesima.....	Ep. Phil. 1: 12-21. Gp. John 11: 20-27.	2. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Rom. 10: 1-15. Gp. Matt. 9: 9-13.
Quinquagesima.....	Ep. 1 Cor. 1: 21-31. Gp. Mark 10: 35-45.	3. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 3: 1-16. Gp. Luke 15: 11-32.
1. Lent.....	Ep. Heb. 4: 15-16. (Invocavit.) Gp. Matt. 16: 21-23.	4. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 4: 1-12. Gp. Matt. 5: 13-16.
2. Lent.....	Ep. 1 John 2: 12-17. (Reminisce.) Gp. Luke 10: 17-20.	5. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 5: 34-42. Gp. Luke 9: 18-26.
3. Lent.....	Ep. 1 Pet. 1: 13-16. (Oculi.) Gp. Luke 9: 51-56.	6. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 8: 26-38. Gp. Matt. 21: 28-32.

THE EISENACH GOSPEL AND EPISTLE SELECTIONS.—Concluded.

7. a. Trinity.....	Ep. 1 Tim. 6: 6-12. Gp. Mark 4: 28-29.	19. a. Trinity.....	Ep. James 5: 13-20. Gp. John 9: 24-41.
8. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 16: 16-32. Gp. Matt. 12: 46-50.	20. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Rom. 14: 1-9. Gp. John 15: 1-8.
9. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 17: 16-34. Gp. Matt. 13: 44-46.	21. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Eph. 6: 1-9. Gp. Mark 10: 13-16.
10. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 20: 17-38. Gp. Matt. 23: 34-39.	22. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Heb. 13: 1-9. Gp. Luke 9: 57-62.
11. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Rom. 8: 33-39. Gp. Luke 7: 36-50.	23. a. Trinity.....	Ep. 1 Tim. 4: 4-11. Gp. Matt. 10: 24-33.
12. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Acts 10: 9-15. Gp. John 8: 31-36.	24. a. Trinity.....	Ep. 1 Thes. 5: 14-24. Gp. John 10: 23-30.
13. a. Trinity.....	Ep. 1 Pet. 2: 1-10. Gp. Mark 12: 41-44.	25. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Heb. 10: 32-39. Gp. John 5: 19-29.
14. a. Trinity.....	Ep. 1 Tim. 1: 12-17. Gp. John 5: 1-14.	26. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Rev. 2: 8-11. Gp. Luke 19: 11-27.
15. a. Trinity.....	Ep. 2 Thess. 3: 6-13. Gp. John 11: 1-11.	27. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Rev. 7: 9-17. Gp. Luke 12: 35-43.
16. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Heb. 12: 18-24. Gp. Matt. 11: 23-30.	Reformation.....	Ep. 1 Cor. 3: 11-23. Gp. John 2: 12-17.
17. a. Trinity.....	Ep. Heb. 4: 9-13. Gp. Matt. 12: 1-8.	Harvest Home.....	Ep. 2 Cor. 9: 6-11. Gp. John 6: 24-29.
18. a. Trinity.....	Ep. James 2: 10-17. Gp. Mark 10: 17-27.		

LAURITZEN'S STANDARD EDITION OF SACRED MUSIC

(German and English Texts.)

- No. 563. *I Love the Luth'ran Church.* English words only. Arranged by Lauritzen. 10 cents for 15 copies; 50 cents for 100 copies. Six stanzas, each beginning with the refrain: "I Love the Luth'ran Church." Well adapted for congregational singing at the close of the *Reformation Jubilee Service*.
- No. 562. *I Love the Luth'ran Church.* Same as above with music. 2 cents; 12 copies for 20 cents.
- No. 561. *Reformation Jubilee Chorus.* Lauritzen. 15 cents; 12 copies for \$1.50. This grand chorus is to be sung by the choir and the congregation. The congregation takes part in it and sings at intervals the four stanzas of Luther's Battle Hymn, in German or in English. Time, 12 to 15 minutes.
- No. 560. *The Song of the Nightingale of Wittenberg.* Das Lied der Wittenberger Nachtigall. Lauritzen. Specially written for Reformation Services. Pleasing solos and duets intermingle with the full chorus. Very popular. 15 cents; 12 copies for \$1.50.
- No. 550. *Lutheran War Hymn.* Words by Lauritzen. 1 cent. 15 copies for 10 cents.
- No. 107. *Herr Gott, dich loben wir.* Lord God, We Give Thee Praise. Lauritzen. 6 cents; 12 copies 60 cents.

P. S.—The above Choruses may be sung at any Reformation or Mission Festival.

(REV.) J. R. LAURITZEN,
Knoxville, Tenn.

Index of the Life of Christ

In chronological order, omitting duplication of what is told in more than one Gospel. Arranged by Pastor J. R. Lauritzen.

I. PERIOD OF PREPARATION.

John 1:1-18.	Deity and hu-	Matt. 2:1-23.	The wise man.
Luke 1:1-4.	manity.	Luke 2:41-52.	Presentation.
Matt. 1:1-17.	Genealogies.	Luke 3:1-18.	John the Baptist
Luke 1:5-80.	About the birth	Matt. 3:4-6.	began to preach.
Matt. 1:18-25.	of Christ.	Matt. 3:13 to 4:11.	Baptism
Luke 2:1-40.	Birth of Christ.		and temptation.

II. FIRST YEAR OF PUBLIC MINISTRY.

John 1:19 to 2:12.	First events	Luke 5:1-9.	Draught of fishes.
	in His ministry.	Mark 1:17-39.	Miracles.
John 2:13 to 3:21.	First public	Matt. 5:1 to 7:29.	Sermon on the
	appearance in Jerusalem.		mount.
John 3:22 to 4:54.	In Judea	Mark 5:22-43.	Miracles.
Luke 4:16-30.	at Nazareth.	Matt. 9:27-34.	Attacked by
Matt. 4:13-16.	In Galilee.		Pharisees.

III. SECOND YEAR OF PUBLIC MINISTRY.

John 5:1-7.	His second Passover	Mark 13:33-50.	Parables
Matt. 12:1-21.	Second Galilean	Mark 4:35.	The great calm.
Mark 3:7-19.	ministry begins.		sent forth.
Luke 8:20 to 7:9.	Teachings.	Mark 6:1-6.	Fourth preaching
Luke 7:11-28.	Second preach-		tour in Galilee
Matt. 11:12-15.	ing tour in	Matt. 9:35 to 11:1.	The Twelve
Luke 7:29-35.	Galilee.		sent forth.
Matt. 11:20-30.	"Come unto Me."	Mark 6:12-22.	Death of John.
Luke 7:36 to 8:3.	The woman.	Matt. 14:22-33.	Walking on the
Mark 3:19-21.	Third preaching		water.
	tour in Galilee.	John 6:22 to 7:1.	Sermon on
Matt. 12:22 to 13:33.	Parables.		"The Bread of Life."

IV. THIRD YEAR OF PUBLIC MINISTRY.

Mark 7:1 to 8:10.	Third period	Luke 9:51-62.	Journey to Je-
Matt. 16:1-2.	of ministry in	John 7:11 to 8:59.	rusalem.
Mark 8:22-26.	Galilee and the	Luke 10:1 to 13:9.	The Seventy
	north.	John 9:1.	Healing the blind.
Matt. 16:13-28.	Peter's confession	Luke 13:10-35.	Teachings.
	and rebuke.	John 11:1-57.	Death and resur-
Mark 9:1-27.	Transfiguration.		rection of Lazarus.
Matt. 17:14-27.	The lunatic.	Luke 17:11-37.	Warnings.
Mark 9:33-50.	Teachings.	Matt. 19:1-30.	Teachings.
Matt. 18:15-35.	Church disciplin.	Mark 10:46-52.	Bartimaeus
John 7:2-10.	Feast of taberna-	Luke 19:1-28.	Zacharias
	cles at hand.		

LIFE OF CHRIST.—Continued.

V. PASSION WEEK.

John 11:35 to 12:11.	Fourth	Mark 14:53-64.	Peter's denial.
Luke 19:29-44.	Passover nigh at hand.	Matt. 27:3-10.	Judas, remorse.
John 12:10-19.	Triumphal entry.	John 18:28-38.	Brought before
Matt. 21:10-17.	Lazarus.	Mark 15:3-5.	Pilate.
John 12:20-50.	Cleaning the	Luke 23:4-18.	Sent to Herod.
Mark 11:11-33.	temple.	Mark 15:8-10.	Jews ask for
Matt. 21:28 to 22:29.	The fig tree.	Matt. 27:19.	Barabbas.
Mark 12:26-34.	Two sons.	Luke 23:13-18.	Innocent.
Matt. 22:41 to 23:30.	Sin against the	Matt. 27:20-80.	Crowned with
Mark 12:41-44.	Holy Ghost.	John 19:4-15.	thorns.
Matt. 24:1-9.	Christ.	Mark 15:20, 21.	Led out to
Luke 21:12-19.	The unclean spirit.	Luke 23:27-32.	crucifixion.
Matt. 24:11-51.	Destruction of	Matt. 27:33-35.	
Mark 13:33-37.	Jerusalem and	John 19:19-25.	Crucifixion.
Mark 14:3-9.	Signs of His	Matt. 27:39-43.	Crucifixion.
Matt. 25:26-29.	coming to judge	Luke 23:39-43.	The first fruit
	ment foretold.		of salvation.
	The Lord's Sup-	John 19:25-27.	"Woman behold
	per.	Matt. 27:45-49.	thy son!"
Luke 22:2-20.	The Lord's supper.	John 19:28-30.	Darkness over
John 13:1-38.	Foot washing.	Matt. 27:51-56.	all the land.
Matt. 26:26-29.	Gethsemane.		"It is finished!"
John 14:1 to 17:26.	Farewell		Veil of temple
Matt. 26:30-32.	discourses.		rent, and earthquake.
Matt. 26:36-46.	In Gethsemane.	John 19:31-37.	Enter Jerusalem.
John 18:2-9.	Betrayal.	Mark 15:42-45.	His body given
Matt. 26:48-51.	The arrest.		Joseph.
Matt. 26:52-56.	Peter's sword.	John 19:39-42.	Laid in the
John 18:12-27.	Brought before	Luke 23:55, 56.	sepulchre.
	Annas and Caiaphas.	Matt. 27:62-66.	The sepulchre
Mark 14:53-64.	Unjust condemned.		sealed.
Luke 22:63-71.	Brought before	John 18:25-25.	
	the council.		

VI. RESURRECTION AND APPEARANCES OF JESUS.

Master. The woman at the empty tomb, Mark 16:1-8.
 To Mary Magdalene, Mark 16:9. John 20:18.
 To the women, Matt. 28:9:11-15.
 First appearances, John 20:3-18.
 Further appearances, Luke 24:13-49 (Emmans.)
 To the Apostles, John 20:19-24.
 To Thomas and the other apostles, John 20:26 &c.
 At the Sea of Tiberias, John 21:1, &c.
 At Galilee, Matt. 28:10, 17.
 To about five hundred brethren, 1 Cor. 15:6.
 To James the Apostle, 1 Cor. 15:7.
 To all the Apostles, Luke 24:50, Acts 1:9, 1 Cor. 15:8.
 To St. Paul, the Apostle, 1 Cor. 15:8.

VII. THE ASCENSION OF JESUS.

The great commission, Matt. 28:19, 20. Mark 16:15-18.
 The ascension, Mark 16:19. Luke 24:50, 51. Acts 1:9-11.

LIFE OF CHRIST.—Continued.

VIII. THE MIRACLES OF CHRIST.

- A devil cast out, and dumb man cured. Matt. 9:32-33.
All manner of diseases healed. Matt. 4:23, 24; Mark 1:34; Luke 6:17-19.
Blind man healed. Mark 8:22-26.
Blind man healed on the Sabbath. John 9:1-7.
Blind Bartimaeus and one other healed. Matt. 20:29-34; Mark 10:46-52; Luke 18:35-43.
Centurion's servant healed. Matt. 8:5-13; Luke 7:1-10.
Cures before John's messengers. Matt. 11:4, 5; Luke 7:21.
Devil cast out. Matt. 17:14-18; Mark 9:14-27; Luke 9:37-42.
Devil cast out. Matt. 12:22, 23; Luke 11:14, 15.
Demoniac healed. Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37.
Dropsy cured. Luke 14:2-4.
Deaf and dumb man healed. Mark 7:32-35.
Establishment and preservation of His Church. Matt. 16:16-18. On this rock I will build my church.
First draught of fishes. Matt. 4:18-22; Mark 1:16-20; Luke 5:1-11.
Feeding of the five thousand. Matt. 14:15-21; Mark 6:34-44; Luke 9:12-17; John 6:1-13.
Fig tree blighted. Matt. 21:17-20; Mark 11:12-14, 20.
Graves opened and dead raised. Matt. 27:51-53.
Healing of the multitudes. Matt. 19:1, 2.
His ascension. Luke 24:50, 51.
His appearance, the doors being shut. Luke 24:36-40; John 20:19.
Impotent man healed. John 5:5-9.
Issue of blood healed. Matt. 9:20-22; Mark 5:25-34; Luke 8:43-48.
Jairus' daughter raised. Matt. 9:23-26; Mark 5:35-42; Luke 8:49-56.
Jesus walks upon the water. Matt. 14:24-27; Mark 6:45-51; John 6:19.
Lepers healed. Matt. 8:1-4; Mark 1:40-45; Luke 6:12-16.
Many sick persons healed. Matt. 14:14.
Many sick healed. Matt. 15:29-31.
Malchus' ear healed. Luke 22:50, 51.
Nobelman's son healed. John 4:46-54.
Peter's wife mother healed. Matt. 8:14-16; Mark 1:29-31; Luke 4:38-39.
Paralytic healed. Matt. 9:2-8; Mark 2:1-12; Luke 5:17-26.
Peter walking on the sea. Matt. 14:29.
Raising the widow's son. Luke 7:11-17.
Raising of Lazarus. John 11:17-44.
Resurrection of Jesus. Luke 24:1-6.
Syrophenician woman's daughter healed. Matt. 15:21-28; Mark 7:24-30.
Second draught of fishes. John 21:3-7.
Tempest stilled. Matt. 8:23-27; Mark 4:35-41; Luke 8:22-25.
Two demoniacs healed. Matt. 8:27-32; Mark 5:1-15; Luke 8:26-35.
Two blind men healed. Matt. 9:27-31.
The feeding of four thousand. Matt. 15:32-39; Mark 8:1-9.
Tribute money provided. Matt. 17:24-27.
Ten lepers cleansed. Luke 17:11-19.
Vessel's sudden arrival at the shore. John 6:21.
Veil of the temple rent. Mark 15:38; Luke 23:45.
Water turned into wine. John 2:6-12.
Withered hand restored. Matt. 12:9-14; Mark 3:1-6; Luke 6:6-11.
Woman healed of infirmity. Luke 13:10-13.

IX. THE PARABLES OF CHRIST.

Barren fig tree. Luke 13:6-9.
 Beam and mote. Luke 6:41, 42.
 Blind leading the blind. Luke 6:39.
 Builder of a tower. Luke 14:28-30, 33.
 Children in the market-place. Matt. 11:16-19.
 Children of bride-chamber. Matt. 9:15; Mark 2:18, 19.
 Children's bread. Mark 7:27-29.
 Cloud and wind. Luke 12:54-57.
 Corn of wheat. John 12:24.
 Creditor and debtors. Luke 7:41-47.
 Deer, and the hireling. John 10:7-13.
 Faithful and evil servants. Matt. 24:45-51.
 Fig-tree leafing. Matt. 24:32-34.
 Good Samaritan. Luke 10:30-37.
 Good Shepherd. John 10:1-6.
 Great Supper. Luke 14:15-24.
 House divided against itself. Mark 3:25.
 Importunate friend. Luke 11:5-9.
 Importunate widow. Luke 18:1-8.
 Kingdom divided against itself. Mark 3:24.
 King going to war. Luke 14:31-33.
 King's marriage feast. Matt. 22:2-14.
 Laborers hired. Matt. 20:1-16.
 Leaven. Matt. 13:33; Luke 13:20, 21.
 Lighted candle. Mark 4:21; Luke 11:33-36.
 Lost piece of silver. Luke 15:8-10.
 Lost sheep. Luke 15:3-7; Matt. 18:12-14.
 Man of the house watching. Matt. 24:43.
 Man taking a far journey. Mark 13:34-37.
 Meats defiling not. Matt. 15:10-15.
 Men hidden to a feast. Luke 14:7-11.
 Mustard-seed. Matt. 13:31, 32; Luke 13:19.
 Net cast into the sea. Matt. 13:47-50.
 New cloth and old garment. Matt. 9:16.
 New wine and old wine skins. Matt. 9:17.
 Pearl of great price. Matt. 13:45, 46.
 Pharisee and publican. Luke 18:9-14.
 Pounds. Luke 19:12-27.
 Prodigal son. Luke 15:11-32.
 Rich fool. Luke 12:16-21.
 Rich man and Lazarus. Luke 16:19-31.
 Savor of salt. Luke 14:34, 35.
 Seed growing secretly. Mark 4:26-29.
 Sheep fallen in a pit. Matt. 12:11, 12.
 Sower. Matt. 13:3-23; Luke 8:5-16.
 Strong man armed. Mark 3:27; Luke 11:21.
 Talents. Matt. 25:14-30.
 Tares. Matt. 13:24-30, 36-43.
 Ten virgins. Matt. 25:1-13.
 Treasure hid in a field. Matt. 13:44.
 Tree and its fruit. Luke 6:43-45. Two sons. Matt. 21:28-32.
 Unclean spirit. Matt. 12:43. Unjust steward. Luke 16:1-8.
 Unmerciful servant. Matt. 18:23-35.
 Unprofitable servants. Luke 17:7-10.
 Vine and branches. John 15:1-5.
 Watching and waiting servants. Luke 12:35-40.
 Wicked husbandmen. Matt. 21:33-45.
 Wind blowing where it lists. John 8:8.
 Wise and foolish builders. Matt. 7:24-27.
 Wise householder. Matt. 13:51, 52.
 Woman in travail. John 16:21. Wise steward. Luke 12:41-48.

LIFE OF CHRIST.—Continued.

X. PROMINENT NAMES AND TITLES FOUND IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

Adam, last, 1 Cor. 15:45.
Advocate, 1 John, 2:1.
Almighty, Rev. 1:8.
Alpha and Omega, Rev. 1:8.
Angel of the Lord, Gen. 16:7-11.
Anointed, Psalm 2:2.
Author of Faith, Heb. 12:2.

Beginning and End, Rev. 22:13.
Beginning of Creation of God, Rev. 3:14.
Beloved Son, Matt. 3:17; Luke 3:22.
Blessed and only Potentate, 1 Tim. 6:15.
Bread of Life, John 6:35.
Bright and Morning Star, Rev. 22:16.
Brightness of Father's Glory, Heb. 1:3.

Captain of Salvation, Heb. 2:10.
Chief Corner stone, 1 Peter 2:6.
Chiefest among Ten Thousand, Song of Sol. 6:10.
Chosen of God, 1 Peter 2:4.
Christ, John 6:69.
Christ, a King, Luke 23:2.
Christ Jesus, Heb. 3:1.
Christ Jesus our Lord, 1 Tim. 1:12.
Christ, the Chosen of God, Luke 23:35.
Christ the Lord, Luke 2:11.
Christ, the Son of God, Acts 9:20.
Christ, Son of the Blessed, Mark 14:61.
Consolation of Israel, Luke 2:25.
Corner Stone, Isa. 28:16.
Counsellor, Isa. 9:6.
Covenant, Isa. 42:6.

Day Spring, Luke 1:78.
Deliverer, Rom. 11:26.
Door of the Sheep, John 10:7.

Emmanuel, Matt. 1:23.
Everlasting Father, Isa. 9:6.

Faithful and True, Rev. 19:11.
Faithful Witness, Rev. 1:5.
Faithful and True Witness, Rev. 3:14.
Finisher of Faith, Heb. 12:2.
First and Last, Rev. 1:17; 22:13.
First Begotten of the dead, Rev. 1:5.
First-born among brethren, Rom. 8:29.

First-born from the dead, Col. 1:18.
Fountain opened, Zech. 13:1.
Friend of Sinners, Matt. 11:19.

Gift of God, John 4:10.
Glory of Israel, Luke 2:32.
God blessed for ever, Rom. 9:5.
God manifest in the flesh, 1 Tim. 3:16.
God our Saviour, 1 Tim. 2:3.
God's dear Son, Col. 1:13.
Good Master, Matt. 19:16.
Great Shepherd of the Sheep, Heb. 13:20.

Head of the Church, Col. 1:18.
Head of the Corner, Matt. 21:42.
High Priest, Heb. 3:1.
High Priest of good things to come, Heb. 9:11.
Holy Child Jesus, Acts 4:30.
Holy One of God, Mark 1:24.
Holy One of Israel, Isa. 41:14; 54:5.
Holy Thing, Luke 1:35.
Horn of Salvation, Luke 1:69.

Image, express, of God's person, Heb. 1:3.
Immanuel, Isa. 7:14.

Jesus, Matt. 1:21.
Jesus Christ, Matt. 1:1.
Jesus Christ, our Saviour, Tit. 3:6.
Jesus of Nazareth, the King of the Jews, John 19:19.
Jesus, the Son of God, Heb. 4:14.
Jesus, the Son of Joseph, John 6:42.

Just Man, Matt. 27:19.
Just One, Acts, 7:52.

King, Luke 19:38.
King of Glory, Psa. 24:7-10.
King of kings, 1 Tim. 6:15.
King of the Jews, Matt. 2:2.
King of Zion, Matt. 21:5.

Lamb of God, John 1:29, 36.
Lamb that was slain, Rev. 5:12.
Life, Our, Col. 3:4.
Light of the World, John 8:12.
Light of the Gentiles, Isa. 42:6.
Lion of the tribe of Judah, Rev. 5:5.
Living Bread from Heaven, John 6:51.

LIFE OF CHRIST.—Concluded.

Living Stone, 1 Pet. 2:4.
 Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, 2 Pet. 1:11.
 Lord from Heaven, 1 Cor. 15:47.
 Lord Jesus Christ, 2 Thess. 3:6.
 Lord Jesus Christ, our Saviour, Tit. 1:4.
 Lord of All, Acts 10:36.
 Lord of Hosts, Isa. 44:6.
 Lord of Lords, Rev. 19:16.
 Lord, Mighty in Battle, Psa. 24:8.
 Lord of the Sabbath, Mark 2:28.
 Lord over All, Rom. 10:12.
 Lord, The, our Righteousness, Jer. 23:6.
 Lord, your Redeemer, Isa. 43:14.
 Man Christ Jesus, 1 Tim. 2:5.
 Man of Sorrows, Isa. 53:3.
 Master, Matt. 23:10.
 Mediator, 1 Tim. 2:5.
 Mediator of the New Covenant, Heb. 12:24.
 Messenger of the Covenant, Mal. 3:1.
 Messiah, the Prince, Dan. 9:25.
 Messiah, John 1:41.
 Mighty God, Isa. 9:6.
 Mighty One of Israel, Isa. 80:29.
 Mighty to save, Isa. 63:1.
 Morning Star, Rev. 22:16.
 Most Holy, Dan. 9:24.
 Most Mighty, Psa. 45:3.
 Nazarene, Matt. 2:23.
 Offspring of David, Rev. 22:16.
 Only-Begotten of the Father, John 1:14.
 Only-Begotten Son, John 1:18.
 Potentate (only), 1 Tim. 6:15.
 Power of God, 1 Cor. 1:24.
 Precious Corner Stone, Isa. 28:16.
 Priest, Heb. 7:17.
 Prince of Life, Acts 3:15.
 Prince of Peace, Isa. 9:6.
 Prince of the kings of the Earth, Rev. 1:5.
 Prophet, John 6:14.
 Propitiation, 1 John 2:2.
 Rabboni, John 20:16.
 Redeemer, Job. 19:25.
 Redemption, 1 Cor. 1:30.
 Resurrection, John 11:25.
 Righteous Branch, Jer. 22:5.
 Righteous Judge, 2 Tim. 4:8.
 Righteous Servant, Isa. 53:11.
 Righteousness, 1 Cor. 1:30.
 Rock, 1 Cor. 10:4.
 Rock of Offense, 1 Pet. 2:8.

Root of David, Rev. 5:5.
 Root of Jesse, Rom. 15:12.
 Rose of Sharon, Song of S. 2:1.
 Sanctification, 1 Cor. 1:30.
 Saviour, Luke 2:11.
 Saviour of the body, Eph. 5:23.
 Saviour of the world, 1 John 4:14.
 Sceptre, Numb. 24:17.
 Seed of David, 2 Tim. 2:8.
 Seed of the woman, Gen. 3:15.
 Servant, Matt. 12:18.
 Servant of Rulers, Isa. 49:7.
 Shepherd and Bishop of Souls, 1 Peter 2:25.
 Shepherd, Chief, 1 Pet. 5:4.
 Shepherd, Good, John 10:11.
 Shepherd, Great, Heb. 13:20.
 Shepherd of Israel, Psa. 80:1.
 Son Jesus Christ, 1 John 3:23.
 Son of David, Matt. 21:9.
 Son of God, Rev. 2:18; Luke 1:35; Jesus Christ the Son of God, Mark 1:1; Luke 3:38; Thou art the Son of God, Matt. 14:33; 16:16; Mark 3:11; Luke 4:41; John 1:49; 6:69; 11:27; 1:34.
 Son of Man, John 3:13.
 Son of Mary, Mark 6:3.
 Son of the Blessed, Mark 14:61.
 Son of the Father, 2 John 1:3.
 Son of the Highest, Luke 1:32.
 Son of the Living God, Matt. 16:16.
 Son of the Most High God, Mark 5:7.
 Stone of Stumbling, 1 Pet. 2:8.
 Sun of Righteousness, Mal. 4:2.
 Sure Foundation, Isa. 28:16.
 Surety of a better testament, Heb. 7:22.
 Teacher, John 3:2.
 The Beloved, Eph. 1:6.
 The Only Wise God, our Saviour, Jude 25.
 True, Rev. 19:11.
 True God, 1 John 5:20.
 True Vine, John 15:1.
 Truth, John 14:6.
 Unspeakable Gift, 2 Cor. 9:15.
 Very Christ, Acts 9:22.
 Vine, John 15:5.
 Way, John 14:6.
 Wisdom of God, 1 Cor. 1:24.
 Wisdom, Our, 1 Cor. 1:30.
 Witness to the People, John 18:37.
 Wonderful, Isa. 9:6.
 Word, John 1:1.
 Word of God, Rev. 19:13.
 Word of Life, 1 John 1:1.